

Female Falshood :
Joshua OR, THE *Green*
L I F E
AND
A D V E N T U R E S
OF A L A T E
French Nobleman.

Written by HIMSELF after His Retirement,
AND
Digested by Monf. de St. EVREMOND.

The Fourth Edition, revised and corrected.

*Beauty, like Ice, our Footing does betray ;
Who can tread sure on the smooth slippery Way ?
Pleas'd with the Passage, we slide swiftly on :
And see the Dangers which we cannot shun.*

Dryden.

D U B L I N :

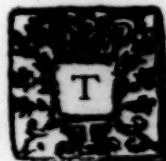
Printed for JAMES DALTON, at the Corner of *Bride's-Alley* in *Patrick-Street*, Book-seller. M, DCC, XXXIX.

Female Fairwood





Advertisement.



THE adventures which are related in these Memoirs happen'd since the year 1625. It will plainly be perceiv'd in the perusal of them, that the author intended in several places not to discover those he speaks of; but he having frequently been wanting of that precaution, the editor found himself obliged more than once to change the quality of the persons, and the date of the transactions, the better to answer the author's intent; however, it has only been in such places, which it was fear'd would give an handle for detraction; in all others truth hath been exactly followed, and there will be found throughout many the most curious circumstances of the most noted facts in the history of that time.

WE should very willingly satisfy the curiosity of those, who may be desirous of knowing whose Memoirs these are, but it is not in our power; and indeed it is no way surprising that the author should take the same precaution to keep himself unknown, as he hath done to conceal others.

ADVERTISEMENT.

We shall only add, that tho' he seems to have wrote these Memoirs only to represent the dangers and rocks of gallantry, it will be seen, that as he sets before us the ill conduct of coquets, so he is not wanting to render justice to others, and give them all due encomiums; and the instructions here given relate not solely to the commerce with women, they will be found to extend to every thing that hath relation to the conduct and business of a man who converses with the world.



MEMOIRS



MEMOIRS

OF A LATE

French Nobleman ;

Digested by

Monfieur De St. EVREMOND.

PART I.



AM now entring my fixtieth year, more weary of the world, for the crosses I have met with in it, than on account of my age. Let me then endeavour to enjoy the little time that is yet afforded me, by employing my thoughts wholly on those things which may draw me off from worldly concerns. My life being, as I may say, a complication of all the misfortunes which the conversation of women exposes a man to, I think it will be of the greatest use, both to my self and others. If I recount all those adventures of mine which they engag'd me in. Whofo reads these Memoirs, will perhaps, warned by

my follies, know how to avoid the like disasters; and I by writing them, and calling to mind the ridiculous errors we are led into by intrigues, shall be encouraged to persist in the resolution I have taken of extinguishing that cursed inclination, which in spite of my age and experience might yet bear too great a sway over my judgment; so little is the power we have over our selves, to follow that good we approve of, and avoid that evil which we blame.

Since my design in writing these Memoirs, is rather to leave the world an instruction than an history, I shall conceal my own name, as well as the names of most persons I shall speak of: my aim in writing being not so much the making a recital of my adventures, as by that recital to direct my reader how he shall avoid those irregularities I have been guilty of, it would be unjust in him, to apply himself rather to guess at the truth of this history, than to make his advantage of those truths it contains.

I desire that such as find me out will at least be so kind as not to divulge either their conjectures or discoveries; and I give them, under the seal of secrecy, all I cannot hide from them.

I was born in *May*, in the year 1625. My father who was descended of one of the most ancient houses in the whole kingdom, and had an employment in the army, which allowed him little leisure to look after his family, (which consisted in a girl and three boys) had left that wholly to my mother; the girl being the eldest, and I the youngest of the four. He might be worth about four hundred thousand livres, but had made considerable settlements on my mother, tho' she brought him but a slender fortune. We scarce knew any thing, before we were informed how small an estate we must trust to. My mother took care not to be troubled with us too long, and having bestowed her daughter into a nunnery, where she paid but little for her board, she look'd for colleges, where her sons might be educated at as cheap a rate. My eldest brother, tho' he was yet but fifteen, had already engag'd himself in the army; and my second brother and I were plac'd, under the conduct of a priest, in a little country-



country-town, wherein was a college, to which the priest sent us to follow our studies. We were not a little look'd upon, tho' our expences were no ways extravagant; but besides that it was known what family we were of, such titles were bestowed on us as might occasion that distinction. My brother was call'd a count, and I a knight; for it was not then, as it is now the fashion, to entitle children to the name of abbot, who have no other call to an Ecclesiastical life than of being younger brothers.

The count, my brother, was no ways inclin'd nor fit to study, and all his occupation from morning till night was to vex the poor man with whom we lodg'd. As for me, I was something more tractable; and tho' I was no enemy to sports, yet I made a shift to please my tutor. The difference that was observ'd in our characters, procur'd me some praise; which being a mortification to my brother, occasion'd that hatred he always bore me, an instance that parents ought never to send children out together, whose Inclinations are different. The reprimands an elder brother, who is out-done by his junior, is subject to, must always be paid for, by him who is the innocent cause thereof. My brother was already fifteen and I fourteen years old, when a company of strollers came into that town.

I had as yet felt but loose and uncertain impressions of that passion which inclines one sex to the other. It was at the plea that it began to unfold it self, and make me feel its rage: and I must own, to my shame, or to that of the graver authors of the tragick scene, that at the acting of the *Cid* I began to love in earnest. The actress, who represented *Chimena*, charmed me with her beauty, and the tenderness express'd in her part. I was mov'd with compassion at her sufferings; and was methought something concern'd that she should be so virtuous as the author had made her: But that care was presently over. I soon understood how that woman who on the stage express'd such virtue, had but little when off. This it was that put my poor brain quite out of order. What, thought I, were it then so easy for me to be belov'd by that *Chimena* who is so cruel to *Rodoriguo*? These and such like reflections wholly employ'd my thoughts; and thus I unwittingly suck'd in the poison of debauchery.

What

What I experienc'd in that tender age, has since hinder'd my being surpriz'd, when I have seen actresses, tho' never so infamous, be courted with stronger passions than honest and virtuous women. The part they act on the stage seeming to give, as it were, a relish to that which they act elsewhere.

However, I was not old enough to apply my self to the *Chimena*, who had pleas'd me so well in the representation of the *Cid*. Besides, she was always engag'd with sparks, not so young as my self, and whose pockets were better furnish'd than mine at that time; and foreseeing that if I presum'd to make love to her without presenting her with something, I should be receiv'd but as a school-boy, I sought for easier amours and mistresses not so hard to be come at. But to whom should I offer my service? I saw not one woman who was indifferent to me. Every she was to me a *Chimena*, but I alas! was no body's *Roderigo*; and the greatest compliment I had from those I bestow'd most upon was, that I was a pretty boy. This was worse than death to me, who would have been look'd on as a man, since I so well felt my self to be such.

There was a nunnery in that same town, the abbess whereof was something a kin to us: I visited her pretty often, and by that means had got acquainted with most of the young ladies she boarded. There was one among the rest, who was much about my age, and pleas'd me above them all; and having all liberty of seeing her, I thought I could not do better than to make my application to her. She was then the person pitch'd upon, to whom I should express those desires that had newly taken possession of my heart. I did it in some verses I had remembred out of a play, which I repeated to her with all the passion and softness imaginable. Miss was already a far greater scholar in that science than my self, and I was amaz'd to hear her answer my verse in very intelligible prose. She ridicul'd the manner wherein I made my declaration, and told me, she had learn'd in her nunnery to speak in another tone. I found her well read in books of gallantry, and learned enough, not only to answer my love, but also to instruct and encourage me in it. She
swore,

swore, however, that she never had felt, but on my account, that passion which she discover'd, and that she never would feel it for any one else ; but she told me, that if I really lov'd her, we must lose no time, but must seek out the means frequently to enjoy each other's company.

One may easily imagine how ravish'd I was, to find so charming a person fill'd with love for me. I was easily persuaded my own desert had occasion'd that passion in her, and the letters she began to send me daily, confirm'd me in this vain opinion ; for I thought it impossible to write with more wit and passion than she did.

Her love began to be the only object of my thoughts. We wrote to one another ev'ry day, and one of my school-fellows, who was son to a servant of the abbess, deliver'd me her letters, when he came into school, and took my answers back with him as he return'd home.

It was a month since this intrigue had begun, when my brother, who, it seems, was fond of a nun of the same abbey, and was not over-given to secrecy, shew'd me the letters he had receiv'd from her. How was I amaz'd, when I saw they were almost, word for word, the same as those my boarder sent me, and that they must have all been compos'd by the nun ! I took no notice of it to my brother, but having left him, I went and packt up all the letters I had, and sent them back to her whom I had receiv'd them from, acquainting her by a note, that I would neither love nor see her any more, since she had been capable of deceiving me.

She return'd an answer yet more disobliging than my note ; and as my love was real and sincere, I was concern'd to see her angry. I sent her a very submissive letter, begging a thousand pardons ; but having no answer, I waited on her my self, to sue for a reconciliation.

She receiv'd me in such a manner that I was persuaded she never had lov'd me. She made a sport of the grief I was in, and seeing I would have made a formal complaint of her cruelty, she said, I was a fine lad indeed to pretend to such a person as she was. This confounded me quite, for she was not much older than my self, and I was inrag'd to be us'd like a child by a child, not knowing at that time, that women are forwarder than men.

The

The ill success of this my first attempt began to give me an insight into the character of the female sex ; and happy had I been, had I taken warning by it : but I thought the levity of youth was the only cause of her serving me so ; and resolv'd to apply my self to more solid mistresses.

We were often invited to the deputy governour's of the town we liv'd in. He was marry'd to a woman not unhandsome, and who was pretty much talk'd of. She was about thirty years old, and I wanted something of fifteen, yet I never saw her but I gave her some tokens of my passion. I thought then that a man must pretend courtship to every woman he convers'd with, and in my applications I really spoke my mind ; for in the general desire I had to make love, I found my heart ready for all who would accept it.

I had read several romances, for it was then that they began to be cry'd up, and did not think it lawful to make love otherwise than their heroes. I fancy'd my self sometimes *Alexander*, sometimes *Orondates*, and I took the governour's lady for no less a mistress than *Cassandra* or *Sta'ira*.

I was not at all suspected by the husband, being almost the only one whom he permitted her to converse withal. Besides our frequent being alone at her house, we often went abroad, only she and I, into a garden she had in one of the suburbs.

One day she told me, she would try whether I was sincere in my addresses, and if she could trust me. I promis'd her an inviolable discretion ; and then she told me, she had some business with a relation of hers, whom we should find in the garden, but that it must be done with all secrecy, because she were undone should her husband come to the knowledge of it, he having expressly forbid her ever to see that man. She assur'd me, it was only about business that she desir'd to discourse with him, and I promis'd her, I would be faithful, without enquiring her reason.

We went into the garden, and were scarce there, but the spark, she waited for, got in over the wall, and came towards us. *There he is*, said she ; *stay here while I speak with him in that summer house, and watch if any body comes : and if there does, you'll come and give me notice.*

vice. I told her, she might rely upon me ; and she went into the summer-house with that man, leaving me centinel at the end of the walk that led to it, with a charge not to stir from the place.

No sooner was she in, but I forgot the promise I had made her not to leave my post, and creeping softly to the door of the arbor, I was unlucky enough to knock at it pretty hard, crying out, *madam your husband is coming.* Whereupon she came to the door, and without opening of it, desir'd me to carry her husband into another walk, while she might have time to let her friend make his escape.

I walk'd aside to give him that leisure, and my spark return'd by the same way, tho' with a little more haste than he came. She came to me, and seeing me all alone, ask'd where her husband was ? It was in vain for me to tell her, he was gone out again : she perceiv'd what I had done was but to fright her, and express'd so much resentment as to give me ill language.

I thought, that having knowledge of her intrigue, she would be afraid to disoblige me ; but it happen'd quite otherwise ; she carried me home again, without saying a word, and having left me, went and told her husband. I was an impudent young fellow, who had been so bold as to make love to her, and that she desir'd him that I might come no more to her house.

I came there the next day, and the husband told me, in a deriding manner, that I was a lewd debauchee, and that were it not for the respect he had for my family, he would have me whipt.

This affront touch'd me to the quick, and instead of answering him, as I might have done, that his wife made a fool and a cuckold of him, I, only reflecting on the shameful manner he had threatned me in, flew in his face, and had I been strong enough, would have done him more mischief. His spouse ran in, alarm'd at the noise, and taking her husband's part, call'd me a thousand rogues. *See,* said she, *what impudence ! how brisk this little rogue is for his age, and if he dares use my husband thus, what would he not say of me, if he might be credited ?* I was taken off of the husband, and was desir'd

fir'd to avoid his house ; on which I went out, exclaiming against both husband and wife as they deserv'd.

When I was got home, I reflected with admiration on the impudence of that woman, who knowing it was in my power to ruin her reputation, by divulging what I knew of her, had yet carried herself so strangely towards me ; but I knew not as yet all a coquet could do, and what happen'd to me then, was but a sample of what I have experienc'd since in those of that character.

This adventure made no little noise : our tutor, at whose house we boarded, wrote to my mother about it, and prayed her to send for us back, because we were grown too big to be govern'd by him. She would have had little respect for his admonitions, were she not that year, which was 1640. become a widow, my father being kill'd in *Piedmont*, in the battle wherein the Count *de Harcourt* got the better of the *Spaniards*. She sent for us to *Paris*, where we found my eldest brother, who was come thither after my father's death, to beg for his place, and to endeavour to get two commissions for my brother the Count, and my self.

We had a friend whose interest was very great, with whom my eldest brother had been educated, and who had also been a great acquaintance of ours in our childhood. It was monsieur *de Cinq Mars*, son to the mareschal *d'Effiat*. He being at that time at the highest period of his favour, we easily obtain'd what we sued for. My eldest brother was preferr'd to the post my father had been in ; my brother the count, was plac'd with the duke *de Breze*, to serve at sea, and the former, who had a kindness for me, kept me with him, to make my first campaign in *Piedmont* the next summer. I remain'd with him at *Paris*, for that winter, being a sharer in almost all his pleasures, and it was then I had an opportunity of enquiring more particularly into the manners of women of pleasure.

We were almost perpetually at monsieur *de Cinq Mars's* : and here I cannot forbear mentioning the amazement I was in, and the reflections I us'd to make whenever I saw him. Never any man seem'd to me more happy than he did at that time. He was at the age of twenty years the king's chief favourite, and that in such a degree

as never any one was before him ; ador'd by all the courtiers, and carefs'd by all the ladies he was pleas'd to court. Yet I never saw him contented ; and as often as he found himself alone with my brother and me, he would say he was the unhappiest man in the world. He mus'd, sigh'd, and would spend whole hours in walking about the room, without speaking a word. My brother was the only confident of the causes of his affliction, and they would often whisper together. As for me, I was not desirous of meddling with their concerns, but could not cease admiring how much *those men are imposed upon, who think that place of trust and great honour are an essential part of happiness.*

I had no knowledge of monsieur de Cinq Mars's secrets as to matters of state, and I know not whether he reveal'd them to my brother, but I was intrusted with most of those that related to his gallantry ; *for many may be met with who have command enough over themselves, to conceal what respects their fortune ; but few that can forbear bragging of what flatters their vanity in love affairs.*

Monsieur de Cinq Mars was extraordinary handsome and very generous. However, the women he applied himself to, were unfaithful to him. Being oblig'd to attend the king almost all day long, he had but little time left to converse with his mistresses, and they deceiv'd him with all the ease imaginable.

He kept one who had been very expensive to him : he had given her a sumptuous house richly and magnificently furnished, and seldom made her an empty visit. He often carried me and my brother thither, and sometimes left us there, being oblig'd to go to court. Whether my brother was engag'd elsewhere, or that he was unwilling to court his friend's mistress, he express'd little kindness for her ; and when monsieur de Cinq Mars was gone out, he commonly fell asleep, and left me free leave to talk what I would to her.

I had not yet lost the habit I had got, to fancy that a man must not see a woman without making love to her. The lady was handsome, and, it may be easily imagin'd, that, having liberty to say what I would, I told her I lov'd her.

Being, however, desirous to do things handsomely, I told her, I was sorry to see Monsieur de Cinq Mars so fond of

B

her

her, and that she should be under such obligations to him, because I would else have taken the freedom to make my addresses to her. *You think, then,* said she, *he has a kindness for me, and that I am oblig'd to him; but you are mistaken, he does not love me at all, and gives me no tokens of his passion.* *How!* replied I, not without amazement, *then I am very ill inform'd, for the world talks as tho' he had already bestow'd above fifty thousand crowns upon you.* Well, answered she, and fifty thousand crowns; there's a mighty business for such a person as I am. If I would oblige others as far as I have done him, I should already have received three times as much money, and be better settled.

I confess this discourse seemed to me to be so singular, that I could scarce forbear taxing her for so high an ingratitude; for I knew not then that *a bought mistress still thinks she is worth more than is laid out for her.*

I would not however let her perceive the surprize I was in. *It is true,* continued I, *that in respect to your desert fifty thousand crowns are a small matter. But what must be expect then, who has nothing; and how will you accept of the tender I design to make you of my heart, I who cannot give you a farthing?* Do you think, then said she, that I am mercenary, and would buy my lovers? If you did love, and you are in earnest, I would have more kindness for you than for monsieur de Cinq Mars, with his fifty thousand crowns; for, continued she, *whores only make a trade of love.*

These words won my very heart, and hinder'd the reflection I should have made, how ridiculous and extravagant it was that a person should be so covetous as not to be satisfied with fifty thousand crowns, and yet pretend to generosity; but I was charm'd with it as tho' she had been sincere in what she spoke. I fancy'd my self a man of greater merit than monsieur de Cinq Mars, and carried my folly so far as to think, that a girl so well equipp'd, as she was, might not only love me without any interest, but might give me some more substantial proofs of her affection: for I was then very bare of money, and found that I should love that woman most whom there was most to be got by.

I told

I told her, that I was wonderfully taken with her generous temper, and that she ought not to doubt of my sincerity. The answer she made me persuaded me I was beloved by her, and she assur'd me, that I should be welcome whenever I should visit her, and that no body should disturb us. I desir'd a meeting the next day, at ten in the morning, and she gave her consent.

I left her, so transported with my good fortune, that I could scarce forbear acquainting my brother with it. I could not as we return'd home, leave off talking of her to him, and that with such an earnestness as made him laugh, *I think*, said he, *you are in love with her*. I should, answer'd I, *be rich enough to gratify her, before I might pretend to that*. My brother laugh'd extravagantly when I told him, that none but monsieur de Cinq Mars must attempt to gain her affection; and I have thought since, that he must have known her for what she was.

I expected with impatience that the clock should strike the appointed hour, when I received a note from her, wherein she acquainted me, that an unexpected business was fallen out, which obliged her to go forth early; and that wanting a watch, all her's being at the watch maker's, she desir'd me to send her one, she had seen in my hands the day before. I had one indeed which was tolerably pretty, which I sent her, with a most passionate letter, begging, she would remember her promise against that afternoon: I was eager to be with her, and found her undrest, and saw no sign of her having been out that day. She had two of her friends with her, who, she told me, had kept her at home till then; adding, she must go out within a quarter of an hour, to procure ten pistols, having lost as much at play. *I do not ask you for them*, said she, *since you have told me you have no money*. She spoke these last words so dry, that I thought she meant to upbraid me with it. That struck me to the heart, and I resolv'd to get her ten pistols, whatever it cost me. I left her, and went and sold a small diamond I had, and brought her the money. She express'd an excessive joy thereat, and told me, *what she did was rather to try me than any need she had of them*. She promis'd to meet me the next day; but when the time was

come, I had a message, that she was heartily vex'd she could not see me, monsieur *de Cinq Mars* having sent her word, he was coming to her.

I was mad at these disappointments. The next day was not more favourable to me, and she fool'd me thus for a fortnight together, finding still some new excuse to disingage her self. That time being expir'd, she sent me word, to meet her at a certain church, to which she came, and where I went to speak with her. She express'd much concern that she could not contrive it so, that I should see her at her house; but said, my frequent visits had been taken notice of, and that we must of necessity meet at some other place. But she said, that was not her greatest Pain; for what troubled her most, was, that monsieur *de Cinq Mars*, having given her fifty pistols to buy her a gown, she had no more wit than to engage herself at play; that she dare not tell him she had lost them, and must make 'em up some way or other. *Do you think*, said she, *that if you pretended you wanted that money, and should ask monsieur de Cinq Mars for it, he would deny you?* I told her, I dar'd not propose any such thing to him, not only because I was averse to the borrowing money of any one, but also I had reason to reserve the friendship of monsieur *de Cinq Mars* for matters of greater concern. She replied angrily, that this was but a sham, and that she was a fool to think I ever lov'd her. She left me after that, and would not hear my reply.

I had all imaginable cause to think she jilted me. She had my watch, which she hastned not to return: I had given her ten pistols, and she again asked me for fifty more: but yet I was blind enough not to reflect on her behaviour. She is too rich, thought I, to be mercenary; and her addressing her self to me, must be an effect of confidence she has in me.

I resolv'd then to beg the fifty pistols from monsieur *de Cinq Mars*. We were at her house when I propos'd this to him. I took him aside into another room, and told him, trembling, that I had an urgent occasion for fifty pistols, by reason my friends allowed me short. He reply'd, he would give me a hundred, and presently calling the lady, at whose house we were; *what money*, said he,
did

did I leave you, madam, the last time I was here? Was it not three hundred pistols? Fetch me a hundred, pray, which I have a present occasion for. She blush'd, and not daring to return any answer, brought him the hundred pistols; which he gave me. I scrupled taking them; saying, that perhaps she wanted them. No, no, said he, she has enough, and I will have her, when you want any thing to supply you; and calling her, he bad her give me all I should ask her for. I went away, keeping the hundred pistols, in the resolution of letting monsieur *de Cinq Mars* know, that I had borrow'd them only for that person of whom he had them, and left him with her.

I was at a loss what to make of her, who pretended want of fifty pistols, when monsieur *de Cinq Mars* had so lately given her three hundred: Yet I found it pleasant enough, supposing she trick'd me, to see her thus punish'd for her covetousness; and that instead of her asking me for money, she was now to give me some as often as I should require it.

I could not forbear of acquainting my brother therewith, who was angry that I should have borrow'd any thing of monsieur *de Cinq Mars*, and would have the hundred pistols, to send them back again to him. He told me then, that she was us'd to play such pranks; and let monsieur *de Cinq Mars* give her never so much money, she would be still asking some of all that pretended love to her. *I have attempted, continued he, to convince monsieur de Cinq Mars of it; but love blinds him; and he has no leisure to study his mistress's characters.*

My brother return'd the hundred pistols, which monsieur *de Cinq Mars* would not accept, but on condition that I would ask her for more, whenever I had need of them. My brother, who had already found how blind he was on her account, thought not fitting to let him know, that it was she who had oblig'd me to ask him for that sum: But as I had resolv'd to get my watch and my ten pistols again, I was also determin'd to make use of the order monsieur *de Cinq Mars* had given me, and to lack for nothing.

I went then to see her, and was not a little astonish'd, when receiving me with a smiling countenance; *Well, said she, and where are the hundred Pistols monsieur de Cinq*

Mars has given you; are not they for me? For you? said I, *Why, faith, I have spent them; and, far from that, I must beg of you, that you would supply me with twenty more, on the account of an urgent necessity.* What then, reply'd she, you think the three hundred pistols monsieur de Cinq Mars spoke of, were mine? You are mistaken, he had given me them to keep for him, and he is so covetous that he would be as mad as the devil, if I should touch a farthing of it. Alas, added she, with tears in her eyes, *I am an unhappy woman: monsieur de Cinq Mars scarce allows me what is necessary, and I never ask him for anything but he upbraids me with it.*

What my brother had told me, secur'd me against this artifice. I told her, she misrepresented monsieur de Cinq Mars, and that I would speak to him my self, to know the truth of the matter: Then I pray'd her, to return me my watch, and my ten pistols, since I had now no more cause to doubt but the love she feign'd was made use of to chouse me. Here she wept afresh; begging that, for god's sake, I would not tell monsieur de Cinq Mars of it: Which I promis'd. But it was in vain for me to insist upon my watch and my ten pistols; she positively deny'd to return them, telling me, she would keep them for my sake.

As angry as I was, I could not forbear laughing at the compliment. The more I laugh'd the more she cry'd; but I had the courage not to be mov'd with her tears, and to despise her as much as I had ever lov'd her. She was indeed such as my brother had told me; tho' monsieur de Cinq Mars had lavish'd an incredible sum of money on her, she would be asking every body for more. She was worth four hundred thousand livres when monsieur de Cinq Mars dy'd, and we shall see anon what was her fate.

I avoided her house, except when I was forc'd to accompany my brother thither, where he went often to meet with monsieur de Cinq Mars; and looking for another amour, I pitch'd on——house, because the dutchess of——was our cousin, and was always very obliging to me. She had a very pretty niece, whose education she took care of, for she had no child as yet. She

was

was a maid about sixteen or seventeen; and it will easily be judged, that a youth of my complexion did not see her often without telling her she was handsome. She answered my love in such a manner as made me distracted; she did nothing but laugh at it, and I could not guess whether she lov'd me or no. One Day that she was gone out with the dutchess, I went to see her, and found no body there but a young woman, that waited on her, who was about twenty, and very passable. I used to be civil to her as often as I saw her; but finding her alone, was more free of my compliments than usual. She spoke to me of her mistress, who, she said, was passionately in love with me, but dared not tell me so herself. She told me, that if I really lov'd her, she would endeavour to rid her of those fears, and to contrive how we should converse privately together. I made her all the oaths and protestations she desir'd; and she assured me, I should shortly see her mistress, provided I would be discreet. Then she gave me caution, that I should not take any Notice of it to the young lady till she had prepar'd her for it.

This conversation was scarce ended, when the dutchess came back with her Niece. With what an eye did I look on that charming person, having just before heard how well inclined she should be on my account! I took that opportunity of assuring her, that I lov'd her even to madness; and indeed I never was more passionate. I found then, *that nothing is more capable of increasing our Passion, than the thought of an equal Return.*

The waiting-woman was afraid I should grow impatient. The very next morning, she sent me word she had something to say to me: And I went to her in a neighbouring church. She told me, she had discoursed with her mistress, and that if I would come that night to their house, I might see her. You may think I did not put it off, but submitted my self to her directions.

I waited that evening on the dutchess, who kept me to supper: and when I thought it was time to withdraw, I took my leave; but instead of going out, I went up into a garret, where they laid their lumber, into which the waiting-woman lock'd me. It was extreme cold, and I

was freezing there for the space of two hours. When that time was expir'd, which was about mid night, I heard the door open, and perceived it was the maid; who, taking me by the hand, whisper'd to me, that I should follow her. I did, and after many turnings, I found myself in a chamber, wherein was a fire half out, which gave not light enough in the room to let me see where I was. She bid me warm my self, and that my mistress was coming. Half a quarter of an hour afterwards, I heard one come in, who, without saying any thing, came near to me. *Is it you*, said I, taking her for the dutchess's neice. I might repeat the question often enough, no answer was return'd: This made me think that her modesty was the cause of her silence; I therefore thought I ought not to question her any farther. In that very moment the door was open'd, and I saw the shape of a man come in. The woman who was come near me, shov'd me against the bed, and went to him who had disturb'd us. I heard that man speak very familiarly to her, and she desir'd him very civilly to go out; which he refus'd, and answer'd with an oath, that he would see what was the reason he might not be admitted. With that he comes to the bed side where I was, fell on me in a furious manner, and was very free of his blows. I was not backward in returning them, endeavouring thereby to get from him, which occasion'd some noise. Immediately I heard a great stirring in the house, and presently a light enters, which discover'd the dutchess her self, follow'd by her waiting-woman. She was no sooner come into the room, but I knew him with whom I had been fighting to be a footman that belong'd to the house. The waiting-woman shew'd me to the dutchess, saying, with tears in her eyes, *you see, madam, I did not tell you a lye, and that the knight bid himself in my chamber with a design to ravish me; I was loth to let you know it, and went and desired Tom to turn him out; but it was impossible for him, so that I was forced to call you up.* The dutchess could not forbear laughing, tho' she was very angry, and directing her words to me, she told me, these were fine doings, and that I was a pretty fellow. I was so agham'd that I could not speak one word. The dutchess sent some of her people to wait

on me to the door, and I went out, guessing in part the cause hereof.

The truth was, that the waiting-woman had never spoke to her lady in my behalf, and that she had only made use of her name to have a meeting with me her self. She it was that came into the room, and did not dare to answer when I ask'd, *is it you?* whether the footman, who came afterwards, had seen me, or that he had used to come to that young woman, he was resolv'd to stay there; and she finding herself in that dilemma, thought the best way to get out of it, was to tell the dutchess, I was hid in the Room. This had the effect she desired; she was taken for a chaste vestal, and I for a debauchee. Neither did I dare to undeceive the dutchess presently, because it would have prejudic'd her niece; so all the shame of that adventure fell to my share, and no one doubted but I was in love with the waiting-woman. The niece taxed me with it, and it was in vain for me to protest I was innocent, and to tell her what hopes the maid had given me. All was to no purpose, and she still believed what was most likely, and took the truths I told her for sham excuses.

I was resolv'd not to be bubbled, and seeing the niece her self was against me, I told the dutchess the whole truth of the business. This made her suspect the waiting woman's honesty: she watched her, and found she had intrigues not only with that footman, but also with several others. She was turn'd out of doors, and the dutchess and her Niece had no other complaint to make against me but that I should harbour such ill Thought of that young lady, as to expect what her servant had promised me.

When all the truth was out, I found the dutchess and her niece more obliging than I had done hitherto, and whether they pitied the ill success of my adventure, or that *women have a natural tendency to love those who have the courage to undertake something for them*, I could not doubt but both had a kindness for me. But, alas! Even that kindness serv'd but to give me a farther insight into female inconstancy.

The dutchess was the first who opened her self to me : she told me plainly, that having look'd upon me hitherto but as a child, she had not dar'd to let me know the secret inclination she had for me ; but that after the courage and discretion I had expressed in the adventure with the waiting-woman, she saw I might be relied on, and that she would have me love her : *But, said she, we must patch up your Reputation, for you have the name of a lewd young man, and it would be ill-looked upon if I should admit your frequent visits, unless you appear quite another person than what there is cause to believe you are. You are the youngest of your family, and if you will be advised by me, enter into orders. I will see you shall not want Preferment. Get into a seminary,*

I told her I was ready to obey her ; and indeed I was at that time so pleased with the thoughts of being courted by a dutchess, that neither the natural Aversion I had for that profession, nor the melancholy reflections I might make on the life that is led in a seminary, could deter me from it.

I promis'd her to get some body to speak to my mother, and that very day told my brother of it ; and I found my family very willing to let me take that condition upon me, which seem'd to rid them of all care of me, better than any other,

I pretended then a great unconcernedness for worldly affairs, and made all things ready to enter the seminary, and to apply my self to divinity. When this resolution of mine was given out, the dutchess's niece, to whom I had not spoke a word of it, was amaz'd and much concerned. She told me, I was mad, and that she should never have expected this from me ; *for, added she, I must confess I have lov'd you ever since I saw you. If I did not presently let you know my mind, it was because I was desirous to know you first ; however, I look'd upon you as the only man I could fancy, and was in hopes of being your wife one day or other.*

Ab, madam ! I reply'd, why did you not speak sooner ? for what will People say of me, to see me alter my resolution after the preparations I have made ? However it shall be as you please, and I assure you, I will be determined by
you

you. She told me, I must by no means be a clergyman, and that if I was it would be a sensible affliction to her; on which I assur'd her, I would not: and the next day I told the dutchess, I could not find in my heart to embrace an ecclesiastical life.

I see, said she, you have been with my Niece; I know she loves you, and gives way to the idle fancies her passion supplies her with, but she is very wide of her mark: she is a fool I am weary of; and I tell you that we intend to marry her within these two days. Thereupon she told me, the duke her husband, and she had taken secret measures to marry her to a man of fortune, who sought for some support by that alliance.

Indeed at this news I found I was really in love. I was possessed with a deep sorrow, to hear they were going to marry a young lady I had a kindness for, and to a man who deserved her no other way than by his estate. I told the dutchess I was ready to do what she would, and would enter into the seminary the very next day, but that it was an unconscionable thing to marry her niece in that manner. *Do what I desire you,* answered she, *and you shall have no reason to complain.*

I gave the niece an account of the discourse we had had; and told her, that her Aunt was jealous of the kindness I had for her, and would marry her if I did not put on a Gown. How was I amazed, when upon the news that she was to be married, she cry'd out, as transported with joy! *Lord is it possible? Yes,* said I, *But hear to whom; 'tis to such a one.* *What, to him?* said she, in a double Extasie. *Oh! I know him, he is an extraordinary rich man, and I cannot be better matched.* *Then I am turned off,* said I, in a serious manner. *You,* said she, *do people use to marry Clergymen?* This was no sooner said, but she ran and call'd one of her women, and embracing her: *Ah! my dear,* said she, *do you know I am going to be married.*

I remain'd motionless, so great was my amazement at so unexpected a change; and I had almost determin'd my self to become not only an abbot, but even an hermit, seeing women guilty of so much inconstancy. She took little heed of the pain I was in, and I went out with a firm resolution, to do what the dutchess expected of me.

I re-

I remain'd at *Paris* while my brother went into *Piedmont*, where his Regiment still made a part of the count d' *Harcourt's* army, and I put on the narrow band. What I obtained from my dutchess was, that instead of shutting my self up into a seminary, I should board my self out somewhere near the *Sorbonne*, and study divinity there.

The first day that I dress'd my self as an abbot, I came to see her, and she instructed me how I should behave my self in that habit ; that I must look demure, and put on the air of a man of virtue. Indeed it was a great proof I gave her of my affection ; for besides the natural aversion I have already said I had for that kind of life, I was born an enemy to all affectation : but my ambition was so flatter'd with my being belov'd by that woman, that tho' I had not then for her all the passion I have since too well experienced one might have had, yet I thought I must yield a blindfold obedience to all her commands.

She was extremely taken with me when she saw me an abbot, and took all possible care to spread a report, that I was grown a saint, and that an extraordinary devotion had induc'd me to become a clergyman.

Indeed, tho' it was with great dissatisfaction that I play'd a part so contrary to my inclination, yet I was wonderfully pleas'd that a lady of such quality, and of an unspotted Reputation, should have so favourable thoughts of me as she seem'd to express. The duke, tho' elder than her self, entertain'd no suspicion of her conduct, and she deserv'd that trust from him, by two or three convincing proofs she had given him of her affection, which I shall mention, to shew what a woman is capable of.

A person of the first quality and extraordinary well accomplish'd had courted her, with the most endearing tokens of a sincere love, and that in a more respectful and submissive manner than those of his rank are us'd to do. The Lady had at first answer'd his passion ; but perceiving it gave her husband some jealousy, she told her lover, that she must admit no longer of his addresses. This almost distract'd him, and he fell sick upon it : the only comfort he had, was, that of writing to her, and I never saw any thing more soft than his letters : but she shew'd

shewed them all to her husband ; who himself compos'd her answers, which, it may be thought, were not over obliging. I admir'd how it was possible she could be so cruel to him, who was so obliging to her ; and this made me secretly despise her. Certainly, said I once to her, you must hate that man unmercifully, to use him in this barbarous manner. *Hate him ?* reply'd she, *not at all ; I rather love him, and should I follow my inclination I would take pity on him : but I love my own quiet better, and in the present posture of my affairs, I must not give my husband the least ground to mistrust me.* As young as I was, I could infer from thence, that I must expect the same fate, if her husband came to suspect me. However, I kept my thoughts to my self and seem'd to applaud what my heart could not but disapprove.

This lover of hers knowing that my visits were freely admitted of, had found the means to be acquainted with me, that he might have the pleasure to discourse of her and I could scarce forbear undeceiving him, when I saw him perswaded that his mistress's disdain proceeded from an excessive virtue. At last I took so much compassion on him, and that woman seem'd to me so undeserving his passionate affection, that I resolv'd to free him from his error. I wrote a letter to him, as unknown, and in a counterfeited hand, whereby I gave him notice, that the dutchess was not the woman she appear'd to be, and that if he would watch her at such time as a young abbot uses to visit her, he might be convinced of her falshood. Being myself the abbot, I was indeed very inconsiderate, to make that discovery which might have prov'd of a fatal consequence to me ; but I was young and conceited, and I found a secret pleasure in shewing him that I was more happy than himself : so that, in truth, my vanity had more share in that action, than either my generosity or the pity I took of him.

My letter came safe to his hands ; and tho' he gave little credit to it, yet he resolv'd to make use of the advice. he took his opportunity to get into the appartment where I us'd to see the dutchess, and hid himself behind the tapestry, in a corner where he had room enough to stand unseen, and whence he might easily hear all we said. Neither the dutchess nor I knew any thing of his being there,

there, and it was about three in the afternoon, the hour we usually met at: scarce had we been a quarter of an hour together but we heard some noise behind the hangings. The dutchess ran to see what it was, and found him in a swoon, and almost breathless; so great had been his amazement at what had passed.

I admir'd the resolution and presence of mind, she shewed on that occasion. *Get you gone*, said she, *and let me alone to manage this business*. I did not give her the trouble of repeating it a second time, but was very glad to get out of a place where I thought it not safe for me to remain.

I was no sooner gone but the dutchess call'd one of her women to her, and shewing her the man behind the hangings, bid her turn him out of the house; adding, he was a madman, and that love had turn'd his brain. Her husband came in that very minute; and ask'd, what was the matter; *it is*, answered she, without the least concern, *that poor fool——— who was come to see me, and had the good nature to drop down because I would not bear his impertinence*. Come, my dear, *it is not so proper for you to stay here; let's walk off, and leave to her the care of sending him home*.

The Duke led off his spouse, fondly caressing her, and praising her unparallel'd virtue; while our lover came to himself, and went out without speaking a word. I did not doubt but he would be reveng'd on the dutchess and my self, and repented the pains I had taken to undeceive him; but I soon perceiv'd his resentment was not at all prejudicial to me. He resolv'd to despise her as much as he had ever lov'd her, and in that he shewed more wisdom and discretion than I have done in the like occasion. Being a very generous person, he took no notice of this adventure, and always spoke well of the dutchess. I took great care not to be in his way, and seldom saw him from that time, for he died a few months after of a wound he received at the taking of the city of *Saltes*.

This was not the only hint I had of the dutchess's good nature: she gave her husband another Instance of it, and that in a manner yet more cruel than what we last mention'd, and which made me begin to fear in earnest. Before she
had

had receiv'd my addressees, she had pitch'd upon a gallant not quite so young as I was, who was son to her nurse, and had perswaded the duke to prefer him to be her page, for in those days they made pages of riper years than now. That young man was still in her family when she took a fancy to me. He was very giddy-headed, which made her soon see there was not much to be expected from him; and it was to that consideration I owed my good fortune. She judging the complacency she had for me might make him jealous, resolv'd to put it out of his reach to hurt her, if he should resent it. To effect this, she made him suspected to her husband, telling him he was so audacious as to make a declaration of love to her. The Duke immediately took fire, and without any further Examination, call'd the page, threatening to cut his throat for his impudence, if he did not immediately quit his service. The youth, without being frighted thereat, answered, that if he had made love to his lady, she made the first advances; and, as a proof of it, produc'd a note of her's he had yet in his possession. The husband having shew'd it to his lady, she told him with the greatest confidence, that it was her hand, but she knew not how he came by it, for it was a note she had sent to a lady of her acquaintance; and indeed, unfortunately for the page, the note was wrote in such a manner, that it was hard to discover whether it was to a man or to a woman. The Duke was easily perswaded the business was as his lady had represented it, and the poor young man appear'd to be guilty of a double insolence, his crime seeming much heightened by that aggravating circumstance. This was not all, the dutchess had presented him with several rich jewels, which she knew he had kept; so she accus'd him to her husband, not only of that arrogancy but also of thievery, saying, she missed a thousand things of value, which she could tax no body else with. The poor young man's trunk was searched, and the jewels found in it; whereupon the Duke would have prosecuted him, but his lady, a mild good-natur'd thing, interceded with her husband, that he would only discharge him his service. The Page presently after got a commission, but was unfortunately killed in the first engagement he was in.

It may be well guess'd I was very uneasie at my being so far engag'd with a woman, who I saw was so ready to sacrifice her lovers to her husband's jealousy; but I knew not how to break with her; and besides, my ambition fastened me to her, whom my reason inclin'd me to abhor. In the mean while, I apply'd my self to my Studies, and began to be in some reputation among my fellow-students, tho' I had as yet no preferment in the church, neither, indeed, did I look on the profession I had undertaken as a lasting one, since I well foresaw the dutchess's kindness would come to an end in a short time.

A woman came to me one morning, to acquaint me, that there was a person who had a considerable benefice in his disposal, that would gladly bestow it upon me, and that thro' her means I might, when I would, come to the speech of him. I presently imagin'd she was us'd to make such bargains, and she frankly own'd, that she had put it into that person's head, in hopes I would not forget her kindness. I hearkned to her proposal, more out of curiosity than for any fondness I had for the benefice, and she appointed me at St. *Martin's* gate the next day. I came thither, and was carry'd into an ill look'd house, where having climb'd up to the second story, I found a girl of about twenty, very ugly, but extraordinary well drest; who addressing herself to me in a familiar way, said, her mother was coming, who would inform me farther of the benefice I had been told of, and that in the mean time she should be glad to converse with an old acquaintance. Never was I more puzzled in my life, for I could not call to mind that I ever had seen her before, tho' she would have perswaded me that I knew her very well. It came in my head to tell her, that I suppos'd she design'd to try me by that civility, and that she knew well enough that a church-man ought not to be acquainted with ladies. She appear'd to be satisfy'd with this answer, saying, she was very glad to see she was not mistaken in me, and that her mother had indeed look'd upon me as a man whose extraordinary sanctity might entitle me to church preferments;

ments; and then made me a long Sermon : I was amazed, to hear a girl talk so well of piety, who by the beginning of her discourse seem'd rather to have been inclin'd to speak to another purpose. By that time the mother came in, who began with embracing me, and then told me a long story, the burthen of which was, that I should before a month was over, see my self, through her means, one of the richest Clergymen in *France*. I thanked her for her good will, and was going to take my leave, when a lady came in with a purse, saying, she made a gathering for a person of quality who was fallen under an extream necessity. *Ah ! my dear*, said the mother, *we must remember the poor* ; and put three pistols into the purse : the daughter gave two, admonishing me that I should be charitable ; and I pull'd out a crown, saying when I should enjoy the benefice, I might afford more liberal alms. I grew jealous at these proceedings, and I fear'd I had sharpeners to deal withal : however, I disssembled my thoughts, and going out, told them, I should be very glad to hear from them as soon as possible ; which I did the next day. The mother having in the discourse we had together, told me, that she had another daughter in a nunnery, I was surpriz'd to see her at my lodging with that pretended daughter of hers, who might be about fifteen or sixteen years old, and seem'd very melancholy. The sight of that pretty maid engag'd me to feign the giving credit to the proposal about the benefice, that I might have a pretence to see her, in visiting the mother ; which I did two days after. I was receiv'd by that young woman, who appear'd yet more sad than when she was at my lodgings ; and I could not forbear asking her the cause of her grief. She look'd first about her, and seeing no person near, told me with tears in her eyes, *that the woman of the house was no mother of hers, but had stole her from her friends while she was a child, so that she knew not whom to call father*. These words were attended with a shower of tears ; which so mov'd me with compassion, that I promis'd her I would take her out of that house. She seem'd reviv'd at this answer, and said, if I had that charity for her, I should take her away immediately. *I am ordered*, said she, *to entertain you alone, in hopes you might make love to me ; which if you should, there*
are

are rogues ready to insult you, with a design to get some of your money. I found then what danger I was expos'd to in remaining there, and began indeed to fear, lest I should not go out as brisk as I came in. I rose, intending to be gone, telling her, she should not trouble her self, for that I would not suffer her to remain long in such a house : but she, not content therewith, would needs follow me out, fearing, if I went without her, I should forget my promise. While I was making fresh protestations, that I would be true to my word, in came the mother, follow'd by two men with swords in their hands, who stopp'd me crying, *so, so, Monsieur l'Abbe ; what ! you love the ladies, it seems.* I answered them as civilly as I could, telling them, more than once, I was their humble Servant. The mother, without more ado, said she must send for a com missary, and that she would have satisfaction for the wrong I would have done her daughter. I protested to her, that I had no ill design, desiring her to enquire of her daughter. The girl cry'd and spoke not a word : as for me, I was at a great loss what to do ; however, I resolv'd not to be daunted, saying, I was not unwilling the commissary should be sent for. In that very minute there was great knocking at the chamber-door, and the young woman, under pretence of seeing who it was, open'd the door, and rushing out, beckoned to me, that I should follow her. The new visitors, whose coming was very seasonable to me, were two other bullies, who drawing upon those that were in the room, cry'd out, *are you there, you rascals, we are glad we have met with you.* I did not stay to see how those would answer the compliment, but got down stairs as fast as I could, where I found the maid, who taking me by the arm, hurry'd me into the street. So I went out with the poor girl, who was all in tears, while the mother was at her window, crying out, *help, thieves, murther.* The neighbours got together, and I was in a moment surrounded with above a hundred persons, who were questioning me what was the matter. My companion pray'd me, for god's sake, to get away : I was so confounded and out of countenance, that I could not tell what to do ; but she being more resolute, made way through the crowd, and along we went, attended by a numerous train, till we got to a broker's,

who

who harbour'd us and sent away the mob. I had lost my hat, and my short cloak and band were all to pieces, and the young woman was in as bad a pickle. The broker could not tell what to make of us, nor I what account to give him, so he concluded it must be some fortune I had stole, and very civilly offer'd me his service, which I readily accepted, and we remain'd in that house the rest of that day. She express'd a great joy, to see her self out of that woman's hands, at whose house I had found her, and calling me her deliverer, earnestly beg'd of me that I would not forsake her. I sent the man of the house to the dutchess with a letter; wherein I gave her notice of my adventure, desiring her to send me a coach. She came by her self at night, and would take me away with her: I then made her a full relation of what had pass'd, and how I found my self entrusted with the young woman. Her beauty mov'd the dutchess's compassion, and she carried her home, assuring me that she would keep her there, till she could find a nunnery wherein to place her. This being done, I went to my lodging, where I was told it was nois'd about, that I was fallen in love with a young woman, and had run away with her. This report was so strong that it was impossible for me to overcome it, and without being guilty of any other crime, than of having ventur'd into a strange house, and of taking a young woman from the ill people she was with, I went under the scandal of a rape, and was look'd on as a debauchee; so little credit is to be given to outward appearances, for all the circumstances made against me, insomuch that had any one undertook to vindicate my reputation, he would have made himself ridiculous. What I then experienc'd, to my cost, has ever since prevented my giving too speedy a credit to the aspersions cast on other people, and whenever I have heard any one ill spoken of, I have thought there might be as little ground for it as for what was laid to my charge.

This accident made me determine to quit the gown, foreseeing, that after the noise it had made, it would be hard for me to thrive in a condition, wherein a man can never be easie whose reputation is once tainted. Besides, my inclination still turn'd the scale; and tho' I was but very young, yet I apprehended how troublesome that state
must

must needs be, which obliging men to be of a more rigid and austere life, exposes them to be scorn'd and ridicul'd for that which is look'd upon as an accomplishment in other people. I was too brisk for an hypocrite, my conversation was sprightly, and I had a natural tendency to the fair sex. This often procur'd me sharp reprimands from my superiors, and I thought, that to set my self off to the best advantage, I must quit a habit which prescribed me to narrow bounds. For, indeed, *true merit lies in knowing how to place one self aright*, and I have seen a thousand Persons, who by taking a Profession upon them, which they were not fit for, could never attain to the esteem which would have been paid them, if they had apply'd themselves to what was most proper for them,

I acquainted the dutchess with my resolution, who gave her consent to it the more freely, because she began to grow weary of me. I took notice of it, but what surpriz'd me was, that she should make use of the adventure I had had, as a pretence for her indifferency. No body knew better than she did, that I noways deserv'd the scandal I went under. I had at first told her all the truth; yet through a sudden alteration of her mind, she said, that after what had happen'd it were imprudent in her to suffer me to visit her often, since she could not persuade the world I was a sober man, whilst it was so strongly bent to believe the contrary. This made me take notice of what I have since had a thousand instances of, that *their number is but small who are generous enough to justify an innocent friend*, when the generality of mankind think them guilty.

I was very easie at the dutchess's change, but the maid's ungratefulness, whom I had sav'd from certain ruin, gave me no small trouble. The duke was at first fight so taken with her, that he grew stark mad for her, and express'd so much passion, that the damsel, who was not so great a child as she appear'd to be, resolv'd to make her advantage of it. She seem'd to resist him, which so increas'd his passion that every body took notice of it. The dutchess was or pretended to be jealous thereat; and being desirous to send her away as speedily as possible, made use of me to persuade her to suffer her self to be carry'd into a nunnery, unknown to the duke. I not doubting
in

in the least but she had a great respect for me, after the important service I had done her, propos'd the thing to her, telling her, of how great a concern it was to her, to keep in favour with her lady. She ask'd me tartly why I troubled my self? which, indeed, put me into a passion: and I could not forbear taxing her with ingratitude; which she answer'd by affronting me: and desir'd me, not to concern my self with her business, denying, with the utmost confidence, that I had ever laid any obligation upon her. Good gods! how was I amaz'd at her impudence? and how often did I cry out, *what creatures are women?* Having left her, I went and desir'd the dutchess to dispose of her as she pleas'd, giving her an account of the discourse we had had. The dutchess found she had a cunning jilt to deal withal, and resolv'd to send her back to the place whence I had brought her. Enquiry was made for the woman, who went for her mother, but she was not to be found; and we understood the pretended mother, the other daughter, and the bullies that had affronted me, were all gone off.

The dutchess, not knowing what to do, but being resolv'd to get rid of her, did not stick to put her out of doors; and one night that wretched creature was forc'd from her chamber, and carry'd into an hospital at the further end of the suburbs, to the directors of which she was recommended as a poor friendless maid, whom they would do a deed of charity to receive into that house.

The duke was in the country, and I knew nothing of all this; but it was not long e'er I understood it. The duke came home, and not finding her there, ask'd what was become of her? the dutchess answer'd, she had not heard of her since one morning, that she went out unknown to any body, and that she suppos'd he best knew where she was. The duke fretted, swore, and threatned, and came presently to me, thinking I might inform him; which it were strange if I should, being ignorant of the matter. While I protested to him, that I could give him no account of the girl, a servant came to tell me, that there was a gown-man that wanted to speak with me. I answered, I could not leave my lord duke, and that I desir'd him to call another time. But he was urgent to speak with me, and, with the duke's leave, he

was

was call'd in; then taking me aside, *fir*, said he, *it is unconscionable in you, after you have debauch'd a poor girl, to send her into an hospital; I must tell you we can keep her no longer, and that we desire you to take her away.* I pray'd him to explain his meaning, and understood he was one of the directors of the hospital, and that the slut had inform'd them, I had sent her thither. The duke took notice that we spoke with a great deal of heat, and ask'd what was the matter? whereupon the priest told him what we were discoursing about. The duke grew extremely angry, and calling me a rogue and a rascal, said, he would take care of her; and leaving me, took the clergy-man into the coach with him, ordering him to direct his coach-man to the hospital. I vow'd to him, I had no hand in the business, earnestly beg'd I might go with him, and offer'd to convince him out of the girl's own mouth, that I had no share in what pass'd. But the duke would by no means permit me, and was accompanied by none but the clergy man, swearing he would be reveng'd on me. Away they went, and I ran to the dutchess, to give her an account how matters stood; at which she was much surpriz'd: but taking the hint from the opinion she understood her husband was possess'd with, that I had sent the girl into the hospital, she secretly resolv'd not to undeceive him, but to let the weight of the duke's anger fall upon me. Thus all the ill of this second adventure fell to my share. The duke took his mistress home again to him, and always looked upon me as the person who had put the girl into the hospital; which the dutchess confirm'd, by protesting she was ignorant where the maid was gone, and, to regain his favour, wink'd at the kindness he had for her, which lasted three or four years; after which he married her to a captain, who has since rais'd her to a considerable fortune, in so much that she was reckon'd one of the richest ladies at court, and was in no small esteem. It is not long since she dy'd.

Being fix'd in my design of leaving the clergy, I wrote to my eldest brother about it; who very well approv'd of my resolution, and sent me some money, that I might come to him. He was then in *Roussillon*, but order'd me

to wait for him at *Lyons*, where he intended suddenly to be, in hopes of seeing monsieur *de Cinq Mars*, his intimate friend, who was to be brought there after his condemnation, in order, as it was reported, to suffer a shameful death.

I then clapp'd on a sword, and taking leave of my brethren the abbots, some of whom have since attain'd to considerable preferments in the church; which has often made me repent that I did not stay among them; I arriv'd at *Lyons*, where I met my brother, who had disguis'd himself, that he might the easier find an opportunity to see his dear friend, and receive his last orders.

If I had hitherto met with instances of the female sex's inconstancy, I now found stronger proofs of the little trust that is to be repos'd on the friendship of the great, and on the smiles of fortune, in the unhappy death of poor monsieur *de Cinq Mars*, who was brought to *Lyons* the next day after my arrival. My brother and I went, dress'd like serving-men, near to the town-hall-gate, that he might see us as he came out of his coach. He took notice of us, and judging from our habits that we were unknown, and guessing at the intent of our coming, desir'd he might speak with us, alledging we had been servants of his, to whom he was desirous of giving some orders. It was pretty hard for him to obtain that favour, but we acting our parts well enough, and neither our clothes nor our behaviour betraying us, we were permitted to see him soon after he was got into his chamber. We could not forbear breaking out into floods of tears as we embrac'd him, but he, smiling on us, said, *what, my dear friends, could you then think all this real, and that the king would ever suffer me to be put to death?* My brother, who was better inform'd than I that his condition was hopeless, redoubled his grief, seeing him thus confident, and embracing him more closely, express'd so deep a sorrow, that monsieur *de Cinq Mars* chang'd colour, and starting back, *what then, cry'd he, are they in earnest?* My brother continu'd embracing him, and shedding abundance of tears, but had not power to speak a word; and monsieur *de Cinq Mars*, seeing he could not get any answer from him, turns to me, saying, *what is the meaning of all this?* He had no sooner spoke, but I saw so great an alteration in his face, that

that I thought he would have fwoounded. My brother throwing his arms about his friend's neck, *ab! dear Sir,* said he, *your misfortune is but too certain.* Here he remain'd speechleis; and monsieur de Cinq Mars falling on a sudden from deep sadness into an extravagant passion; *what,* said he, *must I be trick'd thus!* this was follow'd by some oaths and imprecations, which my brother stopp'd by saying, that he thought it his duty, as his friend and servant, to advise him to think only of forgiving his Enemies, and preparing himself for death. *Ab! as for death,* reply'd monsieur de Cinq Mars, *I am but little concern'd about it, but I never can forgive my enemies.* And then he told us, how the king had formerly given him frequent assurances, that he would die rather than forsake him. My brother heard them without interruption, and when he had done, inform'd him, in few words, there was no favour to be expected from his majesty. Monsieur de Cinq Mars continued his discourse, sometimes cursing the court, sometimes contriving his escape, and then desir'd my brother to lend him a dagger to stab himself; and having no answer, he fell down in his chair, saying, *I see, dear friend, that I am lost: what shall I do?* then growing a little more sedate; *'tis true,* said he, *I find I must prepare for a future state: well, I am resolv'd to do it; and since I have been so cruelly deceiv'd in this world, I must prevent my being so in the next.* He wept while he spoke these last words! my brother exhorted him not to dwell upon the thoughts of what had past, but to prepare himself for his ensuing death. This Conversation lasted about two hours, and we had the consolation to behold him very calm, tho' without any hope or thoughts of a pardon. He begg'd we would excuse his weakness and want of moderation, and gave some commissions for my brother to execute; desiring him not to quit *Lyons* till he had seen what would become of him. We departed glad to leave him in so good a disposition. There was no possibility for us to see him any more, for his execution came on presently after, at which we were present, getting as near to the scaffold as we could, where he appeared with an undaunted courage, and was as resolute as when we left him. When first he mounted the scaffold, he

he look'd about him, with a design (as we thought) to spy us out; and I know not whether he did or no, but he bow'd towards us. For my part, I could not bear that doleful sight, but cast down my eyes, which I lifted not up, till I heard the blow; which left only the trunk to be seen, the blood flowing thence in abundance. My brother seeing him dead, said, *let us be gone, the business is over.* We, both of us half dead, were no sooner at home but we got to bed, where my brother remain'd a longer time than I did, being really fallen sick upon it. I had all the reason imaginable to love my dear brother, who had been so kind to me, but the instance he then gave me of his good nature, increas'd the affection I bore him. He often told me, *monfieur de Cinq Mars's* misfortunes proceeded from the passion he had for some women, who were the cause of his ill conduct. This, and the experience I had of the falshood of that sex, while at *Paris*, made me again resolve never to engage my self with them. But, alas, there is little heed to be given to such kind of resolutions; the love of women is a rock, on which, tho' warn'd by numberless shipwracks, our inclination will still hurry us. But if I had no reason to speak well of them in my younger days, it was worse when a riper age made me capable of receiving more refin'd and more violent passions.

I followed my brother into *Catalonia*, where my first campaign made me an eye-witness of the taking of *Perpignan*, and the conquest of all the *Rouffillon*. I serv'd then in his regiment, and on some occasions convinc'd him I was no coward, for I was more daring than usual in the first engagements. A military life began to please me; and being well read in history, I fancy'd my self to tread in the steps of *Cæsar* or *Alexander*, which animated my soul with an heroick courage.

About the latter end of *October* we return'd to *Paris*, after the battle of *Lerida*, gain'd by the mareschal *de la Mothe*, who presented me to cardinal *Richlieu*, giving me all the praises that can well be bestow'd on a young man. The cardinal knew my brother, and was not ignorant of his intimacy with *monfieur de Cinq Mars*. I know not whether he was in earnest when he told me that I had a very discreet brother, and that I should do well to follow

this example. My brother, who was present, making no reply, he repeated over again, that I had a very discreet brother; adding that he knew him to be so: and promis'd us all possible favour, provided we would stick to our duty.

This visit being ended, I ask'd my brother, why the cardinal had insisted so much on his discretion; and he inform'd me, that the cardinal had two days before sent for him, to discourse with him about monsieur *de Cinq Mars*: that he seem'd to him to be very much concern'd on his account, and had ask'd him several questions, especially for what reason monsieur *de Cinq Mars* had such an aversion for him. To which he told me, he had answer'd, that he had no knowledge of the designs or secret inclinations of monsieur *de Cinq Mars*; and the cardinal not having appear'd satisfy'd with this reply, he suppos'd what he had said was by way of reflection. This made me think the cardinal would rather be an enemy than a friend to us: But the death of that prelate, which happen'd the fourth day of *December* following, soon rid us of those fears.

I was then eighteen years old; we lived with my mother, who allow'd us meat, drink and lodging; but we could not oblige her to do more for us, by reason she had made a shift, what by her settlement and other pretensions, to get from us the little estate my father had left. My brother the count was also with us; and she had taken home my sister, who was near thirty, and had constantly refus'd to be a nun. My mother had taken her out of the convent in hopes to marry her to a young officer, a relation of ours, whom she had the entire management of. It was an ill match for her daughter; but she, who had no greater desire than to get rid of her, thought it good enough, provided he would but agree to it. Fearing, however, it might sound ill that she should consent to so unequal a marriage, she endeavour'd to vindicate herself, by bringing things about in such a manner, as that she might seem to have been forc'd to it; and there I had an Instance how basely parents act, who seek rather their own satisfaction than their childrens happiness. The way she made use of was, to make people believe he had debauch'd her; and to compass her design,

design, she left them alone as long as they pleas'd. By this means the officer fell in love with my sister, and endeavour'd all he could to do what my mother intended ; but she resisted him, either out of virtue or a want of kindness for him. Her coyness added fresh fuel to the fire, for he grew more passionate, and through my mother's secret assistance easily got into my sister's chamber, while she was asleep. My mother having quickly intelligence, made us all be call'd up, to surprize them together ; whereupon we went into the room, when my mother, without admitting any excuses, made the officer promise, he would marry her the next day ; which was done, tho' my sister swore there had nothing pass'd between them that might any way prejudice her honour. But she was forc'd to comply, and fearing, lest a mother, who was so unworthy as to expose her thus, should punish her worse some other way, she consented to marry a man whom she had never any respect for ; but all my mother got by their wedding was, that she coupl'd two persons together, who soon became a charge to her.

My eldest brother, tho' he had no estate besides his commission, had long since thought of getting him a wife : he lov'd, and was belov'd by a person of the first quality. The match would have been very equal, had her parents given their consent ; for tho' my brother bore not so high a title, yet his family was more ancient, and his own personal merit, with the honourable post he had in the army, made him be not a little respected ; but he had not as yet attain'd to the pitch of preferment he arriv'd to afterward ; and they judg'd of him then but by the smallness of his estate. That lady was deny'd him, and he resolving to be marry'd, espous'd a rich merchant's daughter, who brought him near four hundred thousand livres. This marriage was the making of him, and he was in the right to consider, that how great so ever his desert might be, he could never put himself forward, without an estate to support it.

The lady whom he had courted was enraged at his marriage ; and though he had taken no little pains to make her sensible, that it was a folly in him to persist in loving her, she was not satisfy'd with his arguments. She was obstinate and opiniated, and affected to contemn

wealth and honour as much as my brother seem'd to respect both. In a word, she would have made a fine character in a romance.

My brother, who had a great affection for me, kept nothing of all this from my knowledge, and I was inform'd by him how he had disoblig'd her. My head being full of romances. I admir'd his mistress's humour, and blam'd my brother, for having marry'd against her will; nay, I found my self inclin'd to affect so romantick a person, and would gladly have been in her favour: but my other brother had prevented me, having already engaged her. I do not know whether she lov'd him, or whether it was to spight my eldest brother, that she seem'd to admit of his addresses, but I perceiv'd they were pretty familiar, when I design'd to make my applications to her. My brother was a brute, who kept no measures with any one, and seeing he made his applications to her, I thought fit to put off my courtship to another time. All I did, was to tell my eldest brother of it; who foreseeing what might follow, and having yet some respect for the lady, seriously advis'd my brother to desist. He presently acquainted his mistress with it; who, thinking my brother had done it out of jealousy, and resolving to provoke him as far as she could, propos'd his running away with her: which suiting with his temper, he readily embrac'd, for he was vain and rash enough to have attempted the stealing of a princess.

They put all things in readiness to effect their purpose, but a person whom the lady intrusted with it, and who dreaded the event, acquainted her father; who sent her immediately into a nunnery, forbidding my brother ever to come near her. The fool sent him a challenge, which the other slighting, obtain'd an express order for his imprisonment, and he remain'd two years in the *Bastile*.

We were not sorry for our being rid of him, seeing he was always full of incumbrances, which occasion'd no small trouble to us; besides, I had still a secret inclination for the young lady, and all she had done on that score did but inhance my desires. I was heartily vex'd that she should not have pitch'd upon me sooner than on that giddy coxcomb. My vanity was offended at it, and

I wished

I wished for an opportunity of gaining her heart ; so unaccountable are the means whereby the several passions creep into our breast ; for, to speak the truth, the motive of my love should rather have been a reason for my contempt. My thoughts ran wholly upon that beautiful person, and I long'd to see her in the convent where she was. For which end, I represented to my brother, that what she had done, being but through a fit of anger, he ought not to desert her ; this I did so effectually, that he resolv'd to make her a visit, and carried me with him. He would not appear in it at first, but sent me to her in a footman's disguise, as tho' I had come from her father. She came to me, and having known me, express'd no little joy. I forgot that my errand was but to give her notice of my brother's coming, and finding my self more amorous at sight of her than I before had been, I mention'd not a word of him, but spoke only of my self. I upbraided her with her intrigue with my brother the count, as an injustice she had done me, who was her most passionate adorer. This declaration was answer'd in a very obliging manner, for she desir'd me to write to her daily, and see her often, and assur'd me she would be wholly at my devotion. Our conversation lasted so long, that my brother growing impatient, came into the porter's to see what staid me there all that while, and desir'd me to withdraw. I was not over-well satisfy'd at it, but fearing to disoblige him, I went out, and stood close to the door, list'ning to their discourse.

I heard her say, after the shedding of several tears, she was unhappy in having settled her love on that brother of the three who had the least affection for her, and thereupon she gave him an account of all I had said to her. I could scarce forbear interrupting her in her treachery ; however, I did not, but heard my brother admonish her not to hearken to young men, who could only ruin her ; that she should by a sober and modest behaviour endeavour to regain her father's good will, and then think of a husband that might deserve her : as for him he would remain her sure and constant friend. She answer'd these wholesome admonitions by a fresh shower of tears and new reproaches, swearing his inconstancy should not be

unpunish'd, but that her self would revenge it by his blood. My brother having endeavour'd, in vain, to appease her, left her, and we came back. He told me by the way, that he was happy not to have marry'd her, and that she was of a dangerous violent temper, and one who would not stick at any thing to compass her ends ; an instance of which was, that she had pretended to him that I had courted her. I cry'd out, Oh, the jilt ! I had no power to say any more, but the tears came in my eyes. My brother fell a laughing, and by the exhortations he made me, to be very wary in my addresses, and take care what women I had to deal withal, made me suspect he did believe her.

I was vex'd to the heart at what had happen'd, and charm'd at the same time with my brother's goodness and moderation, who did not express any dissatisfaction with me, but only advis'd me, for my own sake, not to concern my self with her. I follow'd his counsel, tho' something unwillingly ; and, I even think, I should have went on my own way, had not two things happen'd ; one, that she marry'd a person of quality in the country, and the other, that my brother being order'd away suddenly to the army, I was oblig'd to accompany him.

We went into *Champaign*, which was that year become the seat of the war, and my brother's regiment, with some other troops of reserve, were order'd to stay under the walls of *Charleville*. My brother who had been made a brigadier-general, follow'd the duke d' *Anguin*, leaving me to look after his regiment during the battle at *Rocroy*. I was not a little troubled that I could not be there ; and tho' I had that year obtain'd a company in my brother's regiment, and all the officers paid me a great respect, yet I should have been very much concern'd to see my self of no service, had I not met with a handsome maid, who employ'd my thoughts another way. She was a citizen's daughter, but besides her beauty, her carriage rais'd her above her birth, and both together kindled a passion in me, which she answer'd with an equal flame : she was going to marry a young man of that town when I first grew acquainted with her ; but her aversion to a citizen's life was so great, that she own'd, she had rather be
my

my mistress all her life, than to be marry'd to that man. For, said she, I cannot pretend that you should marry me : I weigh too well the difference between your quality and mine, and should never require it of you : but I will trust to your honour, and leave my self to your disposal, too happy in enjoying your love and conversation.

Indeed, I was so transported to hear her talk thus, that I thought I had never lov'd till then ; so great was the difference between what I felt for her, and what I had felt for others. I answer'd, her heart was all I could covet ; and that if I could contribute to her bliss, I would marry her that very moment. No, no, said she, do not think of that, only contrive to place me where we may freely give and receive tokens of each other's love. We agreed, that after the campaign was over, I should send for her to *Paris*, and that she would the whilst make her friends believe she had a mind to enter into a religious house. She was wholly guided by me ; but I, at last, overcome with a strong desire of enjoying her, resolv'd to marry ; and having made a contract, and got a priest and some witnesses, we went into the country, where we made a wedding ; to which the most essential formalities were wanting, yet it seem'd as good as any to us two, who understood not what was requisite for it's validity. No body knew of it but such persons as must needs be entrusted with it, and about a fortnight after, finding a necessity for me to be gone, she went into a nunnery, declaring to her friends, that she had renounc'd all thoughts of a husband, and had made a vow to lead a holy life. They, who had already begun to be jealous at my frequent visits, were glad to see her so well dispos'd, and readily consented to what she had a mind to impose on their belief ; and she, the better to cover her design, took a nun's habit. I also gave over visiting her as soon as she had taken it ; but I was present at that ceremony, wherein I just got a minute to bid her adieu : for towards the latter end of *July* our regiment was order'd for the siege of *Thionville*. Her time of probation being to last a year, I promis'd her, that before that expir'd, I would take her from that nunnery, and carry her to *Paris*. She told me, she thought her self with child, and begg'd I would not let her stay too long there.

I swore with all possible sincerity, that I would be as good as my word, so soon as the forces should be in their winter-quarters, and left her, being possess'd with all the love and grief my heart was capable of. We had taken our measures for writing to each other, but our letters were intercepted, and she did not hear from me all the while the campaign lasted. There was no possibility of my leaving the army to fetch her out of that convent, or of being inform'd of the cause of her silence; for after the taking of *Thionville*, we were sent into *Germany* to reinforce the marshal de *Guebriant's* army. I never could obtain leave to be absent, but remain'd most part of the winter there; all I could do, not doubting but that our letters were stopp'd, was to order some soldiers that went from *France*, to call at *Charleville*, which I did two or three times, but I never heard from any of them since. About the latter end of *March* I came to *Paris*, and the very next day rid post for *Charleville*, for I was almost distracted through the impatience and anguish I had, not to have heard, for almost ten months together, from a Person whom I was so tender of, and for whom my flame was increas'd by my uneasiness at the ignorance I remain'd in of her condition.

Being arriv'd at *Charleville* about three in the afternoon, I saw a multitude of People got together; and having ask'd what was the matter, I was inform'd that they were going to hang a young woman, who had murther'd her unlawful issue. I presently saw the prisoner coming along, attended by a confessor and the hangman: good gods! how great was my amazement, when fixing my eyes on that unfortunate person, I found her to be the same I had so great a desire to see! There was such an alteration in her face, that none but a lover could have known her; and as often as I think on the sad estate she was in, I cannot forbear weeping, and the tears even now trickle down.

I ador'd her with the utmost passion; my esteem for her was not inferior to my love, and I never had known any thing of her but what deserv'd my admiration: then let it be judg'd how these impressions could affect my soul at such a sight: I was ready to drop down with grief and astonishment; but recovering some presence of mind

mind, I made way through the crowd, crying out, as loud as I could, grace, grace. I was on horseback, very much fatigued, and appear'd as an express: the people hearing me cry so, thought I really brought a reprieve, and began to flock about me. I saw the signs of a general joy appear in every countenance, and was thereby encourag'd to cry out louder yet, that every one should assist me in saving her. With this, part of them began to pull down the gallows, while the boldest follow'd me; and having routed the officers of justice, she was left to our management. They took her, and gave her into my arms as I sat on horseback; and I, embracing her, spurr'd on, and got without the walls. The officers made a shew of following me, but my kind confederates shut the city-gates upon them, and I found my self in one of the suburbs, where I met with no opposition; far from that, a man, who let horses out to hire, seeing mine could scarce gallop, gave me a fresh one; on which I mounted without abandoning my prey; and I found my self accompanied by four horsemen, well equipp'd, who came of their own good will, to offer me their service; so easily are the people mov'd to save from punishment, such as are convicted of certain crimes, occasion'd by despair. I got then out of the suburbs with my four companions, and having gallop'd for about a league, went into a wood to take a little breath, and endeavouring to set my mistress up behind me, being not able to hold her in my arms any longer; she was in a sound, and had so little breath, that having laid her down, I thought she had been really dead. One of the men that were with me, who was stronger and less tir'd than my self, told me, it was not safe staying where we were, and that he would undertake to carry her in his arms till night. We got up on horseback, and at two the next morning arriv'd at a town twelve leagues distant from *Charleville*; so great was the speed we had made. There we rested two hours, and the first thing we did was to put the poor creature into a very hot bed, where she began to give some signs of life. I was near her all the while, and the joy I conceiv'd at her deliverance was not great enough to stifle the vexation I was in, at the thoughts of what she had endur'd, and of her present

sent condition. At length she open'd her eyes, and having fix'd them on me, without expressing any knowledge of me, I embrac'd her very tenderly, and with tears in my eyes; ah! said I, do you not then know me? She chang'd colour, and raising her self up, said to me, in a fright, what, sir, are you dead? I answer'd no, I was living, and, at length, by often telling her who I was, she came to her self again, and I had the comfort of seeing her fit had left no dangerous symptoms.

Who can express the extasie I was in, when I saw her alive again; and the joy, the tenderness and love, I was possess'd with, when her Eyes discover'd her heart to have the same inclinations I felt in my own. Such moments as these may be pronounc'd happy. We embrac'd each other, without uttering one word, for our tears and sighs would have stop't our speech, had the transport we were in permitted us to talk. But our joys were disturb'd by the necessity of pursuing our journey; and, by good fortune, we found there a kind of horse-litter, wherein we plac'd her; and thus we came to *Reims* by break of day. We hid our selves in a private house, where my obliging company remain'd with me all day, and then taking their leave, they promis'd me they would not betray us, but would pretend they had persu'd us, and could not overtake us.

I remain'd alone with that dear creature, who inform'd me how she had been brought into the condition I had reliev'd her from. Seeing, said she, that I could not hear from you, I doubted not but you had prov'd false to me, and that made me resolve to turn nun in earnest; but I was in an extraordinary trouble, when I felt too certain signs of my being with child, and my care increas'd as my time drew near. I knew not what kept me from destroying my self, for death was the only thing I wished for, being depress'd with the sorrow I was in to see you had deceiv'd me, and with the extremity of my circumstances. I reveal'd my condition to an old maid which belong'd to the convent, wherein she had serv'd a long time, and she was the only one who had any knowledge of my being deliver'd, for I had the courage not to cry out. This wicked woman took the child, without saying any thing to me, save that she

would

would dispose of it, and going out before it was day, threw it into a rivulet that runs through the nunnery. By mischance, or rather by the direction of divine justice, the child, carry'd down by the stream, stuck to a grate which divided part of the convent from a street that is very much frequented. It was seen, and the justices sent for; who came to the nunnery, very much scandaliz'd. Information being given to the abbess, she easily found out I was the mother; and I took little pains to justify myself, so great was the desire I had to die. I accus'd not her who had done the fact, and every body thought me the only criminal. None of the nuns took any pity on me, but all, on the contrary, did, with the utmost severity, say, there was no punishment bad enough for me. Thus was I deliver'd into the hands of secular justice, and all my friends interest could not obtain the putting a stop to my sentence. I was remov'd to *Paris*, where my dreadful doom was confirm'd: and, while I was there, I wrote a letter to you, which you will herhaps find in the hands of your mother's porter, wherein I bad you farewell, and told you what thoughts I retain'd for you, and that I dy'd entirely yours.

Here, inclining her head in my bosom, a flood of tears hindred her farther discourse. As for me, I could not forbear weeping during the sad relation; which at last she ended, telling me, that when I came in, crying out *grace*, she knew me; but that since that moment she had been wholly depriv'd of that little sense, which the dread of impending death had left her. Her misfortune touch'd me to the soul, and I could not sufficiently reproach myself for being the cause.

Having recover'd her health, I ask'd her, what she thought of going to *Paris* with me? She had no reason to doubt of the sincerity of my affection; nevertheless, through a generosity, which shew'd her soul greater yet than I could have thought it; no, said she, my dear, I cannot flatter my self with the thoughts that you love me still: the crime I have appear'd guilty of, and the shameful sentence I lie under, make me for ever unworthy your esteem: all I expect from you is, that you would have so much compassion on me, as to procure me a confinement, where I may spend the residue of my life

in an unfeign'd and austere penance. Ah! reply'd I, for god's sake, do not cherish such fancies, I am the criminal, you are innocent. Nothing of this redounds to your shame, but will rather inhanche my love and admiration. All arguments were fruitless, and she being perswaded that our marriage could not stand good, was obstinately bent to turn nun, which I promis'd I would not oppose, so soon as we should arrive at *Paris*. She suffer'd me to carry her thither, and I took a very handsome lodging for her near to the *fransiscan* fryers in *St. Laurence's* suburbs, where I left her, and return'd home. There I found the letter she had spoken of, which I have ever since kept by me, and will insert here, in confirmation of her generosity.

I Date my letter from a doleful prison, being condemned to die, for a crime that proceeded but from the too great affection I bore you; the melancholy occasion of my journey hither was, to hear the confirmation of the dreadful sentence I lie under. Who would have thought, alas! that I should have seen *Paris* on this account, when it was there I once propos'd to have been made for ever happy, by enjoying you! You will abhor the thoughts of me, when you know through what kind of death my days are at an end: nevertheless, I assure you, that how shameful soever it be, I embrace it with pleasure, as ridding me of a life grown tiresome to me, since you have forgot me. If you go to *Charleville* you will there be inform'd of my guilt, without your being suspected to be any ways concern'd; for I never have mention'd your name, desiring to preserve your honour and reputation, which I value above my own safety. The only favour I beg of you is, that you would cause some masses to be said for my soul; and that you would believe, if heaven has mercy on me, I shall continually interceed for your prosperity.

Farewell,

I Dye wholly Yours.

How

How was I mov'd at the reading of this letter! I ran to her lodging, more determin'd than ever not to suffer her to be a nun; there I found her not, and understood that one of the fryars had been with her. I went to him to enquire what was become of that lovely creature, but he would not satisfy me. After a week's search, I understood she was at the *Hotel-Dieu*, with a design there to take the veil. Thither I ran, and with much difficulty got leave to see her. I never was so transported: I fell at her feet, and swore I would stab my self if she would not hearken to me. My despair mov'd her compassion, and she said, with tears in her eyes; what would you do, sir? you cannot keep me and preserve your reputation, and it would be an eternal shame to you to marry a woman whom you have taken from the gallows. The question now, answer'd I, is not about marrying, since you won't suffer me on that subject; but at least if you must be a nun, chuse some other house. O! sir, reply'd that generous person, I will not be a charge to you; I came hither because my admittance would cost me nothing, and I cannot enter into another convent without putting you to an expence, which I know you cannot well bear. Ah! said I, my life and fortune are devoted to you, and whatsoever it cost, I will certainly place you where you shall not be liable to such austerities. To this I added a thousand more endearing expressions, but could obtain nothing from her: then she left me, with an *adieu*, so moving, it wounded my very heart. Not prevailing with her, I ask'd for the prioress, and oppos'd her entertaining that young woman, acquainting her, she was my wife, and that I demanded her as such. She thereupon sending for her, told her, she could not receive her, and so I had her again: but overcome by her pressing intreaties, I carry'd her to a little convent, the superior of which was my very good friend, to whom I recommended her, as being a woman of near concern to me.

In the mean while, what I had done at *Charleville*, made no small noise in the world, and I heard informations were preferr'd against me. All my friends had heard the story, and I found by publick discourse, that indeed I could not marry her with honour. I shall
not

not relate, all the several designs that came into my head, for I thought it very hard that I should be so great a slave to other mens opinions, as not to have the liberty of spending my life with a person, whose reputation was only tainted by the misfortune of loving me. If she would have consented to it, my resolution was to go into *England*, but she was still perswaded, that I ought, for my own credit, to let her take a nun's habit. My eldest brother, to whom I related the particulars of this accident, told me, he pitied me, but that I was happy. however, to have met with a person, who was of her self inclin'd to do what I should have perswaded her to. This he confirm'd with so many good reasons, that I saw it was necessary for me to comply with her desires. I obtain'd her pardon and my own, and then we plac'd her into a nunnery of the *Carmelites*. My eldest brother generously presented her with two thousand crowns; and I oblig'd her to accept of a small annuity, which I freely gave to the convent. We chang'd her name, and concealing what had happen'd to her, she was admitted with a great deal of respect, and no body has ever known who she was. She has since led a very holy life, and my brother and I have for ever after had in her a sincere and assur'd friend, to whom we had always recourse, when we wanted advice or consolation. It was with all immaginable difficulty, that I brought my self to consider her as a person secluded from the world, and had not my brother ever afforded me a kind assistance, I should, no doubt, have lost my wits. Indeed I never had so great a passion or value for any one. Thus by a strong caprice of fortune the only woman who deserv'd my esteem, was one whom honour oblig'd me not to marry, nor even appear to be in love with.

This adventure, and the concern it gave me, put me very much backwards in the world, for it was a whole year before I would see any body, having taken a retir'd lodging near the *Carmelites*, whence I never stirr'd, and where I was known to no one; for I went under the notion of a man that had withdrawn himself from conversation, and minded nothing but the way to heaven. My brother, however, kept my company from being dispos'd

dispos'd of, having given out that I was ill, and oblig'd to drink the waters of *Bourbon*, which were absolutely necessary for the recovery of my health.

I shall forbear giving an account of the life I led in that kind of hermitage, and how agreeable it was to me to discern my *Carmelite's* voice from that of her companions, while they were singing mass. That was the only bliss I enjoy'd, for she constantly refus'd to see me, contenting her self with writing to me sometimes, advising me to have more courage, and think of her no longer, and either wholly to forsake the world, or follow a life more suitable to my birth.

My brother's desires, join'd with her admonitions, prevail'd with me to return to the army; which I did in the year 1645. I was then but twenty; but I thought that after the experience I had had, it would be impossible for any woman to delude me again. I made the art of war my only study, and found that the trouble which the loss of a woman, I lov'd so dearly, had given me, did not a little contribute to raise my name; by occasioning me to seek for an opportunity of dying with honour, since I could no longer live with pleasure. I fought in the battle at *Northlinguen*, and thence went into the *mareschal de Turenne's* army, where I was at the taking of *Dunkespink*; I may without vanity say, that none was more bold than my self in either of these occasions. Let men be naturally never so brave, they generally stand in need of some external motives, to attain a reputation of valour; and that which provok'd me to act as I did, was rather despair than ambition.

I return'd not to *Paris* till *Landau* had surrendred to *monfieur de Turenne*; and there I found that my nun's neighbourhood increas'd my melancholy humour, for I could not forbear going to the *Carmelites*. This weakness of mine I disclos'd to my brother; who being perswaded that nothing but a long absence could perfectly cure me, propos'd to me a voyage, which I had an opportunity to make, into *Poland*. The princess *Mary* was to go thither about the beginning of *November*, and the relation she knew we had to a prince, whom she had lov'd till death, made her desire that I would accompany her.

I accepted of this offer, and (to my shame be it spoken) found in me a secret desire of pleasing the princess, endeavouring to gain her affection. I never reflected on what I was going to undertake ; but as soon as I found I was to make that journey, and that I should have an opportunity of freely conversing with her, I began a little to forget the person I had lost, and experience that a new mistress is a better consolation for the loss of an old one, that either ambition or war.

The princess was, on the account of her love to the deceased prince, much in the same condition as I had been on that of my *Carmelite*. His death was an eternal grief to her, and she made him the subject of our daily discourse. I, on the other hand, related to her what had happen'd to me at *Charleville* ; and she was glad to hear I was capable of as tender and constant an affection as her self, and we would often dispute which of us were the most unhappy, she in her lover's death, or I in my mistress's confinement.

If this was a romance, I might here bring in the conversations we had on that theme, which I dare say, would equal the best in *Clelia* or the *Grand Cyrus*. But I omit all such digressions, to stick only to my purpose ; which is, to shew in these memoirs the temper of women, and the usual consequences of engaging with them.

P A R T II.

THE princess seem'd to me resolv'd to comfort herself against the grief for the loss of her lover, in the honours which waited for her in *Poland* ; and it was in vain that I would persuade her to drive out that passion by another, her mind being wholly taken up with ambition and grandeur. She perceiv'd however, that I spoke through self-interest, and would often tell me, that had she had an inclination for me, she would not have encourag'd my falshood to so lovely a person as my nun ; but I was grown weary of that nice fidelity, and the princess's discourse on that subject was uneasy to me.

me. At last I told her plainly, that I lov'd her, which she seem'd to disbelieve : but seeing I was in earnest, she grew serious upon the matter, and said, if I talk'd any more so presumptuously she would send me back to *France* : which words were utter'd with so scornful an accent, that I highly resent'd it, and resolv'd not only to forbear speaking for the future, but entertaining any thoughts of passion for her ; so I continu'd silent the greatest part of the voyage. This displeas'd her ; and she advis'd me, that, since I could not be in a good humour without an amour, I should make my addressees to one of her maids, which was not unhandiome ; adding, that she would take care the jest should not be carry'd on too far, it being only to make the journey more diverting. I was not well pleas'd at this raillery, and resolv'd to court not the young woman she mention'd, but the first *Polander* I should like as soon as we should arrive. This intention, of which I did not inform her, made me as gay as ever, and the princess, who had been dissatisfy'd at my being chagrine, seem'd not overwell contented with my mirth. I took all possible care not to speak the least word she might interpret as an expression of my love to her, which I the more easily affected, because I really had none. How great soever he might be, her pride and disobliging reflections still stuck in my mind, and I had sense enough to consider, that it was impossible for me to prevail with a princess, who, besides much ambition and haughtiness, had also a great stock of virtue.

Our journey at last grew towards an end, and we arriv'd in *Poland*. King *Ladislaus* came to receive his new espous'd queen, who presented me to him in a very obliging manner. As soon as we were got to *Warsaw*, I put in execution my purpose of making love to the first agreeable person I should meet. Among the retinue of his majesty gave the queen, there was a lady who pleas'd me so well, as to make me think she was the person whose chains I was to wear. She was about eighteen or nineteen, and daughter to one of the greatest lords of that kingdom. I happen'd to be near her when she was presented to the queen, who, whether she took notice of it or not, smil'd, as I thought, to see me view her

her with great attention; and I perceiv'd since, that of all those which had been placed about her, she had the first share of her majesty's favour. The queen's kindness for her gave me frequent opportunities of seeing her, and I grew very passionate, which I soon inform'd her of, that lady understanding *French* well enough to converse in that tongue. I was something surpriz'd that she should be equally fond of me, but more to hear her express it in so frank a manner; but she carry'd her ingenuity something too far: for the queen having ask'd her what discourse we had together, she not only told her what I had said, but also what answers she had return'd; confessing freely, that she was very much inclin'd to love me. The queen made her sensible of the inconveniencies such a passion might be attended with, and order'd her never to speak to me in private. Her majesty laid the same commands also upon me, threatening to send me back into *France* if I disobey'd her. It was by no means my interest to disoblige the queen, and leave her on such an account; but I also lov'd that maid, and the free and natural manner wherein she had express'd her thoughts to me, made me dote the more on her. I found my self then in a great dilemma, from which I was shortly after deliver'd, but it was to fall into a worse. I had for eight or ten days carefully avoided my mistress's company, according to the queen's order; when her majesty took an opportunity to tell me, I was easily discourag'd, that what she had done was only to try me: But however, since I had been so obedient, she should have some regard to my passion, and that she gave me free leave to visit the young lady when I would.

I could not then imagine whence proceeded this sudden change; the reason of which was, that her majesty had perceiv'd the king had a kindness for her; and whether through policy or jealousy, she intended to put him out of conceit with her, by letting him see she admitted my courtship.

I was not willing to lose any time in making reflections, my chief care being to seek for an opportunity of speaking to my mistress, who I perceiv'd avoided my company now, as much as she sought for it before. Having ask'd her the reason, she own'd to me, with her usual openness

of

of heart, that the king courted her, and that it was so great an honour, she durst not receive any other addresses; but when she was marry'd she would return my love. I understood then, that the first thing the grandees of *Poland* do, when they have a mind to debauch a woman, is to get her a husband; and accordingly there was much talk at court, a few days after, of a match between her and a great lord in *Lithuania*. The queen was not at all satisfy'd with it, since she knew that the king's design in marrying of her was to make her his mistress, and see her with more liberty. She therefore perswaded me to marry her, not doubting but if that were done, I would carry her into *France*.

I apprehended, that a great many inconveniencies might accrue to me from this marriage: for since (as her majesty had told me) she was to be marry'd but to facilitate the king's amours, I thought it impossible for me to carry her away without his consent; which, had he granted, I knew I had not wherewithal to maintain a lady there, whose whole estate remain'd in *Poland*. I represented to her majesty, why I could not obey her commands, and she seem'd satisfy'd with the arguments I gave her; and made me an open confession, that being desirous to have the absolute management of her husband, it was her interest to get her match'd to one who would give her majesty a good account of her; and she agreed with me, that I was very unfit for such an employment. So we parted, without taking any other measures.

The *Lithuanian* lord dy'd in the mean while, and the king being obstinately bent to give her a husband, desir'd her to name whom she would; who, sway'd by her love pitch'd, upon me.

The king readily yielded to it, and sending for me, made me that proposal. I humbly told him, that I had no estate, and being a younger brother expected but little, so that I was in very ill circumstances to maintain a wife. His majesty answer'd, that she whom he design'd me was rich enough for us both; and that besides, he would make me so considerable in *Poland*, that I should not miss the little I had left in *France*. I would have accepted this offer with no little joy, had

it been made on any other account ; for I had at once an opportunity of raising my self, and marrying a woman whom I had a great kindness for ; but all my philosophy would not persuade me to take her on such reproachful terms. Not knowing what other reasons to give, I told the king, that his majesty's favour loaded me with honour ; but I was naturally very jealous, and should make a very severe husband. The king smil'd at this excuse. and told me, if that was all, he would take care to prevent it, and would give me such employments as would not permit me often to be with my wife, and too narrowly to pry into her behaviour.

This I took as a great affront, but concealing my thoughts, I told his majesty, that I could not renounce my native country ; and that I would never consent to marry, but on condition I might go thither immediately. No, said he, I will not yield to you in that point ; for your spouse shall never leave *Poland* while I live. If it be so, sir, reply'd I, I humbly thank your majesty ; and beg as a farther favour, that instead of marrying me, you would be pleas'd to grant me leave to return home. Upon this the king left me, telling me I might be gone, and that I was a mad-man.

Then I presently waited on the queen, to give her an account of what had pass'd ; who begg'd, with tears in her eyes, that I would comply with the king's desires ; and that to satisfy my nice jealousy, she would keep her so much in her presence, that the king should never find an opportunity of being private with her ; that she would be responsible to me for her conduct, and that I might rest my self satisfy'd.

Her majesty us'd so many convincing arguments, that at last I desir'd her to tell the king, I was ready to obey his commands. He was very glad to hear it ; and my mistress was transported at the thoughts of becoming my wife ; and that in so violent a manner, as persuaded me she never lov'd the king : which gave me hopes, that being the only possessor of her heart ; and seconded by the queen's vigilance, I might easily avoid the shame I dreaded. In a word, I was so taken up with the prospect of advancing my fortune, and satisfying my desires,

that

that I was deaf to all other considerations; insomuch that I wonder'd how I had ever scrupled the matter. So irresolute are our minds, and so easily do we prefer what may promote our interest and pleasure, to what secures our honour.

I marry'd that lady, and therefore chang'd my name; for being thereby grown the owner of a considerable county, I was for ever after call'd by that title.

The queen was as good as her word, and her jealousy and virtue, with the care I took, kept my wife under such a constraint, that it was impossible for the king to be alone with her. He was at last tir'd with fruitless endeavours, and began to court a lady who was more her own mistress. I was overjoy'd at his change, hoping I might now, without disturbance, possess my own right; but that, alas! was prevented by a hand I least expected it from. My wife was enrag'd that the king should quit her for another; and the great affection she had express'd for me, turn'd upon this to an implacable hatred. Being averse to all dissimulation, she openly told me, I was the occasion that she had lost her lover. It was to no purpose that I endeavour'd to make her sensible of her extravagancy; all the arguments I brought prov'd but greater provocations; and whether she had a mind to be rid of me, or that she thought moving the king's compassion was the best way to regain him, she complain'd to his majesty that I treated her very ill. This false accusation the king the sooner believ'd, because he remember'd I had told him, that I was inclin'd to be extream jealous. My good natur'd spouse's malice went farther, for she gave the king to understand that I was in love with the queen; and he susceptible of both these impressions, did, without farther examination, resolve I should be murder'd; which he saw might be the easier effected, because my preferment had excited the envy of most of the *Polish* nobility. The king wanted not persons who would readily have taken that opportunity to express their zeal to him, and their malice to me.

The queen's intelligence was quicker than mine, and seeing her honour was concern'd, she did not think fit to acquaint me with it, concluding I would have absconded my self; which might confirm the king in his jealousy.

Her

Her first care was to undeceive the king; to which end, she took no notice of the advice she had receiv'd, but counterfeiting some letters from *France*, wherein she was acquainted, that my brother was dead, she shew'd them to his majesty, telling him, that it would much prejudice me to be kept in *Poland*. The unconcernedness she spoke with on my account, and her proposal to have me sent back, made him think her falsely accus'd. He own'd to her the suspicions he had had of an intrigue between us; and begging her pardon, for entertaining an opinion so injurious to her virtue, he confess'd, those thoughts, join'd with my wife's complaints, made him resolve I should die; and that he knew not whether I was then alive, some persons being appointed to assassinate me that day. Her majesty having blam'd the precipitancy of so cruel a resolution, said, he should send for me immediately, there being no time to be lost.

A fruitless inquiry was made after me, for I had notice of my danger; and the person who had done me that courtesy, had also found me a place of refuge. She was one of the best reputed ladies at court, who had often profess'd her self my friend; but I did not imagine her kindness extended so far. She made use of that opportunity, to give me at once a declaration and convincing proof of her love; being a widow, and consequently mistress of her own actions. She did not stick to conceal me in her own house, which I thought was an obligation highly to be valu'd, since I saw my ruin was unavoidable if I appear'd abroad. During a week that I lay hid, she propos'd to me the several means which her passion inspir'd her with to provide for my safety. That which she insisted on, as the most infallible, was to poison my wife, the performance of which she offer'd to take upon her self. I entertain'd not her proposal with that horror which I should have done at another time; believing her love to me, had drown'd both religion and reason: I contented my self with representing to her the ill consequences it might produce. She would never let me write to the queen to inform her where I was; and that princess concluding that I was either fled or murder'd, it made her very uneasy: but

to prevent the ill constructions people might frame of my absence, she caus'd it to be reported, that upon the news of my brother's death I was return'd into *France*.

At last I heard of it, and believing that my brother was really dead I grew impatient to know the truth of it; and positively told the lady, that I would attend the queen to be better inform'd. She upbraided me with allowing my brother a share in that affection which she would have ingross'd wholly to her self. From these reproaches she came to affronts, and those led her to indifference. She threat'ned to betray me to my murderers; nay, and could not forbear telling me, that since I was so firmly resolv'd to leave her, she would take care to prevent it, and would rather poison me, than suffer me to leave her. What she had propos'd to me on my wife's account, made me the more fearful as to my self; and this apprehension kept me from eating. Never did any couple pass so suddenly from the warmest love to the most inveterate hatred, as we did; for we were already grown intolerable to each other: Wherefore I plainly told her I could not love her, and intreated her to let me retire.

Yes, you shall go, said she, but it shall be out of this world: on saying which, she flew at me with a dagger. I wrested it from her, and she received a wound in her breast; I know not by what accident, but I saw her sink down all over bloody. I well foresaw my danger, and that I could not escape should any of her servants know what had happen'd; which made me leave her, and the dagger by her. By good fortune I found all the doors open, and went out unseen. Having gone through a street or two, I came to the house of a *Polander* of my acquaintance, and begg'd his assistance, telling him some earnest business, occasion'd by my brother's death, oblig'd me to go to *France*, which I must do *Incognito*, because my wife was averse to my journey. This man offer'd to serve me to the utmost of his power, and the very next night procur'd me some horses which carry'd me to *Dantzick*; where I was no sooner arriv'd, but I wrote to the queen a relation of my adventure.

She

She receiv'd my letter, in a time when every one was crying out against me, for being so base as to murder a lady who had been so obliging to me. She had indeed been found all bloody by her servants, and tax'd me with the villany : And tho' her wound prov'd but very slight, she still persisted to say, I had a design to have kill'd her. No body question'd the truth of what she spoke, and great search was making for me, when the queen receiv'd my letter. She presently carry'd it to the king ; who pray'd her to command me, that if I were innocent, I should not delay coming to confront my accusers. It was not so much a principle of doing justice, mov'd this prince to have me recall'd, as the trouble which my wife created him, who was become a continual plague to him ; and he wish'd for my return to rid him of so violent a woman, whom he no longer lov'd. The queen wrote to me, that my brother's death was a fiction, and that I must return to *Warsaw*, to clear my self from the assassination which was laid to my charge. Her letter came safe to my hands ; and the joy I conceiv'd at the news of my brother's being alive so transported me, that I willingly obey'd her commands, tho' I was not unsensible of the hazards to which I expos'd my self.

As soon as I was arriv'd, I, by the queen's advice, surrender'd my self to prison. The lady that accus'd me was in a great surprize at my return ; but affecting a generosity, which she was wholly a stranger to, she was the most earnest in suing for my pardon. For my part, I had rather the truth might have appear'd : but seeing this was generally look'd upon but as a quarrel between two lovers, I did not insist on a fuller inquiry into the matter ; but accepted of my grace, and was set at liberty. The king also oblig'd me to return thanks to the lady my adversary.

This business wholly ruin'd her reputation ; for in *Poland* they do not easily pardon such pieces of gallantry as she seem'd to be concern'd in. There was no other way for her to clear her honour than by marrying me ; and that fully persuaded me that she poison'd my wife, who dy'd suddenly some time after.

My

My spouse was a little before deliver'd of two children, a boy and a girl, and I heard at once of her sickness and death; for her conduct had so highly disoblig'd me, that we seldom saw each other. However, I was sorry for her, not so much remembering the reasons I had to hate her, as those whereby she once had gain'd my love.

She was no sooner dead, but the king himself told me, that I was under an indispensable obligation to marry the lady who had preserv'd my life, at the loss of her own honour. I begg'd of his majesty not to precipitate this marriage, but to allow me a little time to mourn for the loss of my late wife, which deeply afflicted me. I hoped by this delay to find some means of breaking the intended match, without disobliging the king, tho' I was resolv'd to hazard all rather than comply.

The lady was neither handsome nor young; and, on the other hand, her familiar acquaintance with daggers and poisons, made me look upon her with great detestation: but I dissembled my thoughts, and carry'd my self to her as a woman I was shortly to espouse.

Imagining she had made sure of me, she took no care to please me, treating me rather with an affected scorn, and openly professing a kindness for others. I, who desir'd nothing more than to break with her, began to blame her conduct; she laugh'd at me, saying she would not constrain her self for my humour, since I must marry her whether I would or no. I thought, if I could surprize her in some gallantry, it would free me from this pretended obligation; which I easily did, for she carry'd on her intrigues so openly, that none need be ignorant of them; and one day I was inform'd she was in private with a *Palatine*.

Thereupon I made my complaint to the king, saying, withal, that after such perfidious behaviour as this, I thought myself sufficiently excus'd from concluding the marriage. His majesty reply'd, it must first be known whether or no that lord, with whom she had been surpriz'd would marry her, because if he refus'd it, she still fell to my lot, as having the first claim to her. This answer I took for a jest, and could not forbear smiling, till

the king very seriously told me it was the custom of the land.

I did not much trouble myself with consulting the *polish* lawyers about it, for from that very minute I resolv'd for *France*, and took all the necessary measures for a speedy departure; being weary of living in a strange country, wherein I had met with a chain of misfortunes, and stood in daily expectation of worse.

I acquainted the queen with my intentions, beseeching her to take my children under her care and protection; and having privately sold all the estate I had there which I might dispose of, I stole away with only one servant, taking with me of the great fortune I had made, only twenty thousand crowns, for which I took some bills of exchange, and went, leaving my children rich enough with their mother's estate. It was then the latter end of the year 1647. I had lived two years in *Poland*, and was about twenty three years of age, but appear'd as thirty, being naturally tall, and grown something corpulent, which made me seem older than I really was.

Once more I thought it impossible for any woman to deceive me. My journey afforded me leisure enough to reflect on the disasters they had drawn upon me: I consider'd it was on their account that I had left *France*, in a season when I might have made my fortune there; and that they also had occasion'd my coming from *Poland*, when I seem'd to be well settled in that country. On these reflections I resolv'd to make the best use of my experience, and think only of the army. I had wrote to my brother, to let him know of my return from *Poland*, who was not well satisfy'd with my having marry'd in that kingdom, and was glad I had a pretence to forsake it. The letters I receiv'd from him oblig'd me to take *Venice* in my way, where he inform'd me I should find a particular friend of his, who having fought a duel, had been forc'd to fly for it, and retire into that city.

I arriv'd at *Venice* in *December*, and they were then preparing for the ensuing carnival. I met with my brother's friend, who prevail'd with me to tarry there some time; during which, I forgot all my fine resolutions against the female sex. And yet I here met with fresh reasons for remembering the wrongs they had done me;
for

for I was no sooner at *Venice*, but I heard it was generally reported, that I had been oblig'd to fly out of *Poland* for having poison'd my wife, and stabb'd my mistress. I too well knew the occasion of that report, and took no little pains to undeceive those who seem'd to credit it; but I found it difficult, and have several years since met with some persons, who were prepossess'd with that opinion, which has done me no small injury; so little difference doth slander make between truth and falsehood.

How earnest soever my friends instances might be, to persuade my tasting the diversions of the carnival, I should scarce have comply'd with them, had it not been my misfortune again to be extremely in love. 'Tis true, I had felt but weak impressions of that passion while in *Poland*; which made me perhaps the easier engage in a new amour with a person, who, I thought, had a respect for me.

She was daughter to a *Venetian* nobleman, at whose house I, on my first arrival, grew very well acquainted, through the means of my brother's friend, who having known this nobleman's eldest son at *Paris*, had there renew'd his acquaintance, and encreas'd it to a great intimacy. I often saw the father and son, but it was long before I had a view of the daughter, only by her picture. This piece seem'd to me so charming, that I could not forbear crying out in an extasie, I never had seen such a beauty before. The lady was then in an adjoining room, where, unknow to me, she saw and heard me. I was no sooner in the street but a man follow'd me, who, without saying one word, put an unseal'd note in my hand, which was wrote in *Italian* to this purpose.

THE person whose picture you admir'd, has a higher esteem for you than you have for her picture; if that has afforded you some pleasure, it is in your power to see the original. Be discreet; that is all which is requir'd of you; leave the rest to me.

I read the note twenty times over; and tho' I could scarce imagine that it really came from the person whose picture I had seen, yet I thought it being dubious I ought not to speak of it, and that the safest way whither

It was design'd to impose on me, or whither it was real, was for me to use the discretion which it enjoyn'd.

It may easily be guess'd how impatient I was to return to the *venetian* nobleman's palace: The very next day I made him a visit, and took my opportunity to express the desire I had to see the person whom that picture represented, but no body offer'd to give me that satisfaction: A mask was propos'd for the next day, and the habits agreed on by every one.

I was scarce got home, but the same man came into my chamber, who had given me the note I just mention'd, and observing a deep silence, presented me with a box, and immediately withdrew. I press'd him to stay, and he answer'd me but in dumb shew, and went off. Then, opening the box, I found it full of rich jewels, and, under them this note, which was written in the same hand as the former.

YOUR Reputation being of a near concern to me, I was willing to contribute to your magnificence. Make use of these jewels in the intended mask, and when you have done with them, you may return them to the bearer, whom I shall send for them.

Then I thought I had no reason to doubt of the reality of this adventure, which gave me at once a great pleasure and no little disquiet.

I put on the jewels she sent me, which were so rich and numerous, none made a better figure than my self. Several ask'd me, where I had got them: and having answer'd, that I hir'd them; the lady's brother whisper'd in my ear, he knew the person had lent them, and what the hire of them came to. This made me think he was his sister's confidant; I blush'd and made no reply.

As I was returning home from the mask, I was attack'd by six arm'd men, who having dispers'd my companions, set upon me, and in spite of all the resistance I could make, disarm'd and robb'd me.

This

This accident gave me no little trouble; but my comfort was, that I had yet a bill of exchange for twelve thousand crowns, which I thought would pay for the jewels.

When the man, who had brought them me, came for them again, I inform'd him of my misfortune, and offer'd the bill of exchange; but he refus'd it by signs which made me believe he was dumb.

The next day he came to me very early, with this following note.

BE not concern'd at the loss of the jewels. When I lent them, I willingly expos'd myself to all the inconveniences that might follow; the blame lies wholly on me, therefore it is my part to pay for them. I wish I might, by more considerable losses convince you, your heart is the only riches I covet. Do not dispose of it till you may judge whether I deserve it or no.

Whether she deserves it! cry'd I, can there be a woman more deserving? Thus charm'd with her generosity, I abandon'd my self to the transports of a most violent and tender passion. I earnestly intreated the dumb messenger to carry her the bill of exchange, or at least an answer to her obliging billet; but he would do neither, and left me with his usual silence.

The lady who sent me the jewels had hir'd them of a jeweller who was an acquaintance of her brother's; and she had made use of him to get them. It was her brother himself who inform'd me thereof, adding that his sister had imparted to him the passion she had for me, and that she had made no scruple of discovering it to him, because he had made use of her assistance in courting one of her friends. It was a day or two after I had been robb'd of the jewels that he told me this, assuring me it was in my power to meet with in his sister all the pleasures which that sister procur'd for him with his mistress.

The reader will, no doubt, be surpriz'd to hear, that all this was only an artifice to cheat me of my money; it was this brother of her's who had caus'd me to be
robb'd

robb'd, and had the jewels in his possession. He made me believe, that his sisters generosity had brought her into a great trouble, for she was at a loss how to pay for them; and that if she still refus'd to accept my bill of exchange, the whole business might break out, and come to her father's knowledge; to prevent which, he offer'd to carry me to the merchant, of whom I might hear their value, and pay him for them; that he was a person who might be trusted with a secret, and that he did not know I had receiv'd them by means of his sister. I was overjoy'd at this opportunity, and paid the jeweller eight thousand crowns, with more pleasure than I ever discharg'd any other debt. This man who was confederate with my pretended friend, receiv'd some small part of the purchase, and the brother and sister shar'd the rest between them.

I suspected not the cheat, but still flatter'd with the vain thought of being belov'd by a person whom I was so charm'd with, I consider'd not the loss of my money, which was at its last ebb; and my only desire was that of seeing the beautiful unknown.

I often solicited the brother, that he would procure me the so much long'd for interview, which he as often promis'd me, but still found an excuse for his delay. I sometimes receiv'd a letter from the sister, which was no more deliver'd by the dumb man, but by himself, and he also undertook to be the bearer of my answers. Our billets were all very passionate, and the continual theme was, deploring our hard fate which kept us thus asunder.

This continu'd till about the middle of *February*, when I receiv'd letters from my brother, who much blam'd me for staying so long at *Venice*, saying, I endanger'd my losing the employment he had procur'd me in the prince's army, which was to take the field, and besiege *Ipres* in *March*.

I little regarded my brother's kind admonitions, nor the injury I did my self in tarrying there any longer; but full of longings to see my mistress, I sent him word I was sick, and that as soon as my health should permit, I would ride post for *France*. He being better inform'd of my condition than I imagin'd, his friend at *Venice* having given him intelligence, renew'd his instances for my return;

turn ; but I was so mad, that I would sooner have parted with my life than left *Venice*, till I had at least seen the lady.

His letters had this only effect, that I was more urgent with her brother, not to keep me in pain any longer : and at last, seeing I threatned to be gone, if he did not give me that satisfaction ; he promis'd to comply with my request. I was order'd to put on a *Spanish* habit, and to take with me as many jewels, and appear as rich as I could, his sister having pretended to the person, at whose house we were to meet, that her lover was a rich *Spanish* lord. I made no reflections upon the matter, but yielded a blind obedience to his directions ; and being compleatly accoutred as a *Casillian*, not forgetting the jewels, I was introduc'd into the lodging of a most notorious courtesan. Indeed, I was somewhat scandaliz'd at my being carry'd to such a place, for I both knew the house, and her who kept it, yet my impatience to see my mistress soon stifled that scruple.

At my first entrance I was lock'd up in a room, into which, after some minutes waiting, the object of my wishes was admitted. She did not seem to me so handsome as her flattering picture represented her ; tho' it was so like, that I had not the least reason to think myself impos'd on. This difference something cool'd my passion : the lady, who observ'd it, us'd such means to revive it, as made me imagine this was not the first rendezvous she had had. This gave me a disturbance which I could not conceal ; and being unwilling to discover the true occasion, I pretended it was at her coming into such a house. She told me, she should not have expected such a reprimand from me : however, she seem'd not to take it ill at first ; but seeing I continued preaching to her, she left me abruptly, saying, I should never see her again.

Then I fully experienc'd the weakness of my heart : for though I had all the reason in the world to be convinc'd of her dishonesty ; yet she was no sooner retir'd, but I long'd more than ever to see her again. All my scruples vanish'd, and I heartily repented the ill use I had made of that opportunity. Her brother thereupon coming in with an angry look, drew his sword, telling

me, I was a base man; that my sister had complain'd to him of my rude treatment, and that he would have satisfaction. Said I, can I affront your sister! for heaven's sake, dear friend, procure me one meeting more, and you shall see what esteem I have for her. He seem'd more calm at these words, and withdrew, promising he would endeavour to persuade her to return: I waited two hours, but instead of them, in came the courtesan, who ask'd me in *Italian*, how now, signior *Don John*, what ails you to-day, that your mistress is not so well satisfy'd with you as she used to be? With this she look'd earnestly at me, and seem'd very much surpriz'd. I inquir'd into the reason of it, and why she call'd me *Don John*? She would not make me any answer, appearing all the while as under a surprize. She only told me, that if I would come to see her another time, I should know the cause. This was all I could get from her.

My first care, when I came home, was, to lay up my money and jewels, but I found neither. The only person I could tax with stealing them, was the lady I had been with, for no body else had come near enough to me to pick my pocket; and this gave me very ill thoughts of her. I remember'd then there was one *Don John*, a *Spaniard*, who liv'd in *Venice*, and concluded the courtesan had mistaken me for him, and that my mistress us'd to entertain him in that place. The very next morning I went to the courtesan's to be resolv'd; who inform'd me of every thing. I understood, this lady, for whose sake I had so highly disoblig'd my brother, was us'd to this trade, and had for six months time kept a correspondence with this *Spaniard* in her house.

While I was meditating on my revenge, I receiv'd a letter from my brother, wherein he acquainted me, that he had notice what life I led at *Venice*, and how I had been made a cully both by the brother and sister: he advis'd me to pass it over, and leave that city as soon as I could.

Imagining his friend was the only person that could have sent this intelligence, I went to him, telling him, it had been much kinder to have given me warning of my dangerous acquaintance, than to have inform'd my brother.

ther. He was loath to own it ; but at last, imbracing me, what could I have done, dear friend ? said he, you was so bewitch'd, that if I had attempted to undeceive you, I should not have been credited. It was with much difficulty that I forgave him ; but, seeing there was no remedy, I told him, that I was resolv'd to have my money again, or to cut the villain's throat who had thus bubbld me.

Tho' this gentleman was exil'd from his native country for a duel, yet that misfortune did not deter him from venturing on another ; he freely offer'd to be my second : we agreed, that I should send the *Venetian* a challenge ; I did, but he slighted it. Mad at such cowardice, I resolv'd to provoke him to fight, whether he would or no ; and having pitch'd on a day to attack him, I put on my former *Spanish* disguise, and caus'd my second, and all our attendance, to be equipp'd in the same fashion.

Thus we waited for him in a certain street through which he was to pass : when he came, I bid him draw ; but he refusing it, I gave him two or three blows over the face with the flat side of my sword, which oblig'd him to defend himself : he did it so faintly, that he receiv'd a home thrust, and dropp'd down. We had the good luck, tho' this was done in the middle of the day, to escape to a gondalo, which lay ready for us, and carry'd us to a vessel we had prepar'd.

To compleat my revenge, I left a letter for madam's father, pretending my self a friend of *Don John's* ; and that on my arrival at *Venice*, I had discover'd an intrigue between that young lord and his daughter, which was chiefly promoted by her brother ; and gave him a full narrative of the proceeding : concluding, that *Don John* having been affronted by his son, I was resolv'd to maintain my friend's quarrel ; and that he need look no farther for the person with whom his son had been engag'd.

The father having receiv'd this advice, informations were preferr'd against *Don John* : all those who had been witnesses of the rencounter, agreed the assaulter was a *Spaniard*, who had immediately made his escape, with several persons of the same nation ; which confirm'd the contents of my letter.

We heard at *Padua* the good success of our enterprize; for the lady's brother dy'd without being able to speak: *Don John*, afraid of the informations exhibited against him, was fled for it; and every one was fully perswaded that he had kill'd him.

The pleasure this news afforded me, was some consolation for the loss of my money, and the tricks which they had put upon me; I now fully resolv'd for ever to avoid engaging in any intrigue.

My brother's friend, who had accompany'd me to *Padua*, not daring to return into *France*, ask'd my advice about a journey he design'd for *Poland*; which I encourag'd the more, that I might have a friend there, who would inform me of my children's condition, and the posture of affairs in that kingdom. I knew that king *Ladisslaus* was desperately ill: it was the current report that he was dead, and that the queen would espouse prince *Casimir*, brother to the deceased king; and I doubted not but her majesty would shew my friend all possible favour.

It being then the latter end of *May*, and the campaign something advanc'd in *Flanders*, I thought I should get no credit by going there so late, and therefore resolv'd to get into *Naples*, in hopes to find opportunities of signalizing my self, under the command of the duke de *Guise*, who had render'd himself master of that city; which made no little noise in *Italy*. I wrote to my brother, to acquaint him with my intentions; and keeping my *Spanish* habit, I set forwards for *Naples*, thinking that disguise might facilitate my entrance; but I arriv'd there a month after the duke's imprisonment, so ill had I been inform'd of those transactions.

I heard he was confin'd at *Gayetta*, in order to be transported to *Spain*; and thought it my duty to offer him my service, in consideration of the interest all our family had with him, especially my brother.

It was certainly my ill genius led me thither; for this occasion'd my engaging in a fresh amour, which prov'd as troublesome and vexatious to me as my last at *Venice*.

The duke took my visit very kindly ; and when I told him the occasion of my journey to *Naples*, he said, I might do him a more signal service there, and with less danger to my self ; whereupon he shew'd me a letter from a *Neapolitan* lady, who had been his mistress while he remain'd in the city : she express'd a great despair for the duke's imprisonment, and threaten'd to stab her self, if he would not yield to her following him to *Spain*. She is stark mad, said he, and will do some extravagant action or other, if some body doth not bring her to her self. Oblige me so far as to return to *Naples*, and carry a letter from me, I cannot make choice of a fitter person than you to comfort her. I promis'd an exact performance of his commands ; and having attended him till his removal thence, I immediately set forward to execute his orders.

I could not, during the journey, but reflect on my fantastical destiny ; for while I endeavour'd to forget the female sex, and think of nothing but war, it engag'd me into a necessary occasion of conversing with them, and made me the confident of an amour. However, I very willingly obey'd the duke *de Guise*, being mov'd by a secret desire of making my self belov'd by a lady, who appear'd to be mistress of a great deal of wit, and a most generous passion, as I judg'd from her letters, which the duke shew'd me. Here my propensity to love again confounded my reason, which would have led me to *France*, much rather than *Naples* ; whereby I was convinc'd, that let a heart be never so covetous of glory, it soon degenerates from that heroick temper, when once it yields it self up to love.

I still wore my *Spanish* habit, that I might the better conceal my country ; and being arriv'd at *Pozzolo Castello*, while it was day, I staid there that I might not enter *Naples* till night. To divert my self in the mean while, I walk'd abroad in a very agreeable and solitary place, where I thought I should not be observ'd : but I had not gone far e're I spy'd a gentleman with a lady, and another at a little distance from them, which seem'd to have withdrawn only to leave them more at liberty.

This

This looking like an assignation, I crept as near as I could; and having hid my self behind some trees, overheard part of their conversation. All I could make of it was, that the cavalier complain'd of her former affection to another; and that she assur'd him, he was the only man she had ever lov'd. Having remain'd there about half an hour, I thought of retiring; which I maliciously did, with noise enough to make them take notice of me. The lady, who was speaking to her gallant, no sooner perceiv'd me, but she chang'd colour, crying out, ah! what do I see? 'tis himself. She seem'd to me very handsome, and imagining she might take me for her husband, or some other troublesome person, whom she had no mind to entrust with her amour: I made her a very low bow, and walk'd slowly off. Looking back sometimes, I saw the other lady follow'd me, upon which I stopp'd, that she might overtake me. She did; and having view'd me attentively, told me in *Spanish*, I look'd so like the duke *de Guise*, that I had been taken for him. I smiling at the fancy, (for besides the shape, colour of hair and skin, I had not one feature resembling his) reply'd, they were mistaken, and ask'd what relation the duke had to them. She said, that every *Neapolitan* ought to fear, lest the duke should still be plotting to render himself master of that city; which was happily reduc'd under the obedience of its lawful sovereign. I easily guess'd she spoke after that manner, taking me for a *Spaniard*; for I knew the duke *de Guise* was very well belov'd in *Naples*. However, I did not discover my self, tho' I had an itching desire to know the company, being already charm'd with the other lady: but not thinking it proper to ask any more questions, I came back to *Pozzolo Castello*, and went to *Naples*, when it began to be dark.

I apply'd my self, next morning, to a person the duke had directed me to, in order to my waiting on the lady, for whom I had this letter; but I was inform'd she was in the country: and having ask'd, whether that country was so far off that I could not go to see her? it was answer'd me, that I had best be cautious, since her intimacy with the duke *de Guise* had render'd her suspicious, especially to the *Spaniards*; who mistrusted the correspondence

pondency they held together was more for affairs of state than gallantry.

I remain'd then a whole week at *Naples*, which grew very tiresome to me; for I scarce dult appear, because the *Spaniards* were very strict in seizing any of the *French* nation. That time being expir'd, I understood the lady was return'd, and was by the duke's correspondent, introduc'd into her presence. I presently knew her to be the same I had seen at *Pozzolo Castello*, and she also knew me again: so I deliver'd my message; but spoke not a word of her stabbing herself, or going into *Spain*, since by what I had seen, I judg'd she was pretty well recover'd of those melancholy fits. But I found she had need of more than one comforter; for before we parted she told me very intelligibly, I had so much of the duke *de Guise's* air, that she felt the same inclination for me as she formerly had for him.

It will, no doubt, appear a wonder, that I should be so weak as to trust to these advances, which I must needs imagine were not sincere; or that I would betray the confidence the duke had repos'd in me; but our reason is easily stifled by the vanity of being belov'd by a fine woman. Not the thoughts of the treason I was going to commit against my friend, nor of that she had already been guilty of to him, by favouring the gentleman I had surpriz'd her with, could deter me from the passion I felt. I protested my affection for her, was greater than the kindness she had express'd for me; and made her sensible, I was concern'd at her being engag'd with more than the duke and my self. She answer'd, the man I had seen at *Pozzolo Castello*, was the object of her hatred; and that I should not have any occasion to be jealous on his score. I believ'd her, or at least I pretended so; and made it my business to free my self from any thing that might have hinder'd my relishing the pleasure of a new amour.

I wrote to the duke, that his mistress was false, and the love she began to inspire me with, prevented not my setting her forth to him in the colours her perfidiousness deserv'd: happy, if I had had for her all the contempt that I would the duke should have had; and known her for such a one as describ'd in my letter; for I had drawn a picture which I well knew perfectly resembled her, yet
notwithstanding,

notwithstanding, I lov'd her, and had resolv'd to love her, and lovers sometimes are so blind as not to perceive in their mistresses those faults, which themselves can make known to others.

My present rival soon perceiv'd our new commerce, and I found, that instead of breaking with him she entertain'd us both.

This woman had acquainted him, that I was no *Spaniard*, but a *Frenchman*, whom the duke *de Guise* had sent to her: which secret was no sooner reveal'd to him, but he thought of a quick remedy for his jealousy; for he discover'd me to the magistrates, and I was immediately imprison'd. I wrote to this lady, thinking she would use her interest in procuring my liberty; but I understood, that far from that, she boasted herself to be the author of my confinement, giving as a reason, that I was come from the duke to make a proposal of going into *France*. From this she expected to persuade her other lover, that she had not been intimate with me; and that she had forgot the duke.

When I understood this treachery, I awak'd as out of a lethargy, and acknowledg'd, that I had but my desert. Good gods! what imprecations I made against women! what desires I had to be reveng'd! but I was oblig'd to quell my fury, and apply my thoughts only to the regaining of my freedom. I durst not venture to own my self, for fear of a closer imprisonment; but pretended I was a servant of the duke *de Guise*, whom he had sent with some letters to his mistress. I was believ'd, and about a week after releas'd, with some poor *Frenchmen*, who had been my companions in this habitation, and were not thought strong enough for the galleys; where I should have been sent, had not I fallen sick in the prison.

As soon as I was at liberty, I went to the lady who had so basely abandon'd me. I had but an old ragged coat on, and not a farthing of money, all being rifled from me when I was seiz'd on. She could not forbear laughing, to see me in that pickle; and when I would have tax'd her with her perfidiousness, she interrupted me, saying, what would'st thou have, poor fellow? all I can do, is to bestow some alms on you, to help you in your journey. Here, continu'd she, addressing her self to one
of

of her women, give him three pistoles and send him away.

O heavens ! how is it possible for a man to bear up under such afflictions ? however, I took patience, in good hopes one day or other to revenge my self : and refusing her money, went to the duke *de Guise's* correspondent, expecting he would procure me enough to bear my charges to *France* ; but he deny'd himself to me ; and my servant that came thither with me, who was a *Polander*, being run away, as soon as he saw me arrested, with all the officers of justice had not robb'd me of, I was left entirely to providence.

I judg'd it was my best way, if possible, to get to *Rome*, hoping to find there some *Polish* or *French* acquaintance I made a shift to reach *Terracina*, where I fortunately met with the dutchess of _____ bound for *Rome*, whom I inform'd of my circumstances, telling her, I had fallen among the bandittis ; and she did me the favour to take me with her. I was not long at *Rome*, e'er I met with a friend, who furnish'd me with money ; and presently after I took post for *France*. The speed I made was such, that I arriv'd in *Flanders* the 18th of *August*, two days before the battle of *Lens*,

I apprehended the best way for me to get into favour again with my brother, and to regain my lost credit, was to begin with some generous action, which might efface all the ill reports spread of me, during my absence. That was the motive which induc'd me to go directly for *Flanders*, where, upon my arrival, I heard they were preparing for an engagement. I was unwilling to appear before my brother, who was there, and had the reputation of being one of the best commanders in the army ; and only discover'd my self to another general officer, who was my relation, with whom I remain'd conceal'd till the day of battle, in which I desir'd him to put me into a post of honour.

My caution, in writing these memoirs, of keeping my self undiscover'd, shall excuse me, if I do not give the reader a particular relation of an action I perform'd, which rais'd my fame even above my wishes. That engagement has been so often describ'd, that did I here make a narrative of the share I had in it, I should betray

tray my self to every ones knowledge; and I think it enough for my purpose, to let the reader understand, that the prince *de Anguien* gave out, he stood indebted to me for the victory, having had the good fortune to hinder a considerable body from being routed, whose flight would have occasion'd that of the whole army. This exploit procur'd me a regiment, having obtain'd a colonel's commission, by the prince's recommendation. I found my brother as kind as ever; and was inform'd by him, that the count, my other brother, was fled to *Poland*, on account of a duel; that my sister was separated from her husband, and liv'd with my mother.

The reputation I had gain'd in the fight at *Lens*, had so animated me, that I desired I might stay with the mareschal de *Rantzau*, in whose army I serv'd, in the siege of *Furnes*; and, the campaign ended, I return'd to *Paris*, about the latter end of *October*: and there found all things in a great disorder, occasion'd by the hatred which the citizens bore to the cardinal *Mazarine*.

The more I reflected on what had happen'd to me the two last years, the more I fancy'd my life to be romantick both in love and war: so many odd adventures had given me so much confidence in my destiny, that I neglected the pursuit of further preferment, and the arming my self against love-intrigues. I visited the ladies with the less fear, because I thought my heart secur'd from their allurements, and I was resolv'd to pretend a passion to all, but fix on none. The ridiculous manner wherein my mother expos'd her self, which I am going to relate, might have confirm'd me in those intentions, it being proof that old age cannot prevent a woman's appearing ridiculous, who is fond of having lovers.

My mother, who liv'd without considering either children or estate, had been courted a long time by a widower, much about her age, who was so assiduous in his visits, that there was no other argument against the aspersions which might be thrown upon her for it, but that they were as good as marry'd. All the family was perswaded that he was her husband: we express'd our discontent by a very cold behaviour to her, tho' without coming to an open breach.

This

This gentleman had a son newly come from school, whom my mother receiv'd into her house, she having given out, that he was to continue there but till such time as they might send him to the academy. My eldest brother did not seem to take notice of it, nor so much as complain of the extravagant expences she had put her self to on his account; but the servant's soon acquainted us, that her kindness for him went farther yet, and that something had pass'd between them which they knew not how to interpret to her advantage. His father was inform'd of it also, and his displeasure was so great, that forcing his son from her, he sent him to *St. Lazarus*. But how great was his surprize and ours, when my mother shew'd him a contract, and the certificate of a marriage with this boy, made above a month before, so, what the father had courted during fifteen or sixteen years, with the most engaging complacencies and endearing tokens of love, his son, tho' yet a school-boy, obtain'd in less than three months time. This business, which became at once the publick discourse and jest of the town, gave us no little mortification. His father would have had us gone to law in order to annul the marriage, and produc'd a former engagement from her to himself; but we being indifferent as to the person, since she was resolv'd to have a husband, thought it not worth our while to meddle with it, and left him to manage the affair alone; which prov'd his ruin: for after losing several law suits, and his reputation into the bargain, his trouble was so great that he sicken'd upon it, and dy'd; having first disinherited his son, whose marriage was judg'd good: but people never would be so complaisant to my mother as to call her by his name.

I thought I had been wholly withdrawn from women by the ill opinion so many trials of them had given me, but even those induc'd me to seek for new amours. I had an earnest desire to try if at last I could discover a discreet virtuous woman; and it may well be imagin'd that it was impossible for my heart to remain free, when I thought I had found what I was in search of.

I often visited my poor carmelite: I cannot say I saw her, for she was very exact in observing the rules of her order; one of which is, not to unveil themselves; but I spoke

spoke with her, and her friendship made her concern'd in all my adventures, especially in my last; I mean, what happen'd to me in the battle at *Lens*. I was beholding to her counsels for my avoiding many snares which the coquets at court laid to entrap me: for women are not taken with any thing so much as with the reputation of a war-like and gallant man, and I had the name of being both. But I contented my self with bare conversation, without any particular engagement. I diverted my self frequently at the expence of those friends who I found were smitten; sometimes sharing in their pleasures and debauches, turning all to my own diversion.

Thus I liv'd, when my dear carmelite told me, that since I had wholly forsaken *Poland*, I must think of getting a wife in *France*: and that she would help me to one, whom she nam'd; adding, the lady was an intimate friend of her's, and, to her knowledge, had a good opinion of me. She was a widow, but very rich, and one of the best-fortunes at that time. I had seen her, and lik'd her well; but the flattering thoughts, that she was charm'd with me, gave her accomplishments such a lustre, that I fell desperately in love from that very minute. I ask'd my nun, whether she could swear that so well-deserving a lady were not given to coquetry? oh! reply'd she, she is a model of modesty and virtue; and the only fault that can be found with her is, that she is too strict and precise. I desir'd her to bring us acquainted and manage this affair for me, which was much preferable to any match I could expect: and accordingly we appointed a day when we should meet in the parlour, as by by chance. I was punctual, so was she; and after a conversation on indifferent matters, I waited on the lady home. We were no sooner arriv'd there, but she said, in a very free and open manner, sir, I will not detain you with expectation, my design being once more to marry, I look for a man that may make me happy; and the good character I have heard of you, gives me hopes you will procure me that felicity. I answer'd her, with the most convincing expressions of love and gratitude I could invent; then she gave me a list of my rivals, who were all men of distinguish'd quality and merit; and concluded with an assurance, that none of them pleas'd her so well as I.

This

This charm'd me more than I ever had been in my whole life; and finding at length a lady of virtue so strangely prepossess'd in my favour, as to be willing to make my fortune, I gave my self up entirely to the passion I began to have for her, and was not one day without visiting her. Some disputes, which arose about her estate, were the usual themes of her discourse; and I saw she design'd me the office of solicitor, before that of a husband. Tho' I had an aversion to business, yet for her sake, I gladly undertook to manage those concerns, and the earnestness wherewith I apply'd my self to it, soon made me a good lawyer. Her entrusting me in all her affairs, and our being constantly together occasion'd a report, that we were already marry'd; this I acquainted her with, hoping it might oblige her to hasten the consummation of my happiness; but she, on the contrary, reply'd, that since my frequent visits were so much taken notice of, I must not see her so often: that her circumstances would not permit her to marry so soon; but by waiting her leisure, I should give her an undeniable proof of my affection. I was mad at this delay; yet to shew how much I lov'd her, I told her, that though it was a great piece of self-denial, I would submit to her directions. She seem'd overjoy'd to find me so tractable, and having settled our meetings at thrice a week, I never miss'd one, and in the intervals ply'd her with *bellets deux*. Her answers were very obliging, giving fresh proofs of her affection, and renew'd assurances she would marry none but me. In the mean while the campaign drew near, and consequently the time approach'd when I must leave my mistress. She vow'd to me, that she would espouse me at my return; and indeed I had not, during my absence, any reason to doubt of her sincerity her letters, which I never fail'd of every post, being an evident argument of it.

We did little execution that summer; the enemy retook *Ipres*, and we ballanc'd our fortune by taking *Conde*. Winter approaching, I return'd to *Paris*, where I found my mistress in the same sentiments I had left her.

My duty often call'd me to *St. Germain*, where the court then was. One day being oblig'd to attend his majesty, I went, as usual, to take leave of that lady.

Having

Having paid my devoirs to her, I was going, when calling me back from the stairhead, hark ye, said she, what do you with all the letters you receive from me? would you oblige me so far as to return them me? for I fear lest you should loose some of them. I assur'd her, that I kept them with all imaginable care, as a treasure I valu'd more than all the world besides. However, continu'd she, let me have them again, I shall be much easier; pray send them me before you go for *St. Germain's*. I was very unwilling to comply; but she pressing me, and I fearing to disoblige her, obey'd. Two days after my arrival at *St. Germain's*, it was said in the queen's presence, that a prince of the blood was going to marry, and that the match was wholly concluded. My curiosity led me to enquire who the lady was, and heard, with no little surprize, that it was my intended spouse. My astonishment was yet greater, when they would have perswaded me, that I had been the promoter of it: I confess there was some seeming ground, the prince being my intimate friend; and every one imagining the lady never did any thing without consulting me.

I could not be perswaded at first of the reality of the report; but calling to mind the assiduity wherewith the prince had lately visited her, and how earnestly she had demanded a return of her letters, I began to believe it too true. What the more mortify'd me was, that every body complimented me, as if I had made the match.

That prince was then at *St. Germain's*, and I thought the only way to know the truth, was to wait on him, without taking any notice of what I had heard. I did so, and he no sooner saw me, but he came and embrac'd me, saying aloud, this is the dear friend to whom I owe my happiness, since my mistress yields only upon his recommendations. I was surpriz'd at hearing these words, but rage and despair immediately determining me; I whisper'd him, that his marriage was not yet perfected, and that there was a person waited for him in a garden without the palace, who had something of moment to impart; thither I intreated him to walk with me. He wonder'd at the manner of my delivery, for the fury I was in had much alter'd my countenance: however, he immediately went with me, often asking, what was the matter, and what had happen'd?

I reply'd not a word till we were at the place ; then I ask'd him very seriously, if he was really to marry the lady he spoke of ? Why do you ask such a question, said he, since you know it as well as my self. I assur'd him he was mightily mistaken, for she was engag'd to me. The prince look'd on me with a smile, and seeing I still maintain'd my gravity ; are you mad, my poor count ? said he, how long have you lost your wits ? did not you propose the match ? I am sure the lady told me so ; I am your real friend, and the devil take me if I ever thought of her while I imagin'd you pretended to her. But, prithee, what ties are between you ? I answer'd, they are such, that it is but three days since she swore solemnly she would marry none but me ; and I have brought you hither to dispute my right. Not so, continu'd he, I'll yield her, if what you say be true. Then let us make no noise, said I ; we shall both of us soon return to *Paris*, and shall then know what we are to expect.

I had not patience till my time of waiting was over, but ask'd leave to return to *Paris*, which was granted me. At my arrival I presently ran to the *Carmelite's*, to acquaint my nun with what had happen'd at *St. Germain's* ; but she had notice of it already, the lady having wrote to her the day before, telling her, that my frequent visits had made the world believe, there was a criminal correspondence between us ; and being unwilling to have it thought her marriage was the consequence of such a commerce, she had therefore entertain'd the prince's proposals. Her letter was much to this purpose ; but her arguments were not satisfactory : we concluded, that inconstancy and interest were the only motives of her change.

My *Carmelite* advis'd me, finding her of so fickle a temper, not to pursue my claim, assuring me, such qualifications would be worse in a wife than a mistress ; but I resolv'd it should not end thus.

From the nunnery I went to the lady's, and taking no notice of what had pass'd, I ask'd her, after some little discourse, when she would compleat our marriage ? she ask'd me if I had heard any thing at *St. Germain's* ? and having answer'd, no ; then, continu'd she, your friend
the

the *Carmelite* will acquaint you, with what I dare not tell you my self. Seeing then that there was no more dissembling, I confess'd to her, that I had understood she was to be marry'd to the prince *de* ————. Well, said she, and why did you deny it? I hate a liar, and for that very reason would discard you. This reply appear'd to me the most abusive she could make, and I was the more provok'd therent, by her appearing not to be in the least concern'd, which I thought one could not avoid being upon such an occasion. I flew into a passion, cry'd, I sigh'd, I threw my self at her feet, I threatned, without being able to get any other answer. So I left her, protesting I would use my utmost industry, to confirm the ill reports which had been spread of her on my account.

It was, indeed, my first resolution, by that means to ruin her in the prince's esteem; but since considering it would have been a base slander, our conversation having been very innocent; I only gave him a relation of all the promises she had made. Whether the prince dislik'd her for her inconstancy, or suspected her virtue, he assur'd me, that he would never think of her any more; and in performance of his word, did presently disingage himself.

The lady finding I forbore my visits also three days after sent for me, and having upbraided me with what she suppos'd I had given out against her honour, to occasion the breaking off of the prince's match: she, in the conclusion, told me, she was now reduc'd to a necessity of marrying me, which she would perform as soon as I pleas'd.

I never had so little inclination to it, as when I saw the thing so near being finish'd, for her coquetry had something abated my esteem; however, the real opinion I had of her chastity, made me consent; for at least I concluded, I should be sure of a good fortune, and a virtuous wife.

Yet I was not so well resolv'd, but my heart fail'd me, and that made me yield to a delay for a fortnight or three weeks, upon the lady's request; she having pretended some indisposition. Tho' I saw no symptoms of any, I told her she might take her own time; and look'd upon

upon my wedding as a thing so certain, that I really made preparation for it.

Going to see her one night, I was told she was in bed ; on which I offer'd to retire, when her woman proffer'd to conceal me in a closet, next to her lady's chamber, which a pair of back-stairs would lead me to, where I should discover strange things, yet necessary for me to know. I enquir'd what she meant ; she answer'd me, her lady was with child, and expected that night to be deliver'd. I was astonish'd ; and she said if I would go with her, she would convince me of the truth.

This was of too great a concern to be neglected : I went with her, and in about two hours I heard the lady's groans. All the servants were sent out of the way, only the midwife and that woman remain'd at home. Heavens ! how great was my surprize ! beyond what can be describ'd. I slipt into her bed-chamber privately, hiding my self behind the hangings, where I beheld all that pass'd. My rage was like to have made me commit some extravagance ; but at length I retir'd into the closet, when my intelligencer approach'd, saying, her lady had perceiv'd me in her chamber, and desir'd to speak with me. This message did, if possible, increase my amazement. Is she, said I, in a condition to see me ; and does she desire I should treat her according to her deserts ? however, a curiosity of knowing what she could say for her self, made me draw near to her bed : when she told me, in a languishing tone, sir, it was by my orders you came hither, to let you see, that had not your obstinacy hinder'd my marriage with the prince you had not received this trouble. Now you find how despicable a creature you have made your applications to, and how little worthy of your kindness. I remain'd dumb for a long time ; after which, at least, madam, said I, let me know the happy father. That, she reply'd, will be no great advantage to you : it is sufficient, you see, I am unwilling to deceive you ; I had not been so scrupulous, had you been of another character ; but your behaviour has been so honourable and respectful, that I could never have the heart to abuse you : farewell, and consider now whether I am a fit bride for you.

The

The manner wherein she spoke made me weep, and I was loth to leave her. However, I return'd home, and threw my self upon the bed, scarcely believing the adventure real, but that it was a dream; for I had strictly observ'd that lady's carriage, and never had any ground for the least suspicion. I was distracted with a thousand thoughts, but with none so much as the desire of knowing by whom she had that child. To satisfy my curiosity, I waited on her, as soon as I thought she might admit of my visits; not thinking, after what I was already acquainted with, she would conceal any thing from me.

She spoke first, telling me, I had a greater share in her misfortune than I imagin'd; and that the only occasion of it, was her too great love for me. 'This appear'd to me very odd, and I fancy'd the whole story would be a riddle. I desir'd her to proceed; then she inform'd me, she lov'd me with the deepest passion; and, to her sorrow, my respects had kept me at too great a distance; since she earnestly wish'd I would have forc'd that favour from her, which she was but too inclinable to grant. That, one day, being in this amorous disposition, my page brought her a letter.——

How extraordinary soever this appear'd, I began to find it probable, upon calling to mind the particular respect which this page had seem'd to shew her: I doubted not but that this first adventure had been follow'd by many others: for the engaging in the most passionate and violent designs, costs women only the having dared to begin; and the greater the obligation they think they have to keep a guard upon themselves, before persons they fear; so much greater is the inducement to them to be free with those they confide in.

I now look'd upon this woman with other eyes than I had hitherto done; and without saying any thing in relation to the part she pretended I had in what had happen'd, I told her, if she had not been mad, she would never have been guilty of so unworthy an action; and the best advice I could give her, was to marry the page she was so fond of. This said, I left her, and treated her ever after as a fool.

Two or three hours after, I receiv'd a very passionate letter, wherein she said, that I was the cause of all her misfortunes; and in the conclusion, earnestly begg'd me never to divulge what she had discover'd to me. I return'd no answer, but have faithfully kept the secret. I discharged my Page, who was big enough to serve his prince and country, and resolv'd never to think of my mistress more. Her looseness was not so much the cause of my aversion, as her want of conduct; for I could least of all pardon her simplicity, in discovering to me a secret, which she ought not to have trusted with any one. She, on the contrary, thought she had done an heroick action, and oblig'd me highly, I leave it to the reader to determine which of us was in the right; but, for my part, I shall never advise a lady to own her amours either to her husband or lover.

When it was known, that I forbore visiting her, the world imagin'd it to be a consequence of the dissatisfaction I had at her proposing to marry the prince; and I suffer'd that opinion to prevail. I know not whether she continu'd her intrigue with the page, but, about a twelve-month after, a great favourite made a match between her and one of his relations; who was eldest son to a noble and ancient family, from whom she has since been separated, and is grown the most lewd and infamous woman at court.

Thus I found my self deceived in this last engagement, and instead of an opportunity of making my fortune, it was an occasion of no small trouble and expence to me; which further confirm'd the ill opinion I had entertain'd of the sex.

I resolv'd to court them no more, but for amusement; and the first attempt I made of that kind, was with one who was known to have been mistress to a great lord at court, wherein her reputation had suffer'd, and whose visits she was oblig'd to shun, to avoid a farther censure. She endeavour'd to persuade me, that she had wholly left him for my sake, which I only pretended at first to believe. But who can resist the protestations of a deceitful woman? she seem'd so indifferant not only as to that lord, but to all the world besides my self, that at length I thought she had an affection for me only. The lady being extremely beautiful, and very ingenious, I was pleas'd

at having fix'd on a person of that character, and found, that in spite of all my resolutions, I was running into a relapse. My sole endeavour was to inspire her with a more nice and refin'd passion, than she had till then been sensible of; and she appear'd so tractable, that I thought my preaching had wrought an unfeign'd conversion in her.

The king of *England*, *Charles II.* was then at the *French* Court, and being a great admirer of the fair sex, it was thought he wanted not for mistresses. I had a great interest in him, and was often a sharer in his pleasures. One of my friends, who also sometimes accompany'd him, told me, that an unknown woman had address'd her self to him, about a very pleasant business; which was, that a great lady at court was willing to present any person with four hundred pistoles, that would procure her a private meeting with that prince. We must, said I to my friend, learn who this lady is, and get these four hundred pistoles: you may assure the woman who spoke to you, that I will manage this affair with the king; which I did the next day. The king seem'd as passionate to see the lady, as I was curious to know who she was. My friend follow'd my directions, and it was agreed, the interview should be in a house near *Paris*, where that prince should go *incognito*. She thereupon paid him down one half of the money, promising he should have the rest when the business was over.

The king accordingly came to the rendezvous, attended by none but a lord of his own nation, my friend, and my self. As soon as we were arriv'd, the woman who was entrusted with this negotiation, entreated his majesty to take no body with him, because the lady desir'd to conceal herself: he only permitted the lord to follow him, and bid my friend, and I, wait for him in the garden. A little while after the king came to us, and told us that the lady knowing we were there, would not be perswaded to stay, but was already gone giving as a reason, that she knew me to be the most talkative man in the world, and that I could not keep a secret. I wonder'd any lady in *France* should have such a thought of me, since my character was quite otherwise; and therefore ask'd his Majesty, what manner of person she was; to which he answer'd, he would shew

shew her me, for he knew she went often to court, and and that this was not the first time he had seen her face.

Three or four days after, being at the fair of St, *Germain's*, with my mistress, who I believ'd had a particular love for me; I met that king, who, smiling, whisper'd in my ear, that the lady I led was the lady he had promis'd to shew me. Observing that she had taken notice of our whispering, I acquainted her with what that prince had said; at which she seem'd not much surpriz'd, but ask'd me, why? did you not know it? I could not think of a more fit revenge for your baseness, in selling your mistress. I am very well satisfy'd with the king, and so you ought to be with me, since the money has been paid you punctually. Oh; perfidious, I reply'd, who could have suspected you capable of such an action? take my advice, said she, and be silent, we can't reproach each other: if it is mean in me to prostitute my self to a prince, it is much more so in you, to have sold your mistress for four hundred pistols.

I admir'd the temper of the woman, and envied her the presence of mind with which she acted her part; for I was in a passion, and could scarce refrain from abusing her, when she did nothing but laugh at my being out of humour. I confess, women, on such occasions have more resolution than men; and that they bear better, than we can, the shame of being convicted of falsehood.

I broke off wholly with her, and acquainted the king with my reasons. He seem'd to be concern'd, that I should lose my mistress on his account; but, however, he proceeded in his amour: I look'd on it with a great unconcernedness; and this indifferency perswaded me, that I did not love her. While I us'd to visit her, I had often seen one of her friends with her, who had a daughter about sixteen or seventeen years old, whom she still boarded in a nunnery, but sent for home sometimes. This young woman was really handsome, and had a great share of wit. I often convers'd with her; but she was so young, that I never ventur'd to tell her seriously of my inclination for her: neither did I believe she had any particular regard for me, till she discover'd it in a letter, wherein she express'd her concern most tenderly for a slight indisposition

I had. Hoping, that after all the tricks women had play'd me, I might now safely rely on a young creature, who seem'd to follow the dictates of her heart. I return'd a passionate and grateful answer; and three days after I receiv'd another, which contain'd but two or three lines; she desir'd me to be at home at ten the next morning. I could not imagine to what end she made me that request; and did not in the least suspect she would, or could, have come to see me. Yet she did, telling me, she had given the slip to one of her relations, who had fetch'd her from the convent.

It may well be imagin'd, I was charm'd with this action, and that my flame was not a little augmented by it; she tarry'd not long, that her cousin, who was in a church hard by, might not miss her. The next morning I receiv'd a very endearing letter from her; and, for a month afterwards, I never fail'd of one every day in the same strain, and I answer'd them in a manner so much the more tender, as I was most sincerely affected; for I had all the reasons in the world to believe that this young creature lov'd me, and that she had never lov'd any one but me. I durst not visit her in her nunnery; for she told me, it would expose her; and that it was our interest, that our love should be a secret; so that sending and receiving letters was all I could expect till an opportunity should present itself for another meeting.

This had lasted a month when she wrote to me, that she was oblig'd to give it over, being perswaded that it was a sin. Her letter almost distracted me, and thinking it was not sufficient for me to write with all the concern I was capable of shewing, I own'd my love to an acquaintance of hers and mine, who promis'd me to speak to her in my behalf.

The lady having been with her, told me the scruple she seem'd to have, was but a pretence, and that the true reason of her change, was her love for another. That she had not indeed confess'd so much, but that one might easily perceive it by what she had said. I was perswaded it was so, as soon as the lady had inform'd me what discourse pass'd between them; however, I entreated her to return once more, and endeavour to reclaim her; but she would not explain her self further to the lady, but she wrote

wrote to me, and acknowledg'd she could no longer doat on a man whom she durst not see, and who, besides, was reported to have a thousand other mistresses. The style of this letter was a greater proof that she had forsaken me, than her telling me so, ; for let all possible care be taken to make a letter soft and amorous, it is no longer so than while the heart directs. This confirm'd my thoughts of her falshood : but how it humbled me, when I understood the person whom she had prefer'd before me, was a servant of her mothers !

However, I was so great a dotard, that I endeavour'd to find excuses for her frailty ; and imagining the free access he had to her was the occasion of her change, I resolv'd to procure my self the advantage of seeing her as often, I confess'd it was not over honourable to persist in loving one, whose soul could stoop to such a man's addresses ; but I had no occasion to be very jealous, since his visits could reach no farther than the grate ; nor did I think it so great a wonder for a maid of her age to be wavering in her lover's absence, but rather blam'd my own negligence, since I might have found out a thousand ways of being admitted to her.

Immediately I thought of one, and having disguis'd my self like a footman, enquir'd for her, as if sent from her mother. She presently knew me, and express'd so much joy for having given her that proof of my affections, that I expected the transport she was in, would have depriv'd her of her senses. How often did she repeat, Alas ! Is it possible you should love me still ? I could never have thought it. How happy am I ! well, I shall die with pleasure.

These raptures, which seem'd very natural, did so, bewitch me, that I was no longer angry at her falshood, only tenderly mention'd it, and she acknowledg'd her civility had encourag'd that man's boldness, but vow'd she would never have endur'd his insolence, had she not been provok'd to it by the indifferency she fancy'd I had for her ; and that, as a confirmation of her aversion to him, she would cause him to be kill'd, or stab him her self, if I desir'd it. I told her, I expected not so barbarous an assurance, and that I should be satisfy'd with her avoiding his conversation ; on which she made me a thousand protestations of her future fidelity.

This gave me an unexpressible pleasure, and I was in an extasy at the thoughts of being the only possessor of her heart. No one had more sense than she, and I was persuaded it was only the violence of her passion which had carried her to this excess.

Before I left her, I gave her a lecture about constant love : but having spoke never a word of matrimony, she ask'd me, if I did not think her a match good enough ? I reply'd, I did not believe her friends would marry her so young ? and besides, I fear'd her fortune being much above mine, I should certainly be deny'd, if I pretended to ask their consent, Well ! and what need have we of friends ? said she, I'll get out of the convent, and meet you when and where you please : then they must comply. I represented to her, it was safer to wait a little, and in the mean while I would procure some person to insinuate the matter to her mother, at a distance, in order to try her pulse. She seem'd better satisfied at these words, but would not let me go till I had solemnly promis'd to make her my wife,

She was, indeed, so great a fortune, that there was a match concluding between her and one of the first quality : and all the necessary preparations being ready, she was taken out of the nunnery, and it was generally reported, she was going to marry the duke *de* ——— But she told her mother plainly, that she would never have him, because she was engag'd to me.

This surpriz'd her, for our intrigue had been kept very secret : but the match in hand being already agreed on, by the relations on both sides, her mother commanded her never to think more of me, which if she did, she should lead the remainder of her life in a cloister. This threat was a great shock to her resolution ; but what more induc'd her to comply with her parents desires, was the sight of her intended husband, whom she fell passionately in love withal at the first view, and marry'd him the next day.

She had before inform'd me by a letter, of what she had said to her mother in relation to the promise we had made each other ; adding, the only means I had left was to carry her off ; assigning me the time when she would be at a church in the neighbourhood. It was not without

without some reluctancy that I undertook it; but the prospect of a good fortune, and an affectionate wife, made me wave all my scruples; and having taken all necessary measures, I came to the church-door in a coach. Just as I arriv'd, the ceremony was beginning; so that I took her project of running away with me, for a meer banter, since I thought it impossible her mind should alter so suddenly. This I so highly resented, that I was not sorry for losing her; and remain'd present during all the service, which very much offended those of her relations, to whom she had mention'd me, and they have ever since appear'd my enemies upon all occasions; for I could never come to a right understanding with them, nor with my unfaithful mistress, who seem'd not to have seen me; and perhaps did not, her whole mind being possess'd with her bridegroom.

Some it may be will wonder, that I should not seek to revenge my self for her treachery; but love being, in my opinion, the freest thing in the world, I never rank'd those injuries in the number of such which a gentleman ought to resent. I must confess, I have not always been so moderate on that account, as will be seen by the sequel of my life.

When I saw this last mistress married, I believed; more than ever, that it was impossible for me to experience the sweets of a real and sincere love; and that made me very morose to a sex I began both to hate and despise. But what surpriz'd me was, the more I affronted them, the more complaisant and obliging they were to me.

I did by this carriage gain the esteem of a lady, my acquaintance with whom, was occasion'd by a very odd accident. This lady had so henpeck'd her husband, that she had reduc'd him to a meer changling, thro' her imperious treatment. Being very handsome, and absolute mistress of her conduct, most young courtiers had intrigues with her; and she was famous for changing her lovers every quarter. I could not forbear letting fly a severe jest or two upon her, which she hearing of, made great complaints; insomuch, that one day, being by chance in her company, she abus'd me in a most affronting manner, which I return'd with interest. This made a great noise, and every one blam'd my rudeness, which

indeed I could not excuse. I was advis'd to give her some satisfaction; but my resentment was too great, and, on the contrary, I us'd all the means I could to express my contempt of her.

The issue was far from what I should have expected; for instead of her hatred, I gain'd her friendship. A lady, who knew us both, desir'd of me to meet her at her house, assuring me, I should not repent it. I could expect nothing from such a meeting but reproaches, which made me unwilling to consent; but being assur'd I should be entertain'd in a quite different manner, I at length suffer'd my self to be prevail'd upon, and went to the lady's, who was to bring us together.

She came there, and began to weep, saying, she was an unhappy woman to be thus hated by the only man she lov'd. This compliment mollify'd me; and before we parted, we were made such good friends, that I became her chief and most assiduous lover. I drove away all the rest; and seeing she paid a blind obedience to all I requir'd of her, I began to treat her with more complacency.

My civility and kindness encourag'd her to recal her lovers, whom I had drove away; and I chose rather to see her false, than to owe her fidelity to my ill treatment and threats. I left her by degrees, and was told, speaking of me, she should say, that I had not courage enough to be cruel; and that my good nature occasion'd my being unhappy with women. I admir'd, that a woman who govern'd her husband meerly by crossing him, should let her lovers govern her by the same means.

While I had this intrigue, the queen mother imprison'd the prince of *Conde*? and the interest my brother and I had in him, having rais'd a suspicion of us, he advis'd me to retire to *Poland*, where my children and estate might need my presence. I took his counsel, leaving him at *Paris*, much puzzled how to charge, at once, his duty to the queen, and his obligation to the prince; and began my journey, imagining I had too much experience ever to be overreach'd by a woman; but I was still the same man, and more expos'd than ever to their treachery, as will be seen in the following part of these MEMOIRS.

P A R T III.

P A R T III.

I Pass'd through *Germany*, and arriv'd at *Heildeberg*, about the latter end of *April*. It was two or three years after prince *Charles Lewis* of *Bavaria*'s having been restor'd to his electorate. His amours are so well known, that the reader may easily judge, gallantry was no stranger to his court; and that I could scarce avoid there the dangers from which I design'd to keep my self free. But indeed those I met with, were such as I could never have foreseen, and which I therefore escap'd with the more difficulty.

Among her electoral highness's retinue, was a very handsome *French-woman*, who neither knew what part of *France* she was born in, nor who were her parents. All the account she could give of her self was, that one of her country-women had brought her into *Germany*, when she was but ten years old; who for a long time was taken for her mother, but on her death-bed declared, that she had only been entrusted with her and did not so much as know who she belong'd to. For this reason they call'd her the lady *Errant* a name which she had indeed a good title to, as we shall see anon.

The great character I had of her wit and beauty, made me desire to know her; whom, accordingly, I sought an opportunity to see, and we presently grew acquainted. I perceiv'd she stood much upon her quality; for having the liberty to chuse what friends she would, she had pitch'd on very considerable ones; and confidently assur'd us, that she was daughter to a prince and princess, who, for certain reasons, best known to her self, had conceal'd her in *Germany*. I thought it was in jest, that she pretended to so illustrious a pedigree; but at my third or fourth visit found she was in earnest: and she also told me, that her nativity had

been calculated, and that the astrologer had assur'd her, she should go into *Poland*, where she would meet with her friends, and a husband suitable to her birth. In these hopes she liv'd, expecting kind heaven would give her an opportunity of accomplishing her destiny, by affording her the means to make a voyage to *Warsaw*.

Hearing I was bound thither, she fancy'd the happy hour was come, and offer'd to accompany me. At first I thought she rally'd; but seeing her very serious upon it, represented to her, that the electress treated her so kindly, that it were folly and ingratitude to leave her: that I was oblig'd to ride post, and therefore she could not keep pace with me; and that both her reputation and mine would suffer by such an action: but she would not be dissuaded from it, and reply'd, she was resolv'd to follow me.

Then I found my error, in having too hastily made an acquaintance with that woman; for I must confess, that intic'd by the easy access I had to her, and the beauty she was mistress of, I had began to talk amorously to her. She, thinking my love real, had rely'd on the addresses which I made to her only for my diversion, and did not imagine I could have deny'd her any thing.

How to get rid of her I knew not: at last I thought I might do it, by finding out some real lover of hers, who would hardly bear her absence. This was soon done; and I understood, that a raw *German* lord had a sincere affection for her, and would have marry'd her, had not the electress oppos'd his being match'd to one so much below him.

I resolv'd to make him jealous, and to that end seem'd more assiduous than before; and fearing that was not enough for his dull apprehension, I caus'd him to be warn'd by a friend of mine, that I was as likely as any one to rob him of his mistress; and he had best not only watch her himself, but also desire the electress to have her observ'd. I knew not whether this would take, for my *German* did not seem the more diligent for it; only he open'd wide a pair of heavy gogling eyes upon me, whenever it was our fortune to be together.

In

In the mean while it grew time for me to be gone; and having, as I thought, dissuaded her from it, I set forward for my intended journey; but was scarce two leagues off, when being oblig'd to stay for the shoeing of one of my horses, I was overtaken by two horsemen. It was no little surprize to me, to see that one of them was the lady *Errant*, in man's cloths; but more, that the other should be her *German* gallant. He said no more, than he us'd to do, only star'd at me with all his might; while she told me, that upon my scrupling to take her with me, she had perswaded him to attend her; that she hop'd I would not refuse them my company during the rest of the journey.

I fear'd, lest my appearing to have had a respect for her while at *Heidelberg*, should make people think I had run away with her; and besides, I could not but foresee, that she would have been a very troublesome companion, I was, on the other hand, astonish'd to see her lover, who was a man of the first quality, in such a dress, and without attendance; and, which increas'd my wonder, ready to wait on her into so far distant a country, while she would have the company of a man whom he must needs look on as a rival.

Growing impatient to know the meaning of it, I took him aside, and ask'd what was his design, and how I might be serviceable to him. He made me a very low bow, and answer'd me with great respect, that my highness did him too great an honour, in chusing him for an husband to the princess my sister. It may well be imagin'd I was struck with amazement at his discourse; but it was soon over, for, by what I knew of his mistress, I soon guess'd at the trick she put upon him.

She made him believe, that I was her brother, and prince *de —*, who had been oblig'd to go under a wrong name at *Heidelberg*, for the same reasons as had also put her under a necessity of concealing her quality; and that I had promis'd, if she would go with me into *Poland*, to marry them together, and carry her into *France*, with an attendance suitable to her quality. One may easily guess, by what I have said, that my *German* lord was no conjurer: however, when I had undeceiv'd him, he acted like a man of sense; but this brought me into further trouble.

I told him then, that I was neither a prince, nor brother to the lady; that he must have been mad to have entertain'd such extravagant notions; and that the best counsel I could give for them both, would be to return to *Heidelberg*, before their departure should be made publick,

Whether this man was but little in love, or whether the having been thus deceiv'd had cur'd him off it; no sooner was he convinc'd of the truth of what I told him, than he gallop'd back towards the city, leaving the lady with me, now more obstinately bent than before upon accompanying me: I told her plainly, that I could not be her guide; and that if she persisted in such resolution, I would return to *Heidelberg*, and make all the world acquainted with her folly.

What I said, mov'd her a little; however, she could not be prevail'd upon to alter her purpose; but with tears in her eyes, conjur'd me to assist her in fulfilling her destiny: and here I must again confess my weakness. It was no doubt with me, but that the creature was foolish; nevertheless, her beauty made me pity her: I was even pleas'd with the violent love she appear'd to have for me; and I believe, I should have been so kind as to have carry'd her along with me, if a person had not come to bring her back; which shews, that let a woman be never so great a fool, she will sometimes have it in her power to manage a man as she pleases.

While this dispute lasted, we saw one of the electress's ladies, with a company of horsemen, who, coming up to us, seiz'd on her, and told me, that his electoral highness, would willingly have an account of the reasons I had to run away with her. This was as much as to say, that they arrested me in his name; so I immediately went along with them; and came back to *Heidelberg*; where every one look'd on me as the author of her flight: for the *German*, ashamed of having given credit to the extravagancies she had told him, was the most forward in publishing, that I had perswaded her, thus disguis'd, to accompany me; and went directly, after leaving us, to give such information to the electress.

I sure had reason to curse my ill fortune, on this account; it being the third or fourth time in my life, that

I had been, tho' innocent, suspected of stealing women, a man must take great care how he engages himself with strangers, for it often happens, that by being too officious to them, he hazards his own quiet and safety.

I gave the elector a faithful account of what pass'd, and he readily believ'd me; and laughing heartily at the *German* lord's simplicity, assur'd me, that he would do his endeavours to help him to the wife he had so great a mind to.

Then I had leave to depart, but fell sick by the way, and spent above six weeks in my journey. I understood, before my arrival at *Warsaw*, that the only person I fear'd was dead some days since. The reader's memory may soon suggest to him, that it was the poisoning and daggering lady that I stood in such awe of. She had, since my leaving her, marry'd the lord I had surpriz'd her with; and, as it was commonly reported, design'd to have poison'd him, but was prevented by poison he had given her.

King *Ladislaus* had been dead ever since the year 1648, and his brother, prince *Casimir*, had succeeded him, as well in the enjoyment of his queen, as in that of his kingdom. I found her majesty with child, and ready to lye-in: she seem'd very well pleas'd at my return, and told me, I came in a very good time, for two reasons; one, to deliver my brother out of the trouble he had brought himself into: the other, to comfort a poor afflicted gentlewoman, who had had recourse to her, and made great complaints of me.

I was acquainted, in short, that my brother had procur'd himself many enemies, by his rash and inconsiderate behaviour, especially in his amours; insomuch, that he was forbid coming to court. And, as for the lady, I understood, by the description given of her, that it was my *Heidelberg* mistress; who was arriv'd in *Poland* almost a fortnight before.

The queen inform'd me, that she had given out, I had promis'd to marry her; and that after she had given me all the proofs of an entire confidence, I had ungratefully forsaken her. I satisfy'd her majesty in that particular,
and

and gave her a true relation of what had befall me on her account: then her majesty let me know further, that the king began to be in love with her: at which I was glad, hoping so potent a rival might deliver me from her impertinence.

The story of her leaving *Heidelberg* runs thus. After her return, the elector endeavour'd to marry her to her *German* lover; but she still fondly perswaded that her stars directed her to *Poland*, refus'd to marry him. The *German*, eager in his pursuit, and assisted by his prince, caus'd her to be confin'd, thinking by that means to make her comply; but she found a way to escape, and having put on man's clothes, came to *Warsaw*, with a woman whom she had perswaded to accompany her under the same disguise.

Being arriv'd there, she immediately enquir'd for me; whom not finding, she thought of the fine story she had told the queen: but the king's affection for her soon chang'd her note, and she no longer amus'd her self with complaining either of me, or her ill fortune.

We chanc'd to meet not long after, but with the same indifferency as tho' we had never seen one another; and the feign'd promise, nor the adventures at *Heidelberg* were not once mention'd in our conversation. I found her free from all those extravagancies: it seem'd to me, that the honour of her having such a prince for a lover, had brought her to herself. She was now grown as sensible as she was fair; and I must confess, I never saw a woman more charming. She made me the confident of her intrigue with the king, which brought me into fresh misfortunes,

The queen being as jealous of this, as she had been of her former husband, would have had me acquaint her with all I knew of the amour; but I, fearing to displease her, pretended I had an intrigue with her my self, and that the king had wholly forsaken her. The confidence her majesty repos'd in me, made her give more credit to what I said, than to the advices she had of the king's falshood; and she could not forbear acquainting him with this report, saying, she wondered how people could have
such

such mean thoughts of him, as to imagine he could love a woman I was known to converse with.

The effect of this was, that he suspecting me, order'd his mistress to forbear seeing me. When the queen understood that I durst not visit her, she was convinc'd I had deceiv'd her; and resent'd it so highly, that she began to hate me, almost as much as she did her rival.

My brother's wild conduct had, on the other hand, made our name odious to the *Polanders*. Having, as I have already said, been oblig'd to quit *France* about a year and a half before, he came to *Warsaw*, thinking to find me there, where he met with the gentleman; who had been my second at *Venice*, who was but just arriv'd. The queen made them a very kind reception; and prince *Cazimir's* election and marriage, having given an occasion to all sorts of pastimes, the court was so much taken up with those divertisments, that war had for some time been wholly laid aside; so they had not an occasion of serving his *Polish* majesty against the *Swedes*, to which end they said they were come; and for want of other employment, wholly spent their time in the ladies' conversation.

All the particulars I could hear were, that they had fought several duels; and that their rude behaviour to every woman they lik'd, had at last oblig'd the queen to command them to come no more to court: so that they confirm'd the opinion foreigners had then, that politeness is what the *French* least practise in their amours; which prejudice, I do not see that those who have travell'd since have effac'd; for it is look'd on as a miracle, to see a young *French* gentleman behave himself with discretion.

Tho' I had highly disoblig'd the queen, yet she made a great distinction between my brother and me: and if she seem'd not to desire me to stay in *Poland*, it was because she did not think I could be serviceable to her, in the design she had of governing the king, to whom I was become suspected. So when I had settl'd my affairs, and secur'd the fortunes of my children, whom the queen continu'd to take care of, I resolv'd to return to *France*. I endeavour'd to perswade my brother, and his friend, to a more decent carriage; but thinking their credit wholly

wholly lost there, they went into *Sweden*, where they thought they might sooner meet with an opportunity of shewing their valour; for they were already outlaw'd in *France*, whither they durst not return.

I once more left *Poland*, much in the same posture as I had done the time before, out of favour with the court, and still for a woman's sake; for my *Heidelberg*-lady was the cause of all this: and had not that unlucky accident fell out, I should have had a great share in king *Casimir's* affection. That prince was much of the same genius as his brother, a foe to business, and a slave to his pleasures, but master of infinitely more courage and bravery. He was not, naturally, daring enough for great undertakings, which had given the queen an absolute command over his mind; but when once he had resolv'd upon a thing, he wanted not courage to put it in execution.

His predominant vice was the love of women; and constancy was what he was little guilty of. His natural levity was encourag'd by frequent remorse, and a dread, least God should bring some punishment on him for his lewdness. He never fail'd being devout when he began to be weary of a mistress; but his devotion lasted no longer than his love: thus was his whole life a mixture of piety and gallantry. As for his behaviour, he was frank, and very complaisant; but he was weak, and diverted himself with trifles: and had not the king of *Sweden*, and * *Lubomirski* disturb'd his quiet, he would have prefer'd the ease of a private man, to the reputation of a great monarch.

The queen had an absolute power over him, tho' she was still mistrustful of her authority: it was not for want of a good opinion of her own wit, nor for want of knowing the character of the king's; but it was that very knowledge made her suspect her power. She fear'd the king, being of so easy a temper, might suffer himself to be govern'd by others; and seeing he must

* A *Polander*, who excited a rebellion which lasted fifteen years.

have mistresses, she took all possible care to give him a distaste for those, who she thought might be cunning enough to supplant her,

Such was the state of the court of *Poland*; for being now grown more serious, I began to observe the same and talents of those I convers'd with; and the posture of their affairs.

Before I was quite out of that country I met with a new adventure, wherein I ran great hazards of my life; and was a witness of the most barbarous sight eyes ever beheld, the very thought of which still strikes my soul with horror. Altho' my inclination for the fair sex was the occasion of the share I had in it, yet I cannot herein condemn my self, since any one who had the least humanity or generosity, would have acted as I did.

I was about 2 days journey from *Warsaw*, when resting in a little town, while fresh horses were providing for me, I spy'd a woman in a great disorder, who running towards me, made signs that I should meet her, being almost spent, and not able to reach the place where I was. Being got to her, she threw her self into my arms, and before she could speak, fainted away. She was little, as are most of the *Polish* women; and, in spite of the confusion she was in, it was easily perceiv'd she was as handsome as any that country affords. Her beauty and distress mov'd my pity: I carry'd her into a little house, where my servants waited, and having laid her down, she recover'd.

She told us, that she was born at *Breslaw*, and that her friends had marry'd her to a *Tartar*, who was so rude to her that not being able to bear any longer with his ill treatments, she had left him, and was going to *Warsaw*, where she had some relations, who would protect her against her severe husband. This was all she told us at first; but at last she own'd, that the reason of her running away was, that she had given him an occasion to suspect her virtue; that her lover had accompany'd her in her flight, and being fallen into an ambuscade of *Cossacks*, they had murder'd him before her eyes; and that having made her escape from them also, she was still in great fear of her husband, who she knew was in pursuit of her.

Indeed,

Indeed, my heart bled to see her in that wretched condition ; but how to help her I knew not, unless I carry'd her to *Warsaw*, which would have been a considerable stop to my journey. However, I thought my self oblig'd in honour and charity to do it ; and accordingly order'd one of my men to take her up behind him, and to follow me.

But we had scarce rid half a day, before we met with her husband, who with ten or twelve *Tartars* more, was in search after her. He presently knew her again, and having drawn his scymeter, came to him who had her up behind him, threatening to take away his life. I hasten'd to his relief, with my pistol cock'd ; but the superior number soon overpower'd us, and we were robb'd of our charge. I know not whether, in the passion he was in, he took me for his wife's spark ; but having order'd his men to seize me, I was forc'd into a stable he had already caus'd her to be shut into, where I beheld his barbarous revenge. He commanded four of his servants to grasp her tender limbs, while himself began to flea her. The miserable creature look'd sometimes on me ; and amidst the woful cries that dreadful pain forc'd from her, did now and then put forth some Ejaculations, to implore the divine mercy. At last her inhumane husband, seeing her dead, threw in my face what he had of her skin, whence I expected to have been us'd in the same manner ; which to prevent, I told him in *Polish*, that I would have him take care of what he did ; that I was a stranger, wholly unacquainted with his wife, and whom he could have no quarrel against. These words made him look very earnestly on me : and not finding in me any marks of the person for whom, very probably, he had taken me ; he came to me with more civility than I had reason to expect from a man so inhuman ; and without saying a word, he set my men and baggage at liberty, and left me to continue my journey.

Indeed never did any adventure give me so much dread and horror, it was above ten days before I could destroy the frightful idea of her punishment ; during which time I often had a desire to seek out the *Tartar*, and kill him with mine own hand : but these thoughts did at last wear off, and gave way to the reflections I made on the

the fatal consequences which usually attend an unequal match ; and on the misery women procure themselves by their loose behaviour.

I arriv'd at *Paris* about the latter end of *January*, having spent near ten months in my journey. About a fortnight after my arrival, the prince was set at liberty ; and my brother and I thought we might express our gratitude and respects to him, without disoblighing the court : but we soon found it otherwise ; and the very first time we waited on him, perceiv'd he was contriving to leave *France*. He was of too great judgment not to discover the queen design'd to recal the cardinal, who was then, I think, at *Sedan* ; and openly protested, that if he return'd into *France*, he was resolv'd to drive him out by force.

We well foresaw what would be the event, and waited not long for a confirmation of our fears. My brother did not think fit to follow the prince ; but because I was more master of my own actions, he not only consented to my attending him out of the kingdom, but also advis'd me to share in his fortune : whether he saw it impossible for him to advance my preferment with the queen ; or that being desirous to see the prince in favour with his majesty, he was glad to have a friend with his royal highness, by whom he might give him advice.

Whatever my brother's design might be, I am sure I would never have comply'd with his desires, had I not been glad to leave *Paris*, that I might divert my melancholy, occasion'd by the affliction I had, through the perfidiousness of a mistress I had engag'd with, since my return from *Poland*. This was a troublesome intrigue ; and since that with my *Carmelite*, none had ever touch'd me so nearly, or gave me such concern. Indeed, it afforded me an opportunity of discovering new characters in the sex, which I had not till then been aware of, as may be judg'd from the following story.

Near my lodgings there liv'd a woman, whose husband was lately dead, but who had been seperated from him a few years after her marriage. Every one would have

have it that her gallantry had been the only occasion of their divorce, and I was for some time of the same opinion ; but being grown better acquainted with her, I perceiv'd there might other reasons, and-very substantial ones, be given. She was the most fantastical woman in the world ; and I think that the ill humour of a wife is as insupportable as her want of chastity ; for tho' she does less expose her husband in publick, she is a greater plague to him in private.

She had a daughter, who shar'd the same fate with her ; for they had made it their bargain at parting, that the father should provide for the boys, and the daughter should be left to her mother's care. She was certainly the worst tutor that young maid could have, not only because of her bad repute, but also for the unaccountable sentiments she had on her daughter's account, which till then it never had enter'd my thoughts a mother could have been guilty of. This woman, who was, no doubt, well inform'd of the aspersions that were cast upon her honour, was jealous at the praise her daughter might have won, by not following her example ; and her greatest care was to engage her in some intrigue, which might expose her to a like censure : but through another unaccountable nicety, she was desirous that her daughter might lie under the scandal of folly as well as debauchery, and to that purpose was very diligent in keeping her from the company of ingenious men, and letting her see none but fops and fools.

Such was this gentlewoman's humour, which I did not at first discover, thinking her encouraging the addresses some fools made to her daughter, might be grounded on the opinion, that they are less dangerous than others.

The young lady was very lovely, had a brisk flashy wit, but very little judgment, and was of a very violent temper, and a great indulger of her passions.

I was at first wholly unacquainted with either of their characters, and only visited them, as being agreeable neighbours, whose conversation might prove diverting ; but I had not seen the daughter twice, e're
I fell

I fell deeply in love. She receiv'd my declaration in such a manner as increas'd my flame, and we presently grew as intimate as if we had known each other all our life-time.

She told me, I must not give any jealousy to her mother; and that the old gentlewoman should not suspect me, I thus excus'd the frequent visits I made to her daughter: first, that I did it, to increase her knowledge by giving her a narration of my travels, and then to make a match between her and a relation of mine, who was very rich, and was wholly guided by me. But this was just the counter-part of what I should have done; for her mother was unwilling she should have any merit or be well match'd; and her only wish was, that she might be thought to want both sense and modesty.

I soon found I was not welcome, and the most disobliging methods in the world were us'd to make me understand it: but while I was so ill treated, all possible favour was shewn to a man who possessed in a high degree, all the ill qualities requisite to render his acquaintance scandalous on all accounts, and was therefore sovereignly accomplish'd for what the mother design'd him.

He was five and fifty, and was so universally despis'd, that I never heard any one speak well of him. The only good quality he was famous for, was, that he was a very peaceable and quiet man, an enemy to quarrels, and willing to put up all manner of affronts rather than draw his sword, which had not hitherto seen the light, tho' he was an officer. Another valuable qualification was, that he was, an eternal visitant, where he once grew acquainted, especially if it was a house of good eating, and where it might be thought he had some intrigue; for he unwillingly parted with his money, and was very ambitious of being thought in favour with the ladies.

Having been an acquaintance of theirs for thirty years, I wondred not at first to see him so assiduous; but the daughter who seem'd to repose an entire confidence in me, inform'd me, that he was vehemently in love with her. As I thought she mention'd this to me, only that I might give her my advice, and I, not
in

In the least mistrusting, that one, I thought so deserving could ever stoop to have a kindness for such a fop, turn'd his passion into ridicule, and only advised her to avoid being in private with him, lest she should thereby encourage the vanity of so conceited a coxcomb.

I question'd not but her own inclination would have made her hearken to my advice ; but was too soon acquainted with the contrary, that she was with him day and night, and that when the old woman was gone to bed they sat up together till two or three in the morning. I tax'd her with it, which she deny'd in part, and vowed what she did was only in obedience to her mother. Then I began to know the character of a mother so unworthy of that name, and did not at all doubt, but that she endeavour'd to discredit her daughter. The interest which I took in the reputation and settlement of a person whom I sincerely lov'd, oblig'd me to impart to her my conjectures upon her mother's conduct, but it was too late. The freedom with which she saw the old officer had occasion'd some inclination in her towards him ; she began to find him amiable and no longer to love me ; for at length women fix themselves where they can, and what difference soever she might find between my old rival and me, she lov'd him most who of the two she could most easily see.

Whatever trouble my mistress's change gave me, yet I sometimes excus'd her, and my chief resentment fell upon the mother, but I soon found the daughter only had given me cause to complain.

Being insensibly fallen in love with the old officer, and having liberty to see him at all hours, she was afraid I might represent to her mother the ill consequences of their frequent meetings, and by that means deprive her of the pleasure of seeing him, with the same freedom as formerly. To prevent this, she resolv'd to complain first, and accordingly told her mother, that I continually persecuted her with declarations of a love she could not receive. I dare say my affection for her did not so much displease her mother, as the opinion the old gentlewoman had of my merit ; for she could

not

not endure a gentleman should court her daughter ; desiring, as I have already said, she should appear ridiculous in the choice of her gallants.

I knew not that this girl had discover'd my love for her to her mother, and attributed the cold reception I met with to her usual odd humour ; the mean time what the mother foresaw happen'd. The old officer's too frequent visits began to be taken notice of. The servants pretended to have seen him come out of her chamber at unseemly hours ; and in a little time, every thing the most disadvantageous to her reputation, was reported.

I found my case very hard for a man that lov'd sincerely. Tho' I did not think her as base as the town-talk represented her, yet I could not wholly disbelieve what was said ; however, out of an incredible fondness, I every where took her part, and strove to efface a report, which I knew was but too well-grounded.

It was impossible she should be ignorant of the zeal I express'd for her ; yet, whether she was ashamed of her perfidiousness, or that she fear'd a troublesome advice she did not design to follow, she shunn'd me with so much care, that I never could speak with her.

I knew not what to think of it, for I could never imagine that she should be in love with so disagreeable a person as my rival ; and, besides, I had not courage enough to hate her, were it true. In the mean while the scandal increas'd, and it was whisper'd about she was with child. The proofs of her shame were but too convincing ; and I found my self in a most intricate dilemma, not knowing what to believe, and whether to love or hate her. At last, I thought it my best way to make no farther enquiry into the matter, but by absence to seek a cure for my folly. By this motive was I induc'd to follow my brother's counsels ; and, I may say, this intrigue gave me more piercing griefs, and more sensible afflictions than I had till then receiv'd.

In obedience to my brother's commands, I attended the prince, whom I found very chagrene, and much dissatisfy'd with the *Spaniards*. The loss of *Monrond* was a great vexation to him ; and taking me aside, he ask'd
me,

me, what people said of him at *Paris* ? and, whether my brother would not follow my example ? I answer'd, that both the court and the city were wholly devoted to him, especially my brother ; who, as a token of his respect for him, had sent me to serve him. He ask'd me further, whether my brother design'd to stay ? and, how he could agree with the cardinal ? I reply'd, my brother made his court to the king only, and had nothing to do with that minister in particular. Then write to him, said he, that I would have him be wholly for one or the other ; and that unless he can be content to cringe to the cardinal, it is his best way to come hither. I told him, I thought he was fix'd in his resolution, and that he would keep where he was. I see, reply'd the prince, that he designs for a marshal's staff : indeed, he is in the right ; and were I in his place, I should not stop in so fair a course : but a prince is certainly in an unhappy station. Thereupon he unbosom'd himself to me, and confess'd, that he was sorry for having engag'd in such a business. I laid hold of this opportunity to persuade him to make his peace with the king ; but he answer'd, it was too late ; and that now the dice were cast, he must be content with his chance.

We had afterwards several other conferences ; and, whether he repos'd more trust in me, than in the rest of those who were with him ; or, that having once unfolded his secrets to me, it was become habitual to him ; he made the confidant of all the mortifications he receiv'd from the *Spaniards*, and had each day some new discovery to impart to me, of the little fidelity which was to be expected from them. This occasion'd his giving me a commission I thought very disagreeable, being rather desirous to be employ'd in the army.

The prince, who ever since the battle at *Lens*, knew me to be a good soldier ; would, of himself, have been inclin'd to give me that satisfaction ; but seeing nothing was acted in *Flanders*, without express orders from the council at *Madrid*, he thought it would not be amiss to send into *Spain* a person he might confide in, who should manage his affairs with *Don Lewis de Haro*, first minister of that court.

He told me, he had at first pitch'd on the abbot de M —, thinking I might have done him more service as an officer :

officer : but that the abbot was too rash and giddy, and, he fear'd, would spoil all : then he obligingly told me, my good parts rendred me more fit than any one to ingratiate my self with the *Spanish* ministers ; that this employment, which would not expose me to publick view, would be more convenient for me than bearing arms against *France*, where my brother might perhaps be the object of their malicious revenge ; that seeing my brother adher'd to the cardinal's party, he would, questionless, use his endeavours to recal me ; and that if my mind alter'd, I might return with more honour, not having serv'd in his troops.

I yielded to these reasons ; and, besides, I found there was a good one he kept to himself, to wit, the jealousy, which the interest I had in him, gave to those who had some share in his favour : so I acquainted the prince, that I was ready to obey his commands ; and having receiv'd my instructions, went for *Madrid incognito*, as a stranger, who made that journey on his own private occasions ; for the prince had not thought fit to give me a publick character, thinking my negotiations, by being more private, would be more secure ; and kept my departure so very secret, that none knew but himself what was become of me.

I spent near two years in *Madrid*, without doing him any other piece of service, than representing the wrongs he receiv'd from the *Spaniards* in *Flanders*, and answering the complaints which they made against him ; for, as one might judge from their letters, they never could agree : and I discover'd better there than the prince could do in *Flanders*, how wretched a condition they are in, who by their revolt are forc'd to depend upon strangers.

They found him too extravagant in his expences, and too slow in his progresses, for they would have had him conquer all *France* in a quarter of a year's time, without putting them to a farthing expence. 'Tis true, they did all possible justice to his merit, but still the money was wanting ; and some thought *Don Lewis de Haro* was of intelligence with cardinal *Mazarine*, and had been brib'd by the queen-mother, to leave the prince destitute both of men and money. Whatever the reason might

be, all my instances prevail'd little, and only procur'd him unperform'd promises, and empty praise.

Having then but little to do, during the two years I remain'd at *Madrid*, it was no wonder if I spent some part of my time in gallantry, especially in a country so fruitful in adventures and intrigues; and there I obtain'd a farther insight into the female sex's character, which I have made it my business in these memoirs to describe.

I lodg'd at a *Frenchman's* house, who by his pride and self-conceit might have been taken for a *Spaniard*; but there is little difference between the *Spaniards* and the natives of *Gascony*; at least, I found it so by him. He bragg'd much of his quality, but still did not disdain trade, dealing in pictures and pieces of tapestry.

This man, I believe, was a merchant, but he pretended to quality; he was as silent upon what business kept him at *Madrid*, as I was upon what made me stay there. The dealings I saw him have in tapestry and pictures, made me think he and his family were tradesmen.

Here I cannot forbear relating the manner wherein he bought some of them, which will perhaps seem unlikely, and it may hardly be believ'd there should be in *Spain* such impudent robbers.

A *Spaniard* whom he dealt with, carry'd him one day into the king's palace, and having led him into the finest apartment, where they took a view of the pictures and tapestry, the *Spaniard* ask'd him, what he lik'd best of all the furniture? and the other having told him, he fancy'd a certain picture, and a piece of hangings, he shew'd him: well, quoth my *Spaniard*, and what will you give me, if I procure them? the *Frenchman* not thinking they were at his disposal, took this as a jest; but his companion having assur'd him he was in earnest, and that this was not the first time he had sold the king's goods, without its being perceiv'd, they made a bargain, and accordingly the picture was sent, having been cut out of its frame; and some days after the tapestry, which the receiver speedily convey'd to *Bayonne*.

Himself told me the story, saying, it was a very usual thing at *Madrid*, where they would in that manner sell the goods of most of the palaces, having first agreed of the price before they stole them.

I did

I did not much like the company of a man, who was capable of countenancing such a villany ; but I meddled not with his concerns, nor he with mine, and all the discourse we had together, was only concerning the intrigues of the town.

The first I had at *Madrid* was with a woman, whose husband was a great favourite of *Don Lewis de Haro's*. My employment occasion'd an intimacy between us ; for it was often through his means that I obtain'd audience from his patron. I never had seen his lady, nor so much as heard that he was marry'd, till one day that she spoke to me, in a church where we chanc'd to meet. I found she knew me, and was willing to improve an acquaintance, which her youth and beauty made me but too desirous of. These desires I express'd to her ; to which she answer'd, if I was sincere, the week should not be at an end before I should receive that satisfaction.

The *Frenchman*, at whose house I lodg'd, was then at the same church, and had taken notice of our conversation, tho' it had been but very short : we were no sooner at home, but he ask'd me, whether I knew that lady, and had seen her before ? I ask'd him the reason of his question ? 'tis, reply'd he, of some small concern to me, having been her gallant for above this half year ; and, when you please, I will shew you some twenty letters of hers I have by me. Then he told me, that he was scarce arriv'd at *Madrid*, when he first contracted a familiarity with her, having had an opportunity at a publick entertainment the king had given ; and that ever since he met her thrice a week, at a certain place, where he offer'd to carry me.

I was not a little nettled at his discourse, being vex'd to see that a lady, whom I had a kindness for, should be already engag'd ; and what was worse, that so undeserving a man, for indeed his merit was but small, should have the preference before me. However, I conceal'd my thoughts, and pretended curiosity, desir'd to see some of those letters, which he promis'd me ; but he delay'd me two days, and then shew'd me six or seven anonymous billets, which he assur'd me came from her ; and all express'd a great passion, and very little wit.

This gave me such ill thoughts of the lady, that I resolv'd never to think of her more; but having some business with her husband, I went to his house, where I was inform'd he was out of town; and the same servant whisper'd me, that her lady desired to speak with me, I could not tell at first what I had best to do: however, the desire of knowing what she had to say prevail'd, and I went up to her, with a resolution to inform her of what I had heard.

I did, and she protested it was all false; vowing she knew no *Frenchman* but my self, and that no man could ever boast of having receiv'd a letter from her. The confidence with which she spoke to me, made me begin to suspect my landlord; and I thought he might as well have compos'd those letters according to his own fancy, as well as the rest of the adventure.

I told the lady then, that she her self should see some of the letters which were attributed to her. She seem'd very desirous of seeing them. and I left her possess'd with a passion, which nothing but a confirmation of her infamy could extinguish.

I took no notice to my landlord that I had visited the lady; but pretending I thought the letters very ingenious, desir'd him to let me see them once more; and he accordingly drew one out of his pocket, he said he had but just receiv'd; which I read and put into mine, and he did not seem over-earnest to have it again.

Then I presently waited on the lady, whom I found ready to send me one, which she told me she had wrote; that by comparing the characters, I might be convinc'd of her innocence. I was, and it plainly appear'd that this was all a contrivance of his? either out of a vain-glory of being thought to have an agreeable intrigue, or a desire to perplex me, for he never had so much as spoke to her.

Nothing could then have hindred my being absolutely engag'd to this woman. but an inconceivable odd humour, and which till then I could not think any woman could ever have. The scandalous story he had made of her, must naturally have procur'd him her scorn and aversion: but what impressions may not a woman's heart receive? his lies and fictions had a quite contrary effect;

she desir'd to be acquainted with him. At first she said, it was with a design to be reveng'd on him, for having thus abus'd her ; but I perceiv'd this man had unawares gain'd her favour, and indeed at the very first sight they became very good friends, and I was slighted.

Who can say, by what springs the hearts of women are mov'd, when they see that this person's was taken by the very thing which ought the better to have defended it ? as for me, the more I reflect on this adventure, the more difficult do I find to explain how the *Frenchman* came to gain upon her affections ; I know not what can be said to it, unless that she concluded from his being at the trouble of inventing this intrigue, that she was look'd upon by him, as one whom it was worth while to be at some pains to make love to : perhaps likewise, she found the contents of the supposed letters, just such as her self would have wrote, and was desirous of being beloved by a man who had so nicely hit her character.

Whatever the reason might be, they improv'd their acquaintance, and my landlord might since have shewn me as many true letters, as he had done fictitious ones ; but he grew discreet when his intrigue became real. I should certainly have disputed him the conquest of a heart he had so little merited, had I not then met with a lady whom I thought more worth my care.

The duke *de Guise* was still at *Madrid*, and tho' he had not yet the liberty of returning to *France*, had, however, the privilege of seeing his friends. I waited on him, and gave him an account of what I had suffer'd at *Naples* for his service ; as also of his mistress's treachery, except that part of it wherein I was concern'd. He said, he was sorry he should have occasion'd me all that trouble, and to make me some amends, he would introduce me to a *Spanish* Lady, who he had reason to believe had a respect for me ; and whose quality and fortune would please my vanity, if I was one who was to be taken that way. I do not think my self vainer than other persons ; yet I must confess, that what the duke said of the rank and fortune of the lady I was suppos'd to have pleas'd, made me more desirous of being acquainted

quainted with her, than what he told me of her beauty; of which, nevertheless, he gave me a fine description.

I told him then, how well I was dispos'd for this adventure; and we agreed upon a day for a meeting, when he promis'd I should have an opportunity of seeing and speaking to her. Two days afterwards he carried me to a house, where I perceiv'd he had the command, by the freedom with which we were admitted. It was then about 5 in the evening, and not so dark, but I perceiv'd the furniture was extraordinary rich, which confirm'd part of what the duke had said; and I began to have a strange passion for the unknown lady.

I was left alone in a closet, till very late at night while the duke was gone, as he told me, to prepare the lady for my reception. I had great reason to imagine, that she was one of his mistresses, and that being weary of her, he had a mind to make her over to me; but such is the weakness of human vanity, that these reflections made but little impression upon me, so great was my desire of reckoning a lady of her power and wealth among the number of my conquests.

But how great was my astonishment, when I saw it was the same *Neapolitan* lady with whom I had so great reason to be dissatisfy'd! the duke usher'd her in and told me, smiling, that she came to expiate the fault she committed, by deserting me at *Naples*. I was surpriz'd, if ever I was so in my life, and my first thought was a thought of anger and revenge; but at length I consider'd it was not proper to let it be perceiv'd there; and seeing they both laugh'd heartily, I laugh'd too.

I presently perceiv'd, that the duke had deceiv'd me, when he said, the lady was desirous of having an intrigue with me; for they two were greater than ever. All that he intended, was only that I should see her; either to divert himself at my surprize, or to give me a better opinion, by reconciling me to her. I could not help having a private resentment of this usage; and to revenge my self on the duke, I took a resolution, once more, to be his rival. There indeed my passion prov'd stronger than my honour, which would have let me rather to abhor than court so perfidious a woman.

Never

Never was there a resolution so imprudent, or so shameful; for in short it was a scandal to me to make love again to a person so worthy of contempt, and it was ridiculous to think of depriving the duke *de Guise* of a mistress, who had left her native country, and was come as far as *Spain* solely on his account.

But I ventur'd through all, and before I left her whisper'd in her ear, that I ador'd her more than ever, and was a dead man if she did not answer my love. She squeez'd my hand at these words, which gave me hopes I labour'd not in vain. The very next day she sent for me, and her beauty and conversation made me feel, in earnest, a flame I design'd but to pretend.

She at first begg'd my pardon for what had pass'd at *Naples*, alledging for excuse, the fear she was under of rendering her self suspected, had she taken the part of a *Frenchman*. She said so many things, and accompanied them with so many tears, that tho' her excuses were very weak, I receiv'd them as tho' they had been the best in the world, and promis'd her never more to think of what was past. The duke was the next theme we went upon, and she made great complaints of him, telling me, that tho' she had come so far from home for his sake, and had made him very rich presents, he car'd very little for her, and was in love with one of the king of *Spain's* mistresses.

It will easily be thought that I did not endeavour to clear him, but made use of his falshood as an argument to perswade her to leave him. But she told me, that she would bear it a little longer; and that the duke's departure being so near, she would not fall out with him now but would manage him so, that I should have no cause to be jealous.

I suffer'd my self to be deceiv'd by all these things she was pleas'd to tell me, and went away as much in love with her, as if she had been a vestal. Yet she deceiv'd me again, when she pretended to be displeas'd with the duke; and it will be seen now, if she had room to be offended with him on account of his being the king's rival.

I had already heard, that the king of *Spain* was a very amorous prince, and nothing was related to me so often at *Madrid*, as the several intrigues he had had. I was also inform'd, that it was generally said, that he kept a strange lady, whom he us'd to meet at the count *de* — ;

and that it was to the intercession of that stranger the duke *de Guise* owed his liberty. The duke himself had often mention'd her, in my hearing, but without naming her ; but as the king had many mistresses, I had not given my self much trouble to find out this.

The *Frenchman*, with whom I liv'd, who was a very inquisitive busy fellow, told me, he was acquainted at the house where the king us'd to visit his mistress ; whether, if I pleas'd, he would carry me, to see his majesty, as he was going to her. I accepted of the proposal, and we went together to the count's, and conceal'd our selves in a dark stair-case, which over-look'd a passage, through which the king was us'd to come ; whom presently after we saw in a civilian's habit, which disguis'd him, that had I not been told beforehand it was himself, I should never have known him. He tarry'd there but half an hour ; and after he was retir'd, we were going down stairs, when a servant bid us make room ; and looking up, I saw the lady, to whom my companion said the visit had been made. Her face was cover'd with a veil ; and passing by me, she pull'd me by the sleeve, and told me in *Italian*, she would gladly meet me in another place ; and walk'd by so fast, that I had not the leisure to reply, but was left with all the astonishment, one may well judge, such an adventure would occasion.

I did not doubt but she was desirous of having an intrigue with me ; and I found my vanity highly pleas'd, to see a lady belov'd by a king, had made me such advances. My only care now, was to find out who she was, and how I might speak with her.

I thought no body could inform me better than the *Neapolitan* lady, who made me believe she was her rival, and therefore waited on her, and talking of the king's amours, I ask'd her, which of the king's mistresses it was the duke *de Guise* had an inclination for ? she smil'd at my question, and desir'd to know why I ask'd it ? I reply'd, it was only out of curiosity : upon which she often renew'd her enquiry ; and having still return'd the same answer, come, said she, you do not deal ingenuously with me, I am better acquainted with your thoughts than you imagine ; the lady, whose acquaintance you so much long for, is the best friend I have ; I
know

know that she loves, and has spoken to you ; but if you are wise, you will let her alone ; and I dare hope, that as things stand between us, you will not prove false to me.

I at first was for denying she had ever spoke to me ; but hearing her repeat the very words, I confess'd the truth, promising I would make no search to discover who the lady was, nor endeavour to see her.

The duke *de Guise* also told me of it, seeming as well inform'd as his mistress, and advis'd me, to improve the opportunity, assuring me, that he would not traverse my designs ; but since he must shortly leave *Spain*, would freely resign her. I had, indeed, but too great an inclination to follow the duke's counsel ; but fearing to discover it to my rival, I seem'd to believe he rally'd, and did not express any desire of knowing her, fearing he would have told the *Neapolitan* lady of it, whose favour I was not willing to lose. So I remain'd in my ignorance ; and by the chimera's I fram'd to my self of my fair unknown, was depriv'd of the sweets I might have enjoy'd with my known mistress, whose charms I thought much inferior to hers.

I never well knew, till then, how fantastical a passion love is ; for tho' I had never seen this woman, and had only form'd to my self an aerial representation of her, I was nevertheless more taken up with her, than ever I had been with any mistress. It even seem'd to me, that my passion was so much the more violent, as I had a less clear idea of the object which caus'd it. Whereas, in loving a woman whom one has seen, the love squares it self according to the image which one preserves of her, 'twas here directly the reverse : I form'd the image of my mistress according to the love I had for her, and that made me believe her much more charming than if I had seen her.

My own experience convinc'd me then, that your knight-errants running up and down the world after invisible ladies, is not the most unlikely part of romances, since I my self little differ'd from those fabulous heroes, being wholly taken up with a lady whose charms I was wholly a stranger to.

This adventure was even carried on in a manner to renew in my person all that is surprizing in romances, for I receiv'd letters from the lady, which were very tender and very

sonate, wherein she promis'd I should not continue long in my ignorance and trouble, provided I should continue faithful to her, and never mention the advances she had made me.

It was very difficult for me to obey her, for whenever I had receiv'd a *billetdoux*, my mistress told me of it, and seem'd not to be ignorant of the contents. I remain'd a quarter of a year in this uncertainty, when at last a note was deliver'd to me, to let me know that the lady now design'd to disclose her self, and that she would be that day at the *Neapolitan* lady's.

Tho' I was heartily vex'd at her chusing that house for our interview, yet I had so great a desire to know my mistress, that regardless of all difficulties, I sail'd not being there at the time appointed. Then I found that the *Neapolitan* and the king's mistress, who had spoke to me and wrote to me, were the same person.

I then learnt that this lady having left *Naples*, to follow the duke *de Guise* into *Spain*, no sooner appear'd at court, but the king fell in love with her: the duke *de Guise*, who was not over nice in this point, had promoted their amour; and the service he had done his majesty therein, was recompens'd with his liberty: and he continu'd to be the king's rival, without either that prince suspecting it, or being in the least jealous.

I was ashamed to own my self deceiv'd; but pretended I had discover'd the design long ago, and only conniv'd at it, to see how far they would carry on the jest. But tho' the lady had believ'd me, the increase of my fondness would have undeceiv'd her; for I was more passionately fond of her than ever; whereas I had neglected her whilst I was taken up with the lady, who had spoke to me at the count's.

It is true that this woman appear'd to me to have new charms, when I represented to my self that it was she of whom I had form'd to my self so charming an idea. It seems that to her own beauty I had added all the allurements I before ascrib'd to the invisible lady; and this shews that love is always indebted to imagination, and that it is never more violent than when stir'd up by agreeable images; and at the same time it should convince us of the weakness and fallacy of the heart, which in this passion is most govern'd by fancy. Be

Be this as it will, I began to adore my *Neapolitan* as fresh, as if I had never courted her before; and the duke *de Guise's* sudden departure deliver'd me from a dangerous rival. I was surpriz'd at the indifferency with which they parted; and I perceiv'd the duke and his mistress were pretty near of the same character. The joy of returning to his native country drowned the grief he should have felt at leaving a woman, who had given him such demonstrations of her love; and she, on the other hand, was but little concern'd at his departure, having the glory of being the king's mistress, and the convenience in me of a lover fit to supply the duke's place. But what I most wonder'd at, was to see how unconcernedly they talk'd of this separation; for the duke plainly told her, that being oblig'd to quit her, he could not yield up his pretences to a more worthy person than my self, who had besides an unquestionable title to her affection from what I had suffer'd for her sake, which she heard with a temper I never thought parting lovers could have been masters of. Happy is he who is of such a disposition; how often have I had reason to wish my self such an one, for all my misfortunes have proceeded from my loving with too much constancy and tenderness. I was born for another age than this, and should have been more happy and more wise in those times, when in love there was more truth and less artifice.

The *Neapolitan* appear'd to me so entirely a new mistress, that I forgot even her nature, and set my self to make love to her as if all that happen'd to me at *Naples* had been a dream. When I examine into the cause of this inconsiderateness I can attribute it to nothing but my vanity, for I confess that I was pleas'd by the manner of that lady's reconciling her self to me. If I had judg'd rightly of it, I should have attributed this reconciliation only to the same fickleness which formerly caus'd her to leave me; but it was ordain'd that I should be blind and always this woman's bubble.

Another cause of my inconsiderateness was my having no manner of employment at *Madrid*, and the difficulty of seeing other women. I wanted business, yet fear'd to bring my self into trouble. These things engag'd me to the person I am speaking of, and I could not have made
choice

choice of one less proper for procuring me the repose I expected. It is true, she knew how to employ my leisure, but it was only by the troubles she brought me into.

The duke *de Guise* was scarce gone, when she began to grieve for his absence. While this humour lasted, I never had a good word from her ; for she accus'd me as the cause of his going, and of her consenting to it.

When I saw this, I began to be angry too ; and made the intrigue she had with the king, a pretext to my displeasure, saying, I would have all her heart, or none. So we were continually quarrelling for three weeks together ; after which she became more complaisant, and gave over speaking of the absent duke, as I also did teasing her about the king, and we were good friends.

But this peace lasted not long, for visiting her one evening, I found her in a great fury, and having enquir'd into the reason, she express'd a great jealousy of one of her rivals ; for, as I said before, the king of *Spain* had many mistresses besides her.

I was the more surpriz'd to see her in this passion, having, till then, always found her very easy in relation to the other woman the king lov'd.

I ask'd her, what new accident had happen'd ? she told me, she had no fresh reason to hate her ; but that, upon several considerations, she had concluded it was a shame to her to have but a share in the king's favour.

Tho' this scruple came, methoughts, a little too late, I would not let slip so fair an opportunity of perswading her not to have any farther intrigue with the king. I represented to her, that she was rich enough, and so not obliged to be complaisant to a prince she did not love, and who could only please her by the pension he granted her.

She did not relish this discourse, but told me, that, on the contrary, she would use her utmost endeavours to drive her rival from a post which she could suffer no body in but her self ; and was resolv'd to be the sole possessor of his heart.

I farther represented to her, that it was impossible, seeing he was of so fickle a temper, that he each day added a new mistress to the many old ones he had already ; but was answer'd, that she would not desist, and that I
must

must help her in it too, for that no body could do it better than me.

I was willing to know how I could assist her in supplanting her rival ; she told me, I must pretend to be in love with her whom she had most reason to fear. The king, saith she, will not fail of being jealous, as soon as he shall know that you make love to her. I will take care he shall be acquainted with it, and will manage matters so, that the king's anger shall fall only on my rival.

I told her she was mad, to engage me in an affair which certainly would be more fatal to me, than the person she had a mind to destroy. She reply'd, in a passion, if I would not do it, she would inform the king of what intercourse there was between us ; and that as soon as she should mention one word of it to him, I should be ruin'd.

I look'd upon what she said to be so extravagant and ridiculous, that I scarce thought her to be in earnest ; but she continuing to insist upon what she had propos'd, I began plainly to perceive it was too serious a matter.

I was extremely perplex'd, not knowing which to do ; but at last I chose to comply with her, thinking that would be the safest, because it requir'd more time, during which her mind might alter ; whereas by denial, I expos'd my self to sudden ruin.

I told her then, that I desir'd she would let me know how I should proceed towards making love to this person. She said, that would not be difficult, for she would bring us acquainted ; that tho' she was her rival, and that she had a mind to ruin her, yet she behav'd as if she was one of her friends, and frequently visited her.

We then agreed, that she should invite that lady to her house, and I should meet her there. The matter was executed as we had projected, except, that I did not pretend to be in love, because I soon was so in earnest.

This person was of *Catalonia*, about eighteen or twenty years of age, whom I shall call *Elionora*. She was of the sweetest temper, and the least subtle in the world ; she was not of quality, but was brought to *Madrid* at the time of the revolt of the *Catalans* against Spain

Spain, by the wife of the governor, who was murder'd at that famous revolution. This lady brought her to court; and the king was passionately in love with her, without being able to obtain any favour. This prince only knew her to be chaste; for every body else thought nothing could be refus'd a monarch.

Being the most beautiful of the king's mistresses, she was therefore the chief object of the *Neapolitan* lady's jealousy: and one day as she reproach'd the king with his kindness for *Elihora*, he confess'd to her, that he never could obtain the least favour from her; and that he began to be tir'd with fruitless endeavours.

This it was that put her so out of humour; and fearing her modesty might gain her his respect, she resolv'd to ruin her, by making him believe, that she was chaste only to him. For that is the natural disposition of women, who have something in their own conduct which is exceptionable; they hate and discredit those whose example condemns them. I knew not, that it was for this reason my *Neapolitan* was for having me appear to be in love with her, and did not learn it till a long time afterwards.

I was charm'd with her beauty, at the first sight, and being weary of my mistress's insupportable humours, my heart readily embrac'd a change.

Elihora appear'd to me one worthy of my love, and as it had been agreed by us, that I should declare my self her lover, I readily made her that declaration. She answer'd me in general terms; and at last assur'd me, if the passion I shew'd was sincere, she would not give me any cause to repent it.

We appointed a meeting in the same place the next day, when the *Neapolitan* lady, whose interest it was to promote our amour, made some excuse and withdrew.

Elihora, seeing we were alone, unbosom'd her self to me; and having protested, that she never had granted the king any favour, assur'd me, she would observe the same conduct with every man whatever; and would never engage her self but to one, who should value her enough to make her his wife.

Thes

These sentiments did but increase the love I had for her from the first time I saw her ; and I answer'd, that I could wish my self worthy that honour ; but must own to her, my estate in *France* was but small, and what I had in *Poland* belong'd to my children ; and, in a word, it would be to deceive her to promise to marry her.

She reply'd, riches was not what she desir'd ; and that she could be content with necessaries. I told her, she must have more aspiring thoughts ; and that all I could do for her service, was to advise her to match her self to advange. She said, it was only with that design she had entertain'd the king's addressess, tho' she knew her reputation suffer'd by it ; but being friendless, and being not conscious of any guilt she had committed, she hop'd heav'n would not forsake her.

This made me call my *Carmelite* to mind, and I found their sentiments so conformable, that I wept at the sad remembrance of that unfortunate amour.

Elisbona was surpriz'd to see me weep ? and having ask'd the reason, I told her, it was a consequence of the esteem I had for her ; and the despair I was in, at not being able to answer, as I could wish, to sentiments so noble and so virtuous as hers.

This reply pleas'd her, and I soon perceiv'd she had a greater esteem for, and confidence in me. She told me, that since I was willing to counsel her, she would accept my offer, provided I would advise her how she should obtain of the king of *Spain*, that he would make her rich enough to espouse me, without being a charge to me ; for, said she, I must confess I fancy you more than any man I know ; I have a great desire to live in *France*, and wish for no greater satisfaction than to spend my life there with you.

How pleas'd soever I was with these words, I continu'd to tell her, I saw little likelihood of our being marry'd ; which I repeated so often, that she was offended at it. Do not think, said she, my being so willing to have you proceeds from a want of lovers ; I might find enough who would not deny me, and one, among the rest, whose quality would dazle the eyes of any one but my self. Then she inform'd me, that the
eldest

eldest son to the duke *de* ——— laid close siege to her, and, had she consented, would have stole her, but that she had still refus'd it.

By the concern I was in at hearing this, I found I had but too great an inclination for her; however, seeing that I could not marry her, I was so far master of my self, as to tell her, that such an offer was not to be slighted, and that I would use my endeavours to promote the match.

There, I think, this visit and conversation ended; and the *Neapolitan* lady having ask'd me, how matters went? I reply'd, there was nothing to be done with her. This increas'd her rage, and confirm'd her in the resolution she had taken to undo her; to which end she went, and told the king, that maid who was so proud to him, could stoop to other people; and that I boasted of some favours I had obtain'd from her.

The king, who had a real esteem for *Elionora*, inform'd her of what he had heard; and she believing I had done her that injury, vow'd it was all false, and begg'd his majesty to avenge her.

Not thinking she had done enough, she lover, she had told me of, against me; who he would make me recant, or would cut my tongue out. I, in the mean while, did not in the least suspect my danger, and was fill'd with love and admiration for a lady, who was then contriving my ruin.

One night, as I was returning homewards, I was set upon by six men, who having struck up my heels, and thereby prevented my drawing my sword and defending my self, bound me, and carry'd me into a house; where the first person I saw was *Elionora*.

She coming to me, in an unexpressible rage, bid me repair her honour, or expect to be hewn in a thousand pieces. Upon that, in came the duke *de* ———'s son, with a dagger in his hand, who seem'd unwilling to hear me speak, and desirous to have me dispatch'd immediately.

All I could do in the danger I was in, was to cast a languishing eye upon *Elionora* to implore her assistance; for I had not strength enough to utter a word. I know not whether my looks mov'd her compassion, but hold-
ing

ing my adversary's arm, speak then, wretch, said she, how have I deserv'd those malicious aspersions you have cast on me ?

This brought me to my self again, and judging somebody must have misrepresented me to her, I began not to be so much afraid ; but looking tenderly on her, said, who, I, madam ! that I should have injur'd your reputation ! you cannot believe it ; all the crime I am conscious of, is of having, perhaps, too great an esteem for you, and having taken too much pleasure in publishing the praises you deserve.

I spoke these words with such an honest assurance, as inclin'd *Elionora* to believe me : but I forgot I was in his presence who design'd to marry her ; and I continu'd my discourse with so much passion, that by clearing my self in the lady's opinion, I grew guilty in that of her lover. He concluded, rightly, that I must needs be in love with her, to speak to her as I did ; and therefore he would still be interrupting me, saying, I must die.

She answer'd, it was fit I should be heard ; and accus'd me with what the *Neapolitan* lady had told me ; and I vow'd to her, that it was an invention of her own, occasion'd by her malice and jealousy. This undeceiv'd her quite, and being ask'd by her, whether I would maintain what I said before the king ? I reply'd. I would stand to my words, not only in his majesty's presence, but before all the world ; and could not help accompanying my protestations with tender and passionate expressions, frequently saying, that I ador'd her, that I lov'd no one besides her ; that I desir'd her to take my life, if my death would be agreeable to her.

All this confirm'd her lover's suspicion, who looking spitefully on her, what then, madam, said he, do you suffer your self to be talk'd to at this rate : or have you sent for this man hither, only to let me know that he is my happy rival ? why, reply'd she, do you not see that he is beside himself, that the fear of death hath turn'd his brain, and that he speaks to me with so much passion, only to obtain the life he fears to lose.

Far

Far from seeing, by what she said, that I had made a very imprudent step in shewing my love in presence of a rival, who had it in his power to take away my life, and who had all this while held his poniard to my throat, I reflected only on the affront given me, in saying, I was afraid of death ; no no, answer'd I, I am not afraid of dying ; I know what I say, and were I unbound, addressing my self to my rival, we should soon see which of us had the better heart.

At these words the coward came up again to have stabb'd me, and would certainly have done it, had not the generous *Elionora* stopp'd him, and plac'd her self between us. The *Spaniard* seeing she took my part, went away threatening her, and carry'd away those that seiz'd me. She did what she could to call him back, but in vain, and so we were left alone. Then she untty'd me, and blam'd me very much for having declar'd my love in so unfit a season.

I comforted her as well as I could, and desir'd her to excuse my error, since the vexation I was in, to think she should have thought me guilty of so great a baseness, had quite distract'd me. I promis'd her I would let the king know the whole truth, and would revenge her quarrel with the *Neapolitan* lady. But she said, we must let that alone for the present, and only think of means to perswade my rival, that all which I had said, was occasion'd only by my being but little master of my self, in the danger with which I saw my self threatned.

I assur'd her I would obey every thing she should command for that purpose ; the first of which she told me, should be, not to see her any more. It was indeed the hardest she could have laid upon me ; yet I submitted to it, promising to observe her orders, tho' with the forfeit of my life.

In the mean while, the duke *de* ———'s son had quitted her in such a passion, because she had not suffer'd him to stab me, that he gave out, he had undeniable proofs that what I had said was true. The king came to so hear of it, and this having confirm'd my *Neapolitan* mistress's slander, he easily believ'd her guilty. So she was every where defam'd, and I became the innocent
causet

cause of the wrong she suffer'd. I was sore afflicted at it ; and tho' I had promis'd never to see her more, yet I made several vain attempts to do it, designing, if I could, to have offer'd my service to her, in vindicating her honour, or taking vengeance of her enemies.

The king being fully perswaded I had enjoy'd her, thought, at length, she might have the same complaisance for him, he redoubled his applications to her ; so that it was thought he had forgot his other mistresses.

Thus it is that a vicious love is increas'd by that which would extinguish an honourable flame. Whether his majesty prevail'd, or not, I cannot tell ; but she was marry'd a fortnight or three weeks after to a *Spanish* lord : and the wedding was scarce over, when the king gave him the government of *M——*, ordering him to his post, while his lady remain'd at court.

I had then broke off with my *Neapolitan* mistress, and vow'd never to see her more, after the danger she had expos'd me to ; but she us'd such means to entice me back again, that I once more yielded to the same reasons, which formerly reconcil'd me to her, I mean, the leisure I found I had, and the difficulty of seeing other women ; so I began to renew my old acquaintance with her.

The king having of late been very cold to her, she told me, she was resolv'd to refuse his pension, and return to *Naples*. The first of these I confirm'd her in, but dissuaded her from the last ; for I could not quit *Madrid*, and fear'd, that she being gone, I should want an amusement, and it was impossible for me to live without an amour ; so great is a man's misfortune who has contracted these ill habits, which I would advise every one to avoid, who has any respect for his ease and quiet.

She yielded to stay at *Madrid*, but I soon repented my being the occasion of it ; for she renew'd her jealousies against *Eliana*, and told me, I must lend a helping hand to her undoing. It was in vain that I represented to her, how odious and unjust her design was. The more I would perswade her, the more obstinate she grew ; so we fell out again, for I would never comply with her desires.

Seeing

Seeing I had left her, she found means to charm the young lord, who would have kill'd me. His love to his former mistress turn'd to an implacable hatred, upon her preventing his murdering me, which was improv'd by her being marry'd, and the complacency she had for the king; all which rendred him the fittest person in the world, to promote the *Neapolitan* lady's designs.

Being both of a mean spirit, and cruel temper, they resolv'd on no less than stabbing her. I was inform'd of this by one of her servants, who having been the confident of our former amours, had still retained a kindness for me, and us'd to inform me what his mistress did.

Being acquainted by him of the measures they took for the executing their detestable design, I thought it my duty to oppose it; first, because I stood indebted for my life to her; then, on the account of the esteem I still retain'd for that generous lady: and besides, I was of myself enough a gentleman, to have hazarded my person for the prevention of an ill design, had I been led to it by neither of the foremention'd motives.

The first thing I did in order to it, was to acquaint *Elionora* with the plot, and to counsel her to give the king immediate notice. She did; but having own'd to his majesty whence she had it, he fancy'd I continu'd visiting her; and this jealousy made him believe I had done it only to make her value me more, and therefore gave no great heed to the advice. However, he spoke of it to the duke de———, who having told his son I had discover'd his conspiracy, that young lord assur'd him it was a groundless imagination, adding, he hop'd he had not so ill an opinion of him, as to think he could be guilty of so base an action, as murdering a woman,

My zeal had no other effect, than to render me suspected both to those to whom I had given the advice, and to those who had laid the horrible design, which I purpos'd to defeat; the one, believing me guilty of slander; and the others resolving, through my death, to make a way to that of *Elionora's*.

It was soon after she sent me a messenger to bid me take care of my self, for that his majesty had given orders
to

to have me apprehended ; but I conceal'd my self so well, that I avoided both those who were commanded to seize me, and those who watched to take away my life.

Any one but my self would have made his escape ; but being perswaded I was the only person that could prevent the intended assassination, the desire of preserving a lady I lov'd prevail'd more with me than the care of my own safety. I remain'd at *Madrid*, having caus'd a report that I was fled ; so the duke de——'s son, and his mistress, seeing no body stood in their way, resolv'd afresh on the execution of their project.

It will perhaps, be wondred at, that they should be so strongly bent on it, since the advices I had given must needs have discover'd them to be the authors, had it succeeded ; but their passion so blinded them, that they did not foresee their danger.

In the mean while, I was very much embarrass'd to find means to avert the fatal blow : having no longer the liberty of appearing, nor acting, and not being able to get any further intelligence from the domestick, who gave the former advice ; I thought at last of disguising my self like an *Algerine*-slave, and putting on a false beard, which, with my cloaths, so alter'd my countenance, that I scarce knew my self again. In that dress I went to *Elionora*, and told her, I could not abandon her in the peril she was in ; that I desir'd her never to go abroad without good company, and to conceal me in her house, for I knew her life was aim'd at, and I was resolv'd either to save her, or die in the attempt.

She did not doubt but her danger was real, and pretended her self ill, to have a pretext for staying at home ; she also told her servants, that I was a slave, who had brought her a message from her husband : and before a week was over, she felt the good effects of her precaution.

Some arm'd men, in the evening, assaulted her servants ; and pursu'd them into the very house, and having kil'd some of them, they became masters of the gate, and soon after were so of all the rooms. The first thing they did, was to come up to the chamber where she lay ;
and

and I alone opposed their violence, which I did with so much vigour, that the rest of the family, animated thereby, seconded me; and after a sharp dispute, in which two of the villains were kill'd, the rest run away. We made after them in the street, where the first I met was the duke *de* ———'s son, who waited for his companions; being himself their leader in this honourable enterprize. At that sight, I confess, I was no longer my own master, but with one blow of my scymeter laid him down at my feet.

The watch hearing the noise, came immediately to us, and taking me, and one of the lady's servants, carry'd us to prison. We were presently examin'd, and I had the good fortune not to be known. All the witnesses justify'd what I had done, and I was set at liberty, to the great affliction of the duke *de* ———, who was desirous to revenge his son's death; but he was advis'd not to make the story publick, which was so injurious to his son's memory. I, that while, had the pleasure to hear those blam'd who had neglected my advice, and my self pity'd, as having been forc'd to fly, for being too honest. As for the *Neapolitan* lady, she had disappear'd as soon as she heard her lover was kill'd; and was, I suppose, return'd to *Naples*.

The *Algerine*-slave's bravery was become the town-talk; and I was taken no more notice of, than if I had been in *France*, where every body thought me to be, so well was I disguis'd.

Elionora, who alone knew me, could not tell how to express her gratitude: she forc'd me to accept of a golden cabinet, wherein she had put a great quantity of gold and jewels; and not content therewith, she said, she would acquaint the king with it, that he might recompence me according to my deserts: but I bid her have a care what she did, since that prince would certainly be extream jealous, should he hear what I had done for her; and thus she would ruin me, by endeavouring to do me service. She took my advice, and hearing me talk of returning to *France*, she conjur'd me not to leave her, alledging, that the danger was over, and that I might now, without any hazard, leave off my disguise, and appear as I had done before.

I com-

I comply'd with her, only desiring she would permit me sometimes to put it on, that I might with more safety wait on her; to which she readily consented, my important services having procur'd me her love. So I remain'd at *Madrid* under two different shapes, which expos'd me to several new adventures.

P A R T IV.

IT may have already appear'd more than once, in reading the ingenious recital, I here make, of the adventures of my life, that men frequently meet with as extraordinary accidents as the writers of romances have invented: but this has not as yet appear'd so visibly, as it will do in the sequel of my history, especially in the accidents that befel me, while at *Madrid* I play'd the double part, of a gentleman, and a *Algerine*-slave. The reader will, no doubt, be apt to take it all for an agreeable fiction; but having promis'd to give him a sincere relation of all my amours, I must write as well those which do exceed his belief, as those which may seem more probable, and I must beg of him to give an equal faith to all. The adventures of my life have been different, according to the age and times in which they happen'd; and I believe this difference will be perceiv'd in reading these memoirs.

Being resolv'd or rather forc'd, to remain at *Madrid*, because I had not yet acquitted my self of the prince's commission, I appear'd in publick as soon, as the business about the duke de———'s son was ended, and the persuasion every one was in, that an *Algerine*-slave had kill'd him, had freed me from all suspicion.

I visited *Don Lewis de Haro* again, and had also audience of the king, and acquainted his majesty I had been forc'd to abscond, to avoid the dangerous effects of his anger, at the advices I had formerly given. The king made me a very good reception, and, out of a pretended kindness, counsel'd me not to have any thing to do with *Elionora*, whose acquaintance had involv'd
me

me into so many misfortunes; besides, continu'd he, the conversation of that woman will soon or late prove fatal, her husband, tho' absent, being extream jealous of her. I knew well enough whence proceed the king's care of my safety, and as I was assur'd of seeing, under the habit of the *Algerine* slave, the person whose acquaintance he would have me avoid, I scrupl'd not to promise his majesty that I would follow his advice.

I appear'd all day in a *French* habit, and sometimes at night put on my *Algerine* disguise when I would see *Elionora*. This lasted some time, but the king hearing of it, grew jealous, and told her, he wondered the slave should tarry so long at *Madrid*, since his liberty had been the first reward he had receiv'd.

Elionora told the king, the occasion of his stay was a little traffick he made with the money her gratitude had induc'd her to give him. The king resolv'd to be rid of his supposed rival, told her, he would send her two thousand ducats more, to present him with, and that he desir'd her to send him away. The next time, I saw her, she gave me the two thousand ducats and acquainting me with what the king had said, begg'd me not to visit her, nor put on my *Algerine* habit any more, which I promis'd, and she made the king believe the slave was gone.

Indeed it was with no little sorrow, that I saw my self wholly depriv'd of her conversation. She shar'd in my grief; however, since I still remain'd at *Madrid*, we were comforted with the hopes of another meeting: but she made me swear, that as long as the king should forbid it, I would not bring her into trouble, by endeavouring to speak with her.

Thus did I again relapse into an idleness which had been the occasion of all my former engagements, but soon found fresh employment in a new amour. I had contracted some familiarity with a *Spaniard*, whose quality I shall conceal, and call him *Don Antonio Manrique*, that these memoirs meerly design'd for the publick good, may not give offence to any one. This man had a wife, whom the better likewise to conceal, I shall call *Donna Isabella*. As *Manrique* was well pleas'd that I should see his wife, I frequently convers'd with her, but never in private, her husband or servant being always present.

present. Among other things, she talk'd much of the *Algerine* slave, saying, she had seen him once, and that his air and presence, as well as the glorious action he had done, shew'd him to be no mean person.

I imagin'd by this, that she knew of my having been disguis'd; and, the better to clear my doubt, reply'd, I had been very intimate with him, while he was at *Madrid*. What then, said she, is he gone? she spoke these words with some concern, which still supposing she was not ignorant who he was, I took to be affected. I answer'd, he was gone, and would never be seen in *Spain* any more; at which she felt a visible grief, and told me, she would gladly have had the conversation of so extraordinary a man.

I knew not what to think of the sorrow she was in at the slave's departure; but having still the same thoughts as before, believ'd she had a mind to be better acquainted with me, and design'd, by that feint, to inform me of her intentions.

But I was mistaken; she had not the least suspicion that I was the slave; it was him only she was so earnest for, as I soon after found. Taking my leave, I told her, that I was oblig'd to her on my friend's score; and if she would appoint the time and place, where she might be found alone, I would send him to her: she pull'd me back, asking me whether he really was still at *Madrid*. This action was so natural, that I was now convinc'd she had taken a fancy to the slave, having no knowledge that I was the person, who had appear'd under that disguise. I was confirm'd in these second thoughts; when having told her, that I knew where he liv'd, and would bring him to her when she pleas'd; she answer'd I might spare my self that trouble, by letting her know his lodging. I reply'd, he liv'd at a merchant's, whom I nam'd to her; to whom I presently went, and pray'd, him, if any one came to enquire for an *Algerine*, to answer, he was not at home, and bid them come again the next night, when he would certainly be within.

Two days after I visited my merchant, who told me, no body had come as yet. This made me once more think, that she meant to my self the passion she express'd for the slave; and I waited on her, in hopes of a

fuller discovery. It fell out there was no body by ; and to make use of that opportunity I took no notice of what she had said concerning the *Algerine*, but declar'd my passion to her. She entertain'd my love with an insupportable pride, assuring me, she would acquaint her husband with my insolence ; and that if ever I presum'd to set my foot within her doors, I should repent it. Then, without giving me the leisure to reply, she rose up, and push'd me out of the room, as tho I would have done her violence.

Her husband entring in that very moment, she told him, that I would have debauch'd her ; on which he swore, that were it not in respect to the prince I serv'd, he would have my throat cut. I reply'd, my guilt was not so great as he imagin'd ; that what I had said to his lady tended neither to force nor seduce her, but was only such compliments as were us'd in *France* to be bestow'd on all women ; and as a proof that I meant honestly, I would never return to his house. *Manrique* seem'd satisfy'd with these excuses, and I took my leave of him.

I was intrag'd at his wife's behaviour, and resolv'd to be more wary for the future, being a country where love-intrigues are very perilous. Yet methought, I was the more charm'd with her for it ; I had fancy'd her that day fairer than she us'd to seem, and I found that love is increas'd by nothing so much as opposition.

I saw but little likelihood of my getting into the good graces of a woman who had thus us'd me, when the merchant, to whose house I gave direction to enquire for the slave, came to give me notice, that a woman was come to speak with the *Algerine* ; and, according to my orders, he had desir'd her to call again the next evening I could not doubt but *Isabella* had sent this message, and went the next day to the merchant's, where I remain'd under my disguise, waiting for the messenger's return : and accordingly a *Duena* came, and assur'd me, that if I pleas'd she would carry me to a beautiful lady, who had an earnest desire to see me. I answer'd, I would readily submit to her directions ; and she, without replying, beckon'd to me that I should follow her. I did, and having gone through many by-alleys, we stopp'd under a low balcony, out of which, after the *Duena* had cough'd once

once or twice, a rope-ladder was thrown down; I was bid to get up, and obey'd hastily, being spurr'd on by the impatience I had to know if it really was *Isabella*.

I enter'd into the room, and by the means of a dim light, knew her to be the same. She told me, that tho' she had never seen me but once, as I pass'd along the street, she had been extreamly taken with my good me'n, and that the heroick action I had done perswaded her, she might entrust me with her reputation. I could scarce be perswaded but she knew me; yet to be further satisfy'd, I spoke in a feign'd voice, as I had always done while I wore that habit: I reply'd, how much oblig'd soever I was to her, for the good opinion she had of me, yet I could not but let her know that I had been acquainted how she had dealt with one of my friends, naming my own name, whom she had cruelly injur'd, tho' he was guilty of nothing but an inclination to love her.

What then, answer'd she, did he tell you of it? yes, madam, reply'd I, and that has something abated the esteem I had for you. Ah! said she, do you then know me? I told her, I did; and that my friend had shew'd her to me one day as she was coming out of church. And where were you then, cry'd she, that I did not see you? I reply'd, she went by in such haste, that she took no notice of her admirers. But continu'd she, I was told you was gone. It is true, answer'd I, that it is thought so, some reasons having oblig'd me to obscond, but through the desire of knowing the woman I had so strange a character of from my friend, I now ventur'd abroad. She ask'd me, if I had found her so despicable a person. I assur'd her, I had done justice to her beauty, and was very sorry that so handsom a lady should be cruel. Accuse me not of my cruelty, said she, you see what hazards I run for your sake, and I were undone, did you inform your friend of all this. Never mistrust me, madam, reply'd I; but if you would oblidge me, let me know what reason you had to use him so ill. She answer'd, I was my self the occasion of it, and that ever since she had seen me, she had taken an aversion for all other men, and having no inclination for my friend, had been glad, at once, to get rid of him, and give her husband a good opinion of her virtue. I enquir'd into the cause of her hatred to

him ; and she reply'd, she could not fancy him : that there was no reasoning upon inclination. but she hated him as much as she lov'd me.

This discourse indeed surpriz'd me, to see that the same woman, who found me so unworthy of her esteem, while I was habited like a gentleman, should have such a fondness for me, under the nasty garb of a despicable slave. But our passions are wholly unaccountable, especially those of women. My displeasure was so great to hear my self thus despis'd, that I was tempted to discover who I was ; and tho' I forbore it at the present, I could not keep from contradicting her bad opinion of me, being as jealous of the slave's happiness, as if it had not been my self.

This vanity hindred me from answering *Isabella's* passion as I should have done, and she soon perceiv'd that my chiefest care was to give her better thoughts of my friend. She was so dissatisfy'd at it, that she told me, I did not deserve the honour she did me, since my zeal was greater for my friend than for her. I perceiv'd my error, and endeavour'd to repair my fault ; but she said, she dar'd not trust me ; and if I desir'd to regain her favour, I must conceal this adventure from my friend, and not once name him in her presence. I promis'd I would obey her, and she said, we must put off our farther conversation to another time, and that I should hear from her the next day. It was very unwillingly that I parted ; but being forc'd to comply, I return'd to my merchant's.

Never was any one perplex'd with such various thoughts as I was after this adventure ; and the reader will wonder at what I am going to relate, if he considers not, that self-love and self-conceit are still our predominant passions.

Whatever reflections I made, it was impossible for me to perswade my self to take advantage of the weakness of this woman, under another name and another habit than my own. I look'd upon it as a disgrace to be indebted to a disguise, and resolv'd if I should be call'd to another meeting, not to go in the habit of a slave, but in my own dress.

I pass'd all the day at the merchant's, and the same *Duena* came in the evening to inquire again for the slave.

I was

I was dress'd after the *French* fashion, and as richly as I could ; but when they told me the *Duena* ask'd for me, I put on my false beard, and a vest, which cover'd my other cloathes, and thus habited, I follow'd her ; but before I got up the ladder, I left them in the street, and so appear'd in the balcony in my *French* habit, which was the same I had on when *Isabella* complain'd of me to her husband.

She came to receive me, but scarce was I enter'd the chamber, when knowing me again, she screamed out, saying, she was undone and betray'd. I conjur'd her not to make any noise, and she came to her self again. I see, said she then, that the villain has greater kindness for you than me, since he has reveal'd this secret to you ; but if you love me, you will assist me in being reveng'd of that perfidious wretch, and that is the only way for you to gain my esteem.

I will revenge you, answer'd I, in what manner you please. I love you above all that can be dear to me, and had he a thousand lives, I would sacrifice them all to your resentment ; only let me know how so base a man can have merited a heart you refuse me. Go, reply'd she, and fetch me his head, and you shall see what I will do for you.

I could not but smile at this odd adventure, and now thought it time to discover my self. I cannot, said I, madam, bring you his head otherwise than you see it, for this slave is an imaginary person, no other than my self, who was disguis'd under that habit, and who was here yesterday, and who alone deserves your kindness.

Isabella was so astonish'd, that she scarce heard what I said. Her surprize being at last over, she told me, it was impossible, and that before she could believe me, she must see me in the same habit I had then. I answer'd, it was no very hard task, that I had left it under the balcony, and if she would give me leave I would go fetch it, and thereby convince her of the truth of what I had said. She seem'd to consent, and I immediately went for my dress ; but I was scarce down, e're she pull'd up the ladder, and withdrew. I was surpriz'd at it, and believ'd she still continu'd in the opinion, that the slave and I were two different persons, and that I had come

in his place only to take advantage of the passion she had for him.

It was so dark I could not tell where I was, and being desirous to know the house, I resolv'd to remain there till it was day, having first put on my false beard and vest ; but I had not waited long before I heard a noise, and saw some men with drawn swords in their hands, just upon me. I threw off my disguise, which was troublesome to me, and drawing my sword, made a pass at the foremost of them, and before the rest could come about me, made the best of my way home.

Manrique was the man I had wounded ; for as I have since been inform'd, it was her own house where I had spoke to her, and that I was no sooner down, but his wife, enrag'd to be thus impos'd on, went to him, saying, I had attempted to climb into the balcony, and was she believ'd, still in the street, with the same design. He immediately took fire, and attended by some of her servants, was come out to murder me ; but the care they, took of their wounded master had favour'd my escape.

They took up the beard and vest, which they carry'd to *Isabella*, who remembring that was the very habit she had seen her *Algerine* in, and comparing his shape and features with mine, began to believe what I had said might be true.

Manrique, whether he thought he had not sufficient evidence to prosecute me, or whether he thought it would be more for his honour to disguise it, made no mention of me in this affair ; but it was reported, that the same *Algerine* who had kill'd the duke de ———'s son at *Elionora's*, had wounded him. But every body thinking him gone, took all this to be a fancy of *Manrique's*, who was content with owing me a secret grudge, tho' his wound had prov'd but very slight. Fearing the fatal consequences of a *Spaniard's* resentment, I still kept on my guard ; but I was freed from that care, by a person I should least have expected it from, and this made me better acquainted with the cunning artifices, and odd humours of women.

Isabella, in the mean while, being convinc'd I was the same with the slave she doted on, felt for me the
raging

raging passion she formerly had for him, and heartily griev'd at having rendred her husband jealous of me. She then thought of several ways to correct her error, and at last pitch'd upon a very strange one; which being resolv'd on, her next care was how she should see me, and acquaint me at once with her plot, and the love she had for me.

She easily obtain'd her desire; and having understood I was at the merchants, came there, to my great wonder, habited like a *Duena*. She began by protesting she was no ways concern'd in her husband's intentions to murder me; but I being better inform'd, would not let her go on, till she had confess'd the truth, which at last she did; as I have just related it; and then continu'd her discourse in this manner.

It is true, I took a fancy to that slave, not knowing it was you; but forgive that particular fondness, for after all it was you that caus'd it, and you shall find henceforward your self to be the only object of my love. I have rendred you suspicious to my husband, but I know a certain means whereby you may regain his confidence, if you will but follow my advice. You must endeavour to meet him at some of your common acquaintances: there you shall wholly disown to him that you ever had any design upon my honour, and protest that it is a false accusation I charg'd you with, finding you were acquainted with an intrigue I had with the *Algerine*. You may desire him, for his greater satisfaction, to examine the *Duena*, whose name is *Beatrix*, and I will instruct her how she shall answer him, and justify you.

The project seem'd to me something dangerous, and I ask'd her, whether she had well weigh'd all the ill consequences that might attend it. She desir'd me to do what she wou'd have me, and assur'd me I should not receive any injury by it. I told her I would consider of it, but could not take my resolution so suddenly, and so we parted.

The reader cannot here make any reflection, which I did not then make. I could not comprehend how this woman could be willing that her husband should think her false to him, as he must naturally do if her design

took effect ; and besides, I fear'd, that did I succeed, it would but make him the more jealous, and thus I should be depriv'd of the advantage I expected by it. But after all, I thought I might trust her, since she ought to know her husband better than I did, and I judg'd it worth my while to venture something in order to free my self from the continual apprehensions I lay under. But, to speak the truth, my love for this woman how unworthy soever was the chief motive that induc'd me to it, and flatter'd with the esteem she had for me, while she took me for an *Algerine*, I was impatient of confirming it under my true shape.

I sought for an opportunity of entertaining *Manrique*, which having found, I told him, I had something of moment to impart to him. Then, seeing he was willing to hear me, I did, according to his wife's directions, assure him, that, as for my part, I never had any engagement with her, but being the only man who was acquainted with her, intrigue with the *Algerine*, the slave having own'd it to me, she had charg'd me with this false Accusation, on purpose that he should not give any credit to the notice I might have given him of her ill conduct.

Manrique, upon hearing this, embrac'd me with all imaginable kindness, saying, he was now no longer at a loss, to know why he who had wounded him, had let fall a vest ; but that besides, a false beard had been found, which made him mistrust that some body else was come to see his wife under that disguise. Then he ask'd me, how long it was since the slave had absented himself ? I answer'd, he had left *Madrid* the next day after his being wounded. and that as for the false beard, he must not wonder at that, the *Algerine* using them sometimes when he desir'd not to be known. *Manrique* seem'd now to be fully satisfy'd, but said, if I would oblige him thoroughly, I must contrive the slave's return to *Madrid*, that he might be reveng'd of him. I promis'd to use my endeavours, and he begg'd me to remain his friend, and visit him with the same freedom I formerly had done, assuring me he would not speak of this to his wife, till he could produce the slave to confront her.

The

The easiness with which he seem'd to credit what I had said, made me suspect his sincerity, and it was some time before I dar'd either trust him or his spouse; but my eager love did at last overcome my jealousies.

I continu'd my Visits, being free from Suspicion, had the liberty of conversing with his Wife, and thus we enjoy'd for some time the fruits of our artifice. But *Manique* grew at length impatient of the slave's absence: I told him, I could not help it; and that let me write to *Algier* never so often, I had no answer, which made me believe he was dead. But this did not content him, and he told me, that since I could not hear from him, I must help him to get rid of his wife; that he would tax her with what I had inform'd him of, and that I must stand to what I had said, and when that was prov'd, he could easily be divorc'd.

I conjur'd him not to carry things to that extremity; but he was inexorable, and all I could do was to acquaint *Isabella* with her husband's intentions: then it was that the subtilty of this woman fully displaid it self. She heard me without the least concern, the Plot being so contriv'd, that I was to be the object of her husband's revenge, either because she never lov'd me, or else her love was at an end; or that the interest of recovering the good opinion of her husband appear'd to her preferable to every thing else. Her answer was, that she neither fear'd me, nor her husband, and knew well enough how to disappoint our designs.

I was astonish'd at this reply, and thinking she had mistaken me, repeated over again what I had been saying to her, vowing I would rather die than assist her husband to her prejudice. She seem'd well pleas'd at it, and answered, if I did not bear witness against her, she had nothing to fear, I reply'd, I wondered how she could suppose I should ever think of doing her any injury; and thus we parted.

But this woman was more mischievous than I could ever have imagin'd. I was no sooner gone e're she went to her husband, and told him, shedding abundance of tears, she found herself bound in duty and conscience to acquaint him, that he entertain'd a man whose whole study was to contrive his shame, I know, continu'd she, what he has made you believe to gain your good opinion;

he has own'd it to me himself, thinking me so mad as to love him. He was the only *Algerine* that ever come to me, for it was under that disguise that he would have got up into my chamber. From his hand you receiv'd your wound. All this I knew, and if I have since endur'd his company, the reason was, because you were so infatuated with him, that I could do no otherwise; but his impudence is at length grown to such a pitch, that I can bear with it no longer; nor conceal from you the reasons you have to revenge your self for his deceits.

All that this wicked woman said to her husband, seem'd to him so probable, that he wondred how he ever had suspected her virtue, seeing she had ever given him notice of my endeavouring to debauch her; and being now fully perswaded of what she had said, he tenderly embrac'd her, asking a thousand pardons for suspecting her, and vowing that I should not long escape the punishment my lies and treachery, deserv'd.

I, in the mean while, did not in the least suspect either the wife or him, and if I was sometime without visiting them, it was because I would avoid his coming to question his wife, as he threatned. It was about a week since my seeing them, that I receiv'd a note from *Eliora* to give me notice, that my death was decreed, and that I had best quit *Spain* with all possible diligence.

Tho' it was very pressing, I could not trust to it, but resolv'd to speak with the person that sent it me. I had not seen her since the promise I had made not to visit her; and I durst not appear there either in my own habit, or that of the slave's. Nevertheless, having receiv'd from her the letter I mention'd, I thought I ought to go see her, and for that purpose disguis'd my self once more, and put on again the habit under which I was us'd to have access to her pretending I was return'd to bring her further news of her husband.

Hearing I was there, instead of ordering me to come up, she ran down to me, and inform'd me in a few words, that *Manrique* had given out, I was the person, who under the disguise of an *Algerine* slave, had kill'd the duke's son; that the king was acquainted with it, and grew extream jealous thereupon; that he had quarrell'd with her, accusing her of having harbour'd me under

under that disguise, and had not seen her since, so that she thought her self wholly out of favour; and that as for me, the king, the duke de ———, and *Manrique*, had agreed I should be murther'd. so that my ruin was unavoidable, if I did not immediately fly out of the kingdom.

By the manner of her delivery, I judg'd I had no time to lose, and that it was my best way to take her counsel and be gone; but my sorrow at leaving her, and at my being the innocent cause of all the trouble she had receiv'd, made me very loth to part, which she perceiving, grew angry with me; telling me, she saw I did not care what became of her, since I would remain there; tho' I knew she were lost, if it reach'd the king's ears, that she had spoke with me; which said, she retir'd ordering me to be gone.

I was vex'd at heart to see my self thus serv'd from a person, for whom I still retain'd a unfeigned passion, and from whom I had some reason to expect an equal return; and the desire of seeing her once more, and bidding her a more tender adieu, prevail'd with me above the dread of my danger. I had not the power to go out of town, and my love blinded me to that degree, that I endeavour'd to find out some plausible excuse for my stay.

The prince's business was a pretext sufficient to satisfy my self; and however useless I might be to him at *Madrid*, yer my fond imagination made me fancy he could not be without me, whenever my dotage would not suffer me to think of a retreat.

Thus was I convinc'd, that I ought to stay; and here I again experienc'd, that love soon grows stronger than all our other passions, when we yield our selves up to it; and those who once suffer it to gain ground, must expect it will make them deaf to all other considerations.

But tho' the hope of giving *Elionora* another visit were the chief motive of my remaining there, yet that of being reveng'd on *Isabella* did not a little conduce to it, and after all, that was my greatest care; so unsteddy was I in my wishes and resolutions. I had indeed several substantial reasons to hate that woman, yet I resent'd nothing so much as her preferring the *Algerine* before me.

Think.

Thinking she was not fully satisfy'd that the *Algerine* and I were the same person, I attempted, by deceiving her once more, to work my ends, and to that purpose sent her the following letter

Madam,

YOU will perhaps be surpriz'd at receiving this. But tho' the hand may be unknown, the person I hope is not; I am Acma Hamet, once happy in your love, and who have been oblig'd to abscond thro' the perfidiousness of one, I tho' undeservedly, call'd my friend, who endeavour'd under my habit. and under my name, to enjoy the happiness intended for me. However, I have now put it out of his power to injure me, since he is ignorant of of my being here; which I have taken all possible care to conceal from every one, save the person for whose sake I have ventur'd hither. I lodge with Alonso Riberos; and if you can still love me, I expect shortly to hear from you. My landlord thinks I come from Morocco, and am call'd Mule Asan. Under that name it is I must be enquir'd for.

This being safely deliver'd, I went and lay at *Alonso Riberos's*, whom I had made believe that I was a *Morocco* merchant, and was come to *Madrid* about some business relating to my trade. Thus under this new disguise I was safe, from my persecutors; I satisfy'd the fancy I had to remain there, and fed the hopes of compassing my designs.

When I reflect on my madness, I am convinc'd that one passion is sufficient to make a young man venture on the most desperate undertakings; for the more perilous my projects were, the more eager was I to put them in execution: and certainly age and wisdom can alone reclaim a man from this ridiculous romantick undauntedness.

I was not long at *Ribero's* before I had an answer to my letter. It came safe to *Isabella's* hands, and it is not to be wondred at, if having formerly thought the *Algerine* slave and I to be two different persons, she was confirm'd in that opinion by the receipt of this letter. She rejoyc'd doubly that her plot against me had so well.

well succeeded, since her husband being now fully persuaded I was the *Algerine* who had been so much talk'd on, would never suspect her intrigue, and that she might quietly enjoy the man, now whom alone she ever had real love.

The *Duena Beatrix* was sent to *Alonzo Riberos's*, and I was carry'd, as at other times to the low balcony. *Isabella*, taking me for the slave she had formerly seen, receiv'd me with all possible demonstrations of kindness, and related to me all that had happen'd during my absence, and how she would have procur'd the *French* count's death, by making her husband believe that it was he who had disguis'd himself under the habit of an *Algerine* slave. Then she blam'd me for my indiscretion, in having acquainted that *French* lord with our first interview, and thus given him the means how to come to the rendezvous she had design'd to none but my self.

Nothing was more pleasant than thus to be spoke of my self, without its being thought that it was spoke to; and being no longer jealous of my self, I was resolv'd to give full scope to this diversion and see how far her blindness and impudence would go. I begg'd a thousand pardons for being so talkative.. But after all, madam, continu'd I, you have no great reason to be angry with me, for having improv'd your acquaintance with that *Frenchman*? since, as I have been told, he did not wholly displease you, and you have been pretty intimate together.

She deny'd she had ever lov'd him; assuring me, her admitting him was only with a design to undo him, of which she had at last found an opportunity. I grew very uneasy at hearing her tell so many lies, and so openly confess her perfidiousness; yet I did not discover my self, but at length took my leave, she not the least suspecting I was any other than the *Algerine* slave:

I thought things were now in a fair way for my intended revenge, and began to consider how I should make use of my advantage. *Alonzo Riberos* traded much in foreign countries, so that several strangers usually resorted thither, which had made me chuse his house, the better to deceive *Isabella*. Among others,

a certain *Algerine* visited him frequently, whose dull look made me judge him most fit for my purpose.

I had a very understanding man to my *valet de chambre*, whom I wholly confided in. Him I inform'd of my intentions, and accordingly he fell into discourse with the *Algerine*, telling him, that one of the greatest beauties in *Spain* look'd for a man of *Algier*, having a particular inclination for a gallant of that country. This proposition was not so great a temptation to him, as a small present my man made to him, with a promise of as much more, if he would do what should be desir'd of him, and he discreet.

The *African* promis'd an exact performance, and my man order'd him to wait at *Alonzo Riberos's*, having first told him what he should do. Then he acquainted me with the success of his negotiation; and *Beatrice* being come at her usual hour, which was always in the dusk of the evening, I sent the true *Algerine* in my stead; who was carry'd to the house, and, as he had been directed, climb'd up the rope-ladder into the balcony, and thence went into *Isabella's* chamber.

My servant who had dogg'd him, no sooner saw him safe, but he carry'd a note I had given him for *Manrique*; by which I gave him advice, that the famous *Algerine* slave was then actually with his wife. *Manrique* was in bed; but my man having told his servants that it was about matters of great concern, they wak'd him, and deliver'd it. The hopes he had of surprizing me, rendered him more diligent. He order'd part of his servants to wait under the balcony, while he himself, with two or three of them, went into his lady's chamber.

While things were in that posture on his side, let us see a little what happen'd on *Isabella's*. She did not at first suspect the cheat; but finding that man was neither in shape nor voice like her dear slave, she fetch'd a candle, and at first sight discover'd that she was deceiv'd. Her surprizal was not so great as it would have been, had she been less accusom'd to these kind of intrigues. She ask'd him how he came there? and he confess'd that one *Muley Asan*, an inhabitant of *Morocco* had, through the means of one of his servants, engag'd him in that enterprize.

What

What a grief was it to *Isabella*, that the only man she doated on, should be so ungrateful as to expose her thus! but she conceal'd her affliction from the *Algerine*, and telling him, that those who had persuaded him to what he did, only sought his ruin, order'd him to be gone. His danger made him more quick of apprehension than he had before appear'd to be; and without giving her the trouble of repeating it a second time, he soon found the way down the rope-ladder, which *Isabella* immediately drew up.

He was just setting his foot on the ground, and she shutting her balcony, door, when *Manrique's* men seiz'd on him, and their master entred into her chamber. He found her in a disorder, which confirm'd his jealousy, and was going to examine her, when his men brought up him they had seiz'd in the street.

It is impossible to express the surprize he was in to see it was not I: he doubted not but those, who had assur'd him the *Algerine* slave was no other than my self under that disguise, had impos'd on his belief, and this thought made his wife appear to him more guilty than she was. He resolv'd to carry his revenge to the utmost, and having fastned her chamber-door upon her, order'd the *Algerine* to be closely confin'd.

The next day it was reported, that the noted *Algerine* slave, who had kill'd the duke de ———'s son had been caught in bed with *Manrique's* wife, and was then in custody at his house. This made a great noise, and *Elionora*, who heard of it, concluded it to be me, who, not having follow'd her advice, had imbroil'd my self in fresh troubles. It came also to the king, and gave him new suspicions, against *Elionora*, who, he fancy'd, still conceal'd me in her house.

The duke de ——— who was provock'd that his son's death was not reveng'd, came to *Manrique*, and having both examin'd the innocent prisoner, they discover'd their error. *Isabella* durst not speak a word, for fear lest upon the advice of the prisoner, they should send to *Riberos's* to find out *Muley Asan*, and that he should declare what familiarity had pass'd between them.

Part of what she fear'd came to pass. The *African* having told them, that a servant of *Muley Aſan's* had engag'd him in this affair, one was diſpatch'd to *Riberos's* to ſecure me, but as I had foreſeen what might happen, I had provided my ſelf againſt it. I went no more to *Riberos's* and ſo could not be found. I conceal'd my ſelf all day at a houſe I had been us'd to lodge at till then; and being ſoon after inform'd it was the publick diſcourſe, that I had perſonated one *Muley Aſan*, and had taken a lodging at *Riberos's*, on purpoſe to play *Iſabella* this trick, I thought there would be but little ſecurity for me to ſtay longer at *Madrid*; and I left it the next day, having ſent my ſervants before, keeping only my *Valet de chambre*; with whom I took poſt-horſes, no one offering to diſturb me.

I arriv'd at *Bayonne*, deſigning thence to go for *Guenna*, where I expected to meet with the prince, who, with his Army, made head againſt the duke de *Vendosme*. *Berg* was then beſieg'd, which was in *July 1653*.

I was forc'd to continue at *Bayonne* ſome time, being fallen ill, and wrote to the prince to repreſent to him part of the reaſons which had oblig'd me to quit *Madrid*. The answer I had from him was, that I might either go to *Paris*, or the duke de *Vendosme's* army, and that he would not be the occaſion of my being of a diſſerent party from my brother. The letter was very tart, whence I judg'd the prince was not over ſatisfy'd with my negotiation in *Spain*.

It may well be thought, the ſorrow to ſee my ſelf at variance with him, made me reflect more than I had done on the ſtrange adventures I had at *Madrid*, but it will be ſurprizing that theſe reflections ſhould not make me more prudent.

When I perceiv'd the prince was diſpleas'd at my leaving *Madrid*, I thought my ſelf oblig'd to go back thither: the danger with which I was there threatned gave way to the deſire of repairing by a diligent application, and better conduct, the opinion I had given the prince cauſe to entertain, of my having been ſomewhat neglectful of his ſervice; but were I ingeniouſly to relate the true reaſon of my entertaining ſuch thoughts,

I muſt

I must confess, to my shame, it was my love for *Elionora*.

The care she had taken of my safety, and the anger in which she left me, did not so much revive my love, as the fear she express'd to me of seeing her self in disgrace with the king. I began to imagine she might stand in need of my assistance in the circumstances I left her. I fear'd that the king having abandon'd her, the jealousy of her husband might expose her to grievous extremities, and my love authorizing it self by all these pretences, made me think, that it was base in me to leave her as I had done.

How wretched (for I cannot too often make these reflections) is their condition, who enslave themselves to the blindest passion! To a gross blindness they add a foolish presumption, of not being blind. Had all the world told me I was a fool, and a madman, for having a mind to return to *Madrid*, I should have thought all the world quite blind, and my self the only clear-sighted person; so clear and convincing did those reasons seem, which induced me to it. Not but I sometimes made slight reflections on the temerity of my design; but the more rash it seem'd to me, the more desirous I was to go about it, fancying it an heroick action thus to venture my life for the sake of my mistress. I hope none of my readers will be of the same opinion I was then of, in commending an amorous generosity, which would have exposed me to greater hazards than any I had yet run, had not sickness prevented my unaccountable folly.

Being fully determin'd, I sent the prince a letter to acquaint him, that preferring his service before any other considerations, I was returning into *Spain*, and hop'd he would do me the honour, by writing more obligingly, to let me know I had regain'd his favour; which being sent, I set out for *Madrid*, notwithstanding my indisposition; but the very first day's journey spent me quite, so that I was forc'd to stop at *Fontarabia*, where I kept my bed near six weeks, under so violent a disease, that my life was often despair'd of.

I had

I had, upon my falling sick, sent a letter to *Elionora*, to acquaint her, that it was impossible for me to leave her, and that I design'd to see her, as soon as my health would permit, to offer her my service and assistance in a time when I fear'd she had need of them. I had also order'd the messenger to enquire what people said of me there; and especially concerning *Manrique* and his wife.

He deliver'd my letter to *Elionora* who reply'd by word of month, that I had best keep away, and that she had no other answer to give him. *Manrique*, he was told, had made strict search after me; his wife having inform'd him I was *Muley Afan*, who, after several unsuccessful attempts upon her chastity, had out of revenge contriv'd what had happen'd; that the *Algerine* had been set at liberty, after a sharp reprimand; that every one was persuaded of the innocence and good conduct of *Isabella* in this adventure; and that I must never think of returning to *Madrid* any more.

He brought me this answer at a time when I began to grow better; and I think, that had my recovery been more perfect, I should have ventur'd through all these dangers, so much was I displeas'd at *Elionora*'s not writing to me, and so great was my desire of seeing her. But, happily for me, I was too weak to undertake such a journey, and found I had nothing else to do but to forget her, and use all possible means to regain my health.

Thus I quite laid aside the thoughts of returning. But before I proceed any farther in the recital of my adventures, I think, I ought to relate what happen'd at *Madrid* after my departure. I was not inform'd of the particulars thereof, till long after, but this is the proper place to speak of it, by reason of the reader's having fresh in his memory every thing which there befel me, and for that all I am now going to mention, is naturally connected with what I have before related. Besides, the reader will the better see how very wrong it was in me, to desire to return to a country, which to me had been so fatal; and how much reason I had at length to surmount the passions which recall'd me.

I left

I left there two women, with whom I had the longest intrigues ; I mean her whom I call'd *Isabella*, and she whom I have made known under the title of the *Catalan*, and under the name of *Elionora*. I had lov'd these two women, but with sentiments very different ; I esteem'd *Elionora*, and I fear'd *Isabella*. The one engag'd me by the idea she had given me of her tenderness and virtue, and the other, on the contrary, pleas'd me only by her advances and her passions ; but we shall find their characters to be much alike, when their circumstances were the same ; and from thence one may better judge what opinion we ought to have of women who are desirous of being belov'd, and who can't confine themselves to one husband, or one gallant.

As it was the nature of *Isabella* to put no constraint upon her appetites and inclinations, she shewed her self in all her passions, as fantastical as when taking me for a slave of *Algier*, she could not love me under any other quality, or under any other figure. Thus all her intrigues were continually with persons of no consequence, and such as she might easily sacrifice to her husband's jealousy. She had many affairs upon her hands before I came to *Madrid*, and among others this which I am going to speak of.

Scarce was she marry'd, and had appear'd at court, when the place her husband was in gave her a distinguish'd rank, when all the young lords made their addresses to her ; but the most sincere and passionate of her lovers was the prince de ——— the handsomest man certainly in all *Spain*, and of the best presence. He was just upon marrying the Marquess de ———'s daughter, who was reckon'd the greatest fortune in that kingdom, and by whom he was tenderly belov'd, when he grew acquainted with *Isabella*.

It was, one would think, rather witchcraft than love. He became insensible of any other passion ; and to break off, or at least defer his marriage, he pretended a desire of entering into orders, and offer'd to resign his birth-right and his spouse to his younger brother : his father was almost perswaded to it ; and the thing would have been done, had he not discover'd how unworthy *Isabella* was of such a sacrifice.

This

This woman us'd him very haughtily, and according to the character we have seen of her, she fail'd not to inform her husband of the prince's passion; and the husband's behaviour to him was just as I related his usage towards me. The poor prince, suspected by the husband, and perplex'd how to see the lady, was grievously troubled, and fell sick upon it.

He had a very cleaver cunning fellow to his *Vallet de chambre*, whom he had sometimes sent with letters to *Isabella*. This man knowing the cause of his distemper, told him, he pity'd him, and the more, because his mistress was cruel to him only on account of his being a person of rank and figure, and that if it were not for fear of his displeasure, he would inform him that his lady had a constant familiarity with one of her husband's servants.

The prince was like to have kill'd him for talking so injuriously of his mistress; and he, seeing his lord's blindness, swore he would undeceive him. He got acquainted with *Manrique's* man, and by the promise of a considerable sum, intic'd him to make the prince a confession of the whole business. His highness gave as little credit to *Manrique's* servant, as he had done to his own, and would scarce hear them, till they had offer'd to procure him a sight of what he doubted. Accordingly they took their measures, which having succeeded, the prince was an eye-witness to her lewdness.

But this flame could not be extinguish'd by so convincing a proof of her infamy, and he resolv'd to let her know what he had seen, with a design not to confound her by that reproach, but the better to engage her to love him; so weak and unworthy did this poor prince behave.

He was so simple as to tell her, he knew of her intimacy with that man, but did not love her the less for it, since he could impute it but to an enchantment; and did not imagine, that a lady of her sense could have stoop'd to one so much below her, had not some infernal power interpos'd: and he even offer'd himself to kill the wicked forcerer who had abus'd her, and rid her of a spirit who had been so great a seducer, and restore her

to the liberty of granting her favours to those who should use no other charms but their love.

Thú lady seeing the weakness of the prince, and that he himself sought out reasons to justify her, made use of what he had said to her about sorcery and witchcraft to persuade him that this servant did really deal with the devil; but the power of the infernal spirit had not been employ'd to raise in her a scandalous affection for the servant, but only to bewitch the eyes of the prince to make him see what was not.

The story adds, he was so credulous as to disbelieve his eyes, and to take what he had seen for a diabolical illusion. However, *Manrique's* servant was murder'd, and as it was suppos'd, by the prince's order; who being thus deliver'd from the magician persisted in loving *Isabella*, and being slighted by her.

The *Spaniards* being naturally very superstitious, he imagin'd that his mistress's cruelty proceeded from a continu'd witchcraft, and offer'd up nine days prayers for the driving away the evil spirit which he thought oppos'd his happiness; so that by a fantastical humour, which would have been accounted an impiety in any other country than *Spain*, was this blind prince seen to make use of the most holy part of religion, to obtain the success of an amorous intrigue.

It is thought he came to himself again sometime after, for he forgot *Isabella*, and concluded the marriage, which he would not have put off so long, had he not loath'd all other women, while he was charm'd with her. I had no knowledge of this ridiculous story when I courted her; had I been inform'd of it at that time, I should have thought also it was owing to that witchcraft, that she could not suffer me under my own shape, while she was distracted for me under that of an *Algerine*.

When I had left *Mad id*, and when her husband, who was always brought over by her artifices, and his own foolish confidence, had lost all hopes of revenging himself on me, he continu'd to give out every where, that it was I who was the pretended slave of *Algier*, and that the king and every body else, had been deceiv'd. The king, who had ever mistrusted *Elionora's* kindness for me, doubted

doubted not but it was for her sake I had thus disguised my self; which increasing his jealousies, he enquir'd of *Manrique* how he came to know it? who having reply'd, it was through his wife's good conduct and virtue, he was desirous of seeing her to be further satisfy'd.

I had never told her of my amour with *Elionora*, so that she could not discover any thing to that prince, which might confirm his suspicion. On the contrary, her vanity made her so careful to perswade his majesty, that the great love she had inspir'd me with, was the only occasion of my disguise; that he could not believe it possible for a man, whose passion for her was so great, to be the same time in love with another.

Thus this prince's jealousy of his mistress was entirely dispell'd by the vanity *Isabella* had of telling him, that I lov'd her and only her; but it succeeded as ill with poor *Elionora* as if she had still been suspected. The king was one whose new mistress always made him to forget the former, and he was so much taken with *Isabella*, that he fell in love with her, and this love was the only consequence of the conversation he had with her.

The report of this new passion being soon spread, *Elionora* was presently acquainted with it. Hitherto nothing had been observed in her behaviour which did not merit esteem, and even admiration, and every one was convinc'd, that she suffer'd the king's addresses out of meer complaisance, and was the only one of all his mistresses that had withstood his importunate desires, and by her virtue had deserv'd his esteem: but she then destroy'd that opinion; for she no sooner saw the king inclining to a change, but she us'd all possible means to reclaim him, and be reveng'd of her rival. Having some small acquaintance with *Manrique*, she sent for him, and informing him of his majesty's new passion, advis'd him to send his wife into the country. Her success with *Manrique* was greater than she could imagine, for she inspir'd him not only with a jealousy capable of undertaking any thing, but also with a love as enterprising as his jealousy could be.

Manrique being convinc'd of the commerce begun between the king and his wife, found himself no ways dispos'd

pos'd to suffer it; and by the advice of *Elionora*, sent *Isabella* to a house he had on the farthestmost confines of *Spain*. Being thus rid of his wife, he hop'd *Elionora* would have requited the obligation; but the king having lost *Isabella*, and not thinking fit to use his authority in recalling her, renew'd his assiduity to *Elionora*; so that *Manrique* found himself under a necessity to forbear visiting his mistress, or to recal his spouse.

These were very hard circumstances for a jealous husband and a passionate lover to be in; and I believe his love would have got the better of his jealousy, had he not fear'd by sending for the one to have disoblig'd the other. He therefore left his lady in the country, and carefully watch'd the king's absence to visit *Elionora*; but whether she really had no inclination for him, or that the king caus'd her to be narrowly observ'd, he reap'd no other profit from his wife's absence, but the having appear'd jealous of her.

He resolv'd however, that the mistress to whom he had sacrific'd his wife, should reap no benefit from thence, and did what he could to induce *Elionora*'s husband to send for her to the place where he resided as *vice-roy*; but her husband, who regarded nothing but his fortune, was not any way mov'd by the reasons assign'd to persuade him not to live so distant from his wife. Thus *Manrique* could neither gain his mistress's love, nor be reveng'd for her scorn.

Isabella, in the mean while, bore her confinement impatiently; and hearing *Elionora* had, since her departure grown more than ever in the king's favour it redoubled her grief. She was also inform'd, how she rival'd her, as well in her husband's affection as in the king's, and hop'd by giving his majesty notice of it, to work a double revenge. She did, and the issue was, that *Manrique* was made governor of a town far distant from *Madrid*.

I have not heard any more of the adventures of these two rivals; but when I was acquainted that *Elionora*, for whom I had so great an esteem, had yielded to *Manrique*'s desires, I thank'd heav'n, for having put a stop to my journey. It would have vex'd me, that a
lady,

lady, of whom I had so noble an idea, should have sacrific'd her honour to the vanity of being mistress to a monarch, who, tho' very worthy of the rank he bore, had nothing to recommend his love but his dignity.

I had, during my sickness at *Fontarabia*, the leisure to reflect on my former follies; and tho' I was but eight and twenty, I had seen so many various tempers of women, and the inclination I had for them had expos'd me to so many afflictions, that I could not help regretting the time they had made me lose, and I perceiv'd it was owing to them that I had made so little progress in the military art; for in short I found my skill less than ever after my first campaigns, and I was fully sensible, that if I suffer'd my self so easily to be led into amours, I must never think of advancing my fortune.

But then how should I avoid it? I found I should have neither will nor power so to do as long as I continu'd in the world. These thoughts created in me a passionate longing to withdraw from it; and what finally determin'd me to put it in execution was the melancholy occasion'd by my sickness, and the seeing my self ill in the prince's favour.

One day, as these thoughts were revolving in my mind, and I taking a walk prescrib'd me for the recovery of my health, I saw a man habited like an hermit, who was walking in the same place where I was, and who perceiving me, seem'd to be for withdrawing. I pray'd him in the most civil manner I could, not to fly me, and his dress making me believe he was a solitary person, the thoughts of retirement then in my head made me desirous of conversing with him. This occasion'd me to intreat him, 'till at length he stopp'd. After having discours'd with him some time on indifferent matters, I ask'd him, whether he was not an hermit, and how he relish'd a solitary life?

He answer'd, that he knew not whether he ought to assume the holy name of *Hermit*, tho' he had liv'd retir'd for above twelve or thirteen years; since he must own to his shame, that he had still been too much affected with the things of this world, and was then actually endeavouring to return to another kind of life, having sufficiently

ficiently experienc'd, that to become an anchoret, other motives were necessary than those which had induc'd him to quit the world. I ask'd him, if the fair sex had not some share in the motives that had led him to what he had done ? to which he answer'd with a sigh, that they were the only cause of his misfortunes. I told him, that for my part, they had so perplex'd me, that I was inclin'd to do as he had done ; then, said he, I would advise you to go about it with more consideration than I did, else it will be difficult for you to be more resolute than my self. I thereupon desir'd him to give me an account of his adventures, which he seem'd unwilling to do ; but at last my entreaties prevail'd, and he made me the following relation of his life.

I was born in *Portugal*; and tho' my habit and looks may not perhaps speak me of quality, I can assure you, that I am nearly related to the king *Don John*, who thirteen years since found the means to ascend his ancestors throne. I was bred up with him, while he was yet but duke of *Braganza*, and should have shar'd in his prosperity, had I not had some relation nearer than he, who engag'd me in the contrary party ; or rather, had not love turn'd my brain.

Never was any one, at once, so charming and so perfidious, as the person I ador'd, She was much about my age, but of an unsatisfy'd ambition ; and had a kindness for me no longer than till she could fix on one who might satisfy her pride. She had been plac'd with the dutchess of *Mantua*, then vice queen of *Portugal*, was born of an illustrious family, but much inferior to mine ; and tho' my estate was but small, her fortune was not answerable to it. I was possess'd with an unexpressible passion, which she did, or at least pretended to return ; and tho' we did not at first talk of marrying, because the duke of *Braganza* would never have suffer'd me to match my self so much to my disadvantage, yet I swore to her, that I would never have any other woman to my wife, and I liv'd in hopes of enjoying her, expecting that duke's restauration would so much better my condition, that I should not need to marry for a portion.

The conspiracy, which plac'd him on his Throne, was then contriving *. I was one of the first that was intrusted with the secret and was so strangely bewitch'd to my mistress, that I could not keep it from her. It was the highest imprudence in me, since living with the vice-queen, I had cause to fear she would discover it to her; but that was not the only reason I had to complain of my indiscretion.

The vice-queen had one *Vasconcellos* to her secretary, who, tho' a *Portuguese* by birth, was grown the Tyrant of his own country, through the imperiousness wherewith he exercis'd the power, which the vice-queen had plac'd in him. He was pleas'd to be in love with my mistress; but what you will perhaps more wonder at is, that she harken'd to his love as tho' he had been a king, so much was her ambition sooth'd by being belov'd by a man who had the supreme power in the kingdom.

She doubted not but that *Vasconcellos* purpos'd to marry her, but it was not long before she perceiv'd that he had other designs, and that he seek'd only to reckon her among the number of mistresses, that the need every one stood in of him, had so easily procur'd him.

Her virtue seem'd to be too great to comply with such desires as tended only to her dishonour; and she told me one day, that she then hated *Vasconcellos*, as much as she had appear'd complaisant to him, while she had hopes of becoming his wife. His wife! cry'd I, in a great surprize, how could you ever have such a thought? Why not, replied she, is there not pleasure in being a mistress, and would any one have more credit in the kingdom, than the wife of him who is the Master of it.

I reproach'd her for being so base and self-interested; and she said, I must forgive her, since even in that, to be in a capacity of doing me some good had been her chief aim. This compliment pleas'd me a little, and I doubted not but that the scorn she express'd for my

* A curious account of this revolution, written by the abbot de Vertot, hath been lately translated into *English* by Mr. Roussillon.

unworthy rival was as sincere as it ought to be after the discovery she had made of the injurious opinion he had of her. Yet I heard from several hands, that it was affected, and that she still kindly entertain'd the secretary's visits, and his presents. Indeed, she grew more expensive than usual, and having ask'd her, how her stock had increas'd, she assur'd me, it was out of the vice-queen's bounty. I was deaf to all the proofs that were given me of the reality of her intrigue with *Vasconcellos*, and I continu'd to love her, with a respect equal to my passion.

In the mean while the conspiracy broke out, in what manner every one knows; the conspirators having made themselves masters of the city of *Lisbon*, seiz'd the vice-queen and archbishop of *Braga*. *Vasconcellos* was stabb'd and thrown headlong out of a window, and the duke of *Braganza* was four days after proclaim'd king of *Portugal*. My hatred to *Vasconcellos* mov'd me to assist those who were order'd to murder him. We went to his chamber, at the door of which one of his clerks opposing me, I kill'd him at a blow, and was the first that enter'd. we could not find *Vasconcellos*; and while my comrades were looking for him, I espy'd a little closet, half open, wherein were some letters, which I took, and, unperceiv'd, dispos'd into my pockets. At length, after much seeking, we heard he was hid in the wall of the room: we pull'd him out thence, and knowing me again, he conjur'd me for my mistress's sake to save his life; assuring me, I should oblige her highly in doing it. I thought he had lost his wits, to make me a compliment, he must needs imagine I would take as an affront, and was going to force a declaration out of his own mouth, to clear her innocence. But I had not that leisure, for he had scarce spoke to me, when they threw him down into the street.

The tumult being appeas'd, and the city quiet, my next care was to read the letters I had found. They were most subscrib'd by my unfaithful mistress, and but too plain arguments of her infamy. Some of them contain'd an account of the plot, and I bless'd my kind stars, that had directed those letters to me, which had they

fallen into other hands, would certainly have prov'd my undoing. I kept them, with a design to confound her, by letting her know thereby, how worthy she was of my contempt and hatred. But I knew not what was become of her, and thought she might have been confin'd with the vice-queen. At last I heard, that being a *Portuguese*, she was permitted to retire to one of her relations.

It was at this relation's she was inform'd of the cruel punishment inflicted on *Vasconcellos*. She was not mistress of her self upon hearing that news, either because she really loved the wretch, or else she lamented the loss of the money and presents with which he used to purchase her favours. She was so regardless as to exclaim furiously against those who had kill'd him, and even against the new king, so that it was thought necessary to secure her person. She was confin'd as an enemy against whom it was proper to be provided.

I was inform'd of all this, and certainly none ought to have been more indifferent than my self on that account: yet I wish'd with earnestness to see her, that I might tax her with her baseness and ingratitude. I fancy'd the hopes of being reveng'd were the only occasion of that desire, and little consider'd, alas! that my love was the chief motive, and that I was only willing to reproach her, because I could not forget her.

I went to visit her in her prison, and she ask'd me scornfully, whether it was by my order that she was us'd so ill? I answer'd, had it been so I should but have discharg'd my obligations to her, since she was guilty of a higher crime to me than any the Government could charge her with; in saying which, I produc'd the letters I have spoke of, asking her, if she knew that hand. She answer'd, without the least surprize, that she was not asham'd to own them, since whether I knew it or no, *Vasconcellos* was her husband; and that she would acknowledge none for her friends or lovers, but such as would assist her in revenging his death. How great soever my vexation might be, to hear her talk thus, I had the power to conceal it, and continu'd shewing her the letters wherein she had so basely betray'd the secret I had reveal'd to her.

She

She told me, it was for my sake she had done it, and that she never would forgive the secretary, who, instead of making use of the advices she had given him, rely'd upon the duke *de Olivarez*, whose slowness to prevent the evil had render'd it desperate. I interrupted her, desiring her, to know how that discovery could be advantageous to me; to which she reply'd, I must have but very little skill in state affairs, not to see that the duke of *Braganza's* election could never be approv'd by the other princes of the blood, to whom this new king could not, tho' he should be willing, give such considerable employs as they might expect from the King of *Spain*, who was a sovereign prince of many kingdoms.

Every thing this woman said ought to have increased my indignation against her, but chiefly ought I to have resent'd her marrying my rival. But even that help'd to justify her; for I had rather hear she had made a match so much beneath her self, than suspect her of being guilty of a shameful amour; and I found as she spoke to me, my heart willingly yielded to her arguments, and took her part against my self.

I carry'd on my blindneis so far, that I found some probability in what she said of the ill bottom which the new government stood on, and grew inclinable to a revolt. But I did not then discover it to her, and continu'd that conversation in the same strain I had begun. But it is impossible for a lover to conceal his weakness, and in spite of my dissimulation, she perceiv'd the effects of her deluding words.

I imagin'd the sight of her had occasion'd my folly, but her absence could not cure it; for the thoughts of her misery mov'd my compassion, and I judg'd it not impossible for me to obtain her liberty. I sued for it, representing that what she had said was spoke in a heat of passion, which had put her besides her self, and that she was now grown very penitent. My request was easily granted, and it was not thought dangerous to release a maid, too weak to act what her passion or grief might prompt her to.

No better token can be given of the strength of my blinded love, than the transport I was in. I ran to the

prison, and having kindly reproach'd her, told her, that the better to let her know what a lover she had been ungrateful to, I was come to acquaint her, that thro' my means she was free. She was less careful to thank me, than to repeat what she had already said about the present government, and to persuade me that my fortune had been more splendid, had *Portugal* remain'd under the *Spanish* dominion. Neither would I then let her know how far her arguments prevail'd with me; but having taken her out thence, carry'd her to that relation at whose house she had been arrested.

I visited her often, and persisted in loving her with as much zeal, as if I never had had any occasion to complain of her. She seem'd also to have forgot her former lover, and I dar'd not to make too strict an enquiry into the nature of the engagement she had had with him, lest I should thence have reason to hate her, for I was determin'd to love, and it seem'd not in my power to do otherwise. What I now tell you is not to my praise, but I am unwilling to disguise any thing, and love daily causes such blindness and weakness as I here take notice of.

She had not been long out of her confinement, when I perceiv'd the duke *de Camino*, whose name I shall not conceal since his misfortune is so publicly known, visited her assiduously enough to make me fear him as a rival. The marquis *de Villa Real*, father to that duke, was nearly related to me, as we were all three to the new king.

I did not at first express my jealousy to my mistress, but his visits became so frequent, and they took such care to be in private, that I could no longer be silent. She answer'd me, that by disclosing a secret to me, she would discharge the obligation she ow'd me for that I had formerly discover'd to her at the time of the conspiracy of the duke of *Braganza*; adding, she did not do it so much to satisfy my jealousy, as to inspire me with thoughts worthy of my birth, and to let me have a share in a glorious design then on foot, which concern'd me as much as any one. Then she told me, the duke *de Camino* courted her, and that she had found in him the noble sentiments she had in vain expected from me. In a word, continu'd she, he does not, like you, sit tamely while

while *Don John* enjoys a crown he has no better title to than any of you, and we shall shortly behold our country under the dominion of its lawful sovereign. Having spoke these words, she inform'd me of a conspiracy, which was then contriving, to assassinate *Don John* and his queen, and re-establish the *Spanish* government. That the archbishop of *Braga* was at the head of it, and the marquis *de Villa Real*, the duke *de Camino*, with several other persons of the first quality, his accomplices; adding, I might, if I pleas'd, be admitted into the society.

I ask'd her, whether she had been order'd to tell me of it? she said, no; but that she lov'd me well enough to wish I should not be the only one of all my family, who had no hand in so noble and heroic an enterprize. Then I desir'd her not to let them know she had told me; saying, it was not that I refus'd being concern'd, but resented their having done it without my knowledge. She reply'd, it was not too late, and that she would persuade the duke *de Camino* to discover it to me.

Being return'd home, I consider'd what I had best to do. My love would soon have determin'd it, had not the duke *de Camino*'s prevented it; for the manner wherein she had acquainted me with his passion, made me apprehensive, lest if the design succeeded, she would have prefer'd him before me, and I should thus have contributed to my own unhappiness.

But I perplex'd my self to no purpose; for two days after we had this discourse, the plot was discover'd by the archbishop's unadvisedness, who was so rash as to send a packet to *Spain*, wherein was a very particular account of it, and a list of the conspirators. They were all arrested, and my name not being mention'd, I was left at liberty, tho' the near relation I had to the marquis *de Villa Real*, and the instances I had made to procure my mistress's liberty, gave grounds for suspicion. She was seiz'd with the rest, and the accusations against her were so weighty and evident, that she was condemn'd to lose her life; but the queen, out of a particular favour, chang'd the punishment she was liable to, into a perpetual imprisonment. The marquis *de de Villa Real* and duke *de Camino* were beheaded, and the archbishop of

Braga died for grief in his prison ; the rest of the accomplices suffered, and thus the whole design was frustrated.

Altho' I was not in custody, I soon saw that I was strictly observ'd, and fearing to be secur'd resolv'd to absent my self. Here you will have an instance of my weakness, and of my false mistress's perfidiousness. I had not the courage to leave my native country, before I had us'd my endeavours to deliver her out of her confinement, tho' the favours she had granted to *Vasconcellos*, and her latter engagement with the duke de *Camino*, ought to have procur'd her my scorn and hatred. But I thought by so convincing a proof of my affection, to have oblig'd her to return it ; and besides, my passion was indeed so strong, that I expected no happiness out of her company ; and therefore took more care to find out means of favouring her escape than to secure my own.

It was in a convent that she was kept prisoner ; and I caus'd a note to be deliver'd to her, wherein I gave her notice, that at a certain time it should be set on fire in the corner next to her chamber, and that she might, during the bustle, come to a wall I describ'd, on the other side of which I should be with a ladder, ready to throw it over, and thereby give her an opportunity of saving her self.

I was as good as my word, and my project having been put in execution, I came to the place appointed, where having tarried some time, I got up, and saw no body on the other side ; however, I staid there till the fire was over, when I went away heartily vex'd at my ill success. But my grief had been much greater, had I known how I was prevented. The ungrateful lady, for whose sake I had ventur'd on this desperate attempt, had no sooner receiv'd my note, but she sent it to the queen, thinking by that seeming generosity to have gain'd her majesty's esteem, and the easier procur'd her own liberty. The queen gave little heed to it, but, upon advice that the convent was on fire, she sent some guards to secure me in case I should be found at the place I had appointed. He who commanded them on purpose avoided me, for besides that he had a great kindness for me, he fear'd lest my death, join'd to that of all my kindred, should have occasion'd new discontents, and considering
that

that the government was not yet well establish'd, thought he ought, for that time, to wave his obedience, since he might thereby at once oblige his friend, and serve his prince more effectually.

The next morning he sent me an account of what had happen'd, and that all the reward which my mistress had gain'd, was, that the queen had permitted her to take a nun's habit, if she had an inclination that way. Her treachery sorely afflicted me, and I was at last convinc'd of my folly, in being thus obstinately bent to love a woman so unworthy of my kindness.

In the mean while, the aforesaid note was a presumption strong enough to give orders to proceed to my tryal; several concurring circumstances were brought in, to prove me concern'd in the conspiracy of my relations, and upon the whole I was outlaw'd and my estate confiscated. I have always believ'd, that they were not desirous of having me apprehended; for had any search been made, I should soon have been found out; but it is very likely, that my absence was rather wish'd for than my death.

I was so depress'd with grief, that I took no care to seek for a refuge in foreign courts; and hearing my mistress had accepted the queen's favour and taken the veil, I was weak enough to think of imitating her. I have since endeavour'd to enter into several monasteries under a fictitious name, but none would receive me. I was at *Rome*, and at *Paris*, where I continu'd some time with the same design; but seeing I could not succeed, I at last came hither, where I have led this life above these six years.

The *Portuguese* having ended his story, I remark'd every thing I had to object against the passages which most surprized me, and which I forbore taking notice of 'till now for fear of interrupting him, for in truth I could scarce believe him to be the person he represented himself to be, and concluded with my self if he was such an one, he was out of his wits.

I confess it was no small satisfaction to me to meet with a man who had more madly doated on women than my self. I afterwards saw him very often, and understood, that, wearied with his condition, he was soliciting for a pardon, and to be once more possess'd of

his estate; but that he was afraid one thing would hinder it, which was, that having not been heard of since his leaving *Portugal*, every one there thought him dead; and his sufferings having made a great alteration in him, he might be taken for an impostor.

But I endeavour'd to rid him of that scruple, which did not appear to me to be so insuperable as he imagin'd. He told me, he believ'd his mistress was dead, and I made use of that as a reason to encourage him in his design. I was much more moderate in his company than alone; for then reflecting on my former adventures, I thought my misfortunes at least equal to his.

I was but little mov'd at what he would have made me fear, that in case I should renounce the world, I should keep up no better than himself the resolutions and relish of a retreat; and I could not forbear telling him, after the manner of those who know nothing of the inconveniencies of an eternal solitude, that if I should ever make one step, nothing should ever draw me back; so great is the presumption of vain, ignorant men, who rely on their own strength, for what they can only expect, from God's especial mercy.

With the like arrogance did I fancy my constancy could be greater than that of the *Portuguese*, whose irresolution I pity'd. But indeed my hour was not yet come; and the desire I had of a retreat, was only grounded on laziness and disgust, the natural consequences of an unfortunate and unquiet life; which, no doubt, was the reason why I was not more stedfast in my purposes. God grant, I may now with more firmness effect, in my latter age, what I had resolv'd on in my blooming years. The truth is, I would have built a house before I had laid any foundation; for without any knowledge of the chief points of my religion, or the foregoing practice of a virtuous life, I would on a sudden have turn'd saint; and being wholly taken up with this design, I took my leave of the hermit, and finding my self pretty well in health, took post from *Bayonne* directly for *Paris*; desiring before I enter'd into a religious state, to consult my *Car-melite*, or rather, that she should applaud my intentions, which my vanity made me conceive as very praiseworthy.

This

This illustrious woman, much better acquainted than my self with the conditions and requisites of a true retreat, exhorted me to undergo a state of probation for some time before I should declare my intentions, and to place my self, without letting any one know of it, under the conduct of a father she would name to me, who might judge if God call'd me to retirement. I was frightened at the preparations which she told me were necessary, before I should expose my self a publick spectacle of so great an alteration. I was against deferring it, and what gave me the greatest pleasure, was my giving the people occasion to say, I had done an heroic action in giving my self up to solitude.

Tho' I did not explain my thoughts to her so naturally as I conceiv'd them, she nevertheless perceiv'd I was not prepared for such a life, and told me plainly, that I ought not to think of it, unless I found I had courage enough to conceal my self for six months in some place, where I should have no other employment than to examine in the practice of repentance what God required of me.

It was happy for me, infatuated as I then was, to have consulted one of so sound and so piercing a judgment as her's; for how many others might I have met with, who would have induc'd me to have taken a different course; and who, by the imprudence of a glory I had not been able to sustain, would have had me engag'd where I could not have persever'd?

When she saw it was against my inclination to submit to such conditions and excercises as she thought absolutely necessary, she said, I ought to regard the desire I had embrac'd of so suddenly renouncing the world, as a temptation of idleness and laziness, that it was not what God required of me; but only, that I should avoid every thing which might turn me from the duties of my religion, and that I should seriously apply my self to those of my condition and birth, by fixing in the army, and ending at last the wandering life I had hitherto led. She further told me, that I was in a better condition than ever to lead a regular life, by reason of my having been absent from *Paris* two years, where being but very little known, it was easy for me to appear immediately for
such

such an one as I propos'd to be hereafter ; that is, for a man of honour and virtue. I follow'd her counsels, and gave over the thoughts of quitting the world.

But being, by her advice, enter'd into a religious house for a few days, that I might the more undisturb'd employ my self in repenting me of my former errors, and in unfeign'd devotion ; I found in their library a volume of *Abelard's* letters. I read them with the greater curiosity, having seen some of them in *Spain* ; for I had forgot to take notice, that notwithstanding my having been very much busied otherways, I ever had an inclination for books. I found in reading these letters, such a resemblance between *Heloise* and my *Carmelite* ; the delicacy with which *Abelard* had lov'd her, seem'd to me so like the love I had for that my first mistress, that this love reviv'd again in my heart, with greater fire than ever, so that I thought I should have ran distracted.

I had but a glimpse of her face since my return from *Spain*, and she had then appear'd so handsome, that the idea of her beauty, always present to my mind, inflam'd my desires, and I was sensible I had never lov'd with more passion and tenderness. I dwelt wholly on these thoughts, and my only pleasure was, to view my heart in the description *Abelard* made of his own. I imagin'd the ill success of all my former amours, was a judgment on me for leaving the only person I had ever really lov'd. I often reflected that she was my wife, and that all the law in the world freed her from an obligation she could not lawfully have taken upon her self.

Thus was I taken up with these frivolous thoughts ; and certainly never was a passion at once more violent and unhappy than that which I felt my self possess'd with at these fatal ideas ; for after all, it was to no purpose to represent to my self this illustrious woman as my wife, I was fully sensible that there was not the least probability of withdrawing her from the state she had engag'd in, and I found my self so much the more unhappy as I lov'd her without hope.

How often did I repent me of my complaisance in suffering her to take that habit ! as I never felt any thing like the love which then possess'd me, I was sensible that love was never extinguish'd in my heart ; and that if I had
appear'd

appear'd to be engag'd to so many others, it was only by way of amusement; but the time was now come, when I could no longer deceive my self, and had I had a thousand lives, I would have given them to have been in the state I formerly was with her, when my love was oppos'd only by an imaginary decorum.

Its violence robb'd me of ease and rest. I spent whole nights in writing letters to her, which I burnt in the morning; not daring to acquaint her with my sentiments. However, I at last resolv'd to tell her of my sufferings, and made her a visit with that design.

As soon as I heard the sound of her voice, I found the violence of my passion redoubled, and I was so struck that I could not say one word to her. She spoke to me without our seeing each other, yet she was sensible of my disorder. She ask'd me, what I ail'd, and falling on my knees, I conjur'd her to hear me without offence. Then I discover'd the violence of my love, begging of her by all the reasons I could alledge, at least to commiserate the sad condition I was in.

She yielded her attention, and only interrupted me with sighs; and after I had given over speaking, I found she wept, and could scarce pronounce a word. I desir'd to know of her what gave her such concern: she was some time without replying to me; but at last did thus express her self. I must confess with shame that I am mov'd, and give too much way to the pleasing news, that you can love me still: 'tis true, that since the moment I have known you, my thoughts of you have ever been the same; not absence, nor my vows, could ever destroy, nor time deface that charming dear idea; with jealousy and grief I have seen you engag'd to other women, and do still doat on you with the tenderness I ever did. She stopp'd, and I was seiz'd with unspeakable raptures; but the dreadful thought of the condition she was in, and the invincible impediments which oppos'd my bliss, soon damp'd my forward joy. Ah then, said I, since we ever lov'd each other, why did we thus deprive our selves of those sweets we might together have enjoy'd! what is there then no hope? oh! were you half as willing as my self, there are no ties should keep us asunder.

Here

Here she stopp'd my discourse, begging me not to entertain these idle thoughts, but to sacrifice to the almighty, as she had done, a passion contrary to his commands; she told me too, she found her death drew near, and by a secret warning, was admonish'd to prepare for it.

My sadness at these words was such, as I cannot express, and I desir'd her to interceed with heaven, that since we might not live together, I should at least die soon after her. This conversation lasted some hours, and was the last I had with her; for tho' in a seeming good health, she had no sooner left me, but was taken with a violent fever, and a short while after departed this life: I endeavour'd all I could to visit her once more, and often entreated a nun she lov'd to speak to her for me; but my *Carmelite* pray'd her to suffer her to forget me and all the world, that she might think of God alone.

Then she desir'd her to assure me, that she died with the same affection for me she ever had; and never mention'd me any more, only sometimes reflecting on the gifts of divine providence to her: she implor'd heaven to be as merciful to me; and I doubt not but it is to her prayers I stand indebted for having liv'd to an age, when I may reflect on my former wandrings.

I shall not undertake to describe my affliction: the reader may well imagine it was not small, for she died when my love was rais'd to its highest pitch.

I resolv'd to follow the good counsels she had given me; and at once inform'd my brother of my return, and design to lead a better life. I was fill'd with the best desires in the world; but the sequel of my history will shew, that I kept not my resolutions, and will afford as odd-adventures as those I have already related; which will I believe, be read with a greater pleasure, since with the history of my own follies will be intermix'd the most remarkable events of the time in which I liv'd, and in which I had so great a part as to be able to give a good account of them, yet without prejudicing any person, for I shall always take that precaution.

P A R T V.

A T my return from *Spain*, I found every thing in a better disposition than I expected for my favourable reception at court: my brother was made marshal de camp, at the promotion of the marshals *de Augnon*, *Palluan*, and *Mioffans*, and it happen'd that I contributed not a little to his interest in the queen and the cardinal. 'Twas very well known that I had follow'd the prince of *Conde*; but the queen only knew the commission he had given me to execute at the court of *Madrid*. She had often upbraided my brother with it; yet he neglected to inform me of her reproaches, either for that he had reasons to keep me still on the prince's side, or that hearing of my extravagancies, he did not think there was any likelihood of my subsisting in *France* in such difficult times. But when he saw I was come to my self, and was unwilling to lose any more time, he gave me the best advice he could upon every thing I had to do, and finding I was ready to follow his instructions, he went to wait upon the queen, and inform'd her that he had oblig'd me to leave the prince, and that I had been very instrumental in perswading the prince of *Conti* and madam *de Longueville* to accept of the pardon. These two articles were intirely false, and the latter not only untrue, but improbable; I never had any particular access to the prince of *Conti*, and very far from having contributed to his return to court, I never heard till I came to *Paris* that he inclin'd to it; nor that madam the princess, and her son the duke of *Enguien* were departed for *Brussels*. But it is not always necessary towards making one's court to have done real services; it suffices to make one's self of some consideration, and to attribute to one's self, in order to please the great men, the success of every thing that they desire; the queen without examining whether what my brother said was true or not, so passionately

sionately desir'd that the prince of *Conti* should quit the party of the rebels, and marry the cardinal's niece, that she receiv'd me, as if it had been to me alone that she was oblig'd for those two things.

My brother seeing her majesty gave into the deceit, that he might not be caught in a falsity, thought it convenient that I should appear to be very well with the prince of *Conti*, and sent me to *Bordeaux*, from whence he was not yet remov'd. He found out a pretence for my journey thither, and recommended me to the prince's chief favourite, acquainting him, that having some business at *Bordeaux*, I could not avoid paying my duty to his highness, and desiring him to introduce me.

The prince of *Conti*, who was as fond of the peace and the match as the queen, ask'd me a hundred questions about what pass'd at *Paris*; and I answered him so much to his satisfaction, that he open'd himself to me, and discover'd the extream desire he had to please her majesty; I took hold of this opportunity to concern myself in their reconciliation, and thus on a sudden I was in a condition to justify what my brother had said of me; and fully instructed in the prince's intentions, came back to court, where I told the queen so many particulars of my negotiations with him, that she was confirm'd in her belief that 'twas by my means that both the prince and his sister were so willing to make their peace with her.

This imaginary service contributed more to my fortune than if I had constantly continu'd in *France*. I perceiv'd by the success of this artifice, that my brother was a perfect courtier, and knew, the chief secret of succeeding in a court, is to value one's self to purpose, and lye boldly.

The queen order'd that I should have a commission to raise a regiment; but my brother representing to her that the charge would be too great for my pocket, she gave me one that became vacant by the death of ——— who was kill'd at the battle of *Bordilli*, in the marshal *Hequin-court's* army.

The prince of *Conti*, whom I left at *Pezenas*, came to *Paris* in *February*; the cardinal met him several miles out of the city, took him into his coach, and carry'd him to the *Louvre*, where, five or six days after, he marry'd

marry'd his niece. Tho' it was not above two or three months since my return, I found my self already engag'd in a new intrigue.

At the time when my design of retiring out of the world ran most in my head, I understood one of the highest magistrates in the kingdom had laid down his offices and employments, and liv'd retir'd in a house which he had built adjoining to a monastery in the neighbourhood of *Paris*: This person had been more than a year in this retirement, which was talk'd of as one of the most heroic actions of the age; every body went out of curiosity to see him, and none was more curious than my self in such a matter. Whatever flatter'd my intentions of renouncing the world pleas'd me; and I did not doubt but the example and conversation of this man, wou'd confirm me in my thoughts of retirement.

I visited him, told him what I intended, and he at first commended me; yet when we were grown better acquainted, he ingenuously confess'd, that if what he had done was to do again, he would never retire with so much noise; that of all designs a man could undertake, it was the most difficult, and that it generally made people uneasy, yet nevertheless he would continue in the course of life he was enter'd into, but would never advise any one to imitate him.

His reasons against solitude did not weigh with me so much as his example, and the change it had wrought in him. Before his retreat, he was famous for his wit and politeness; and since, he did not shew either of those qualities. He busied himself wholly about trifles, to place his desk and cushion right, or to set an image or a picture in a proper light was his chiefest employment; he grew peevish and difficult to be pleas'd; in short, he had learnt all the ill qualities of persons that live out of the world. He perceiv'd himself that he was chang'd for the worse, and he was extreamly mortify'd at it. He said, solitude was the cause of the alteration in his temper and manners, and he should have reason to be very sorry for his entring into it, if he did not hope that God would accept of it as an agreeable sacrifice. He wish'd for death as the end of all his troubles; and I could easily perceive, that had he not been more afraid of censure,

sure, than he was in love with vertue, he would not long have kept to his retirement. Amidst all his disquiets, there appear'd in him a great many vertuous principles ; and I was satisfisd that however he repented of his undertaking so difficult an attempt, yet he was a very good man : perhaps too he was so much the more holy as the life he had embrac'd less suited with his nature : however it might be, I fear'd more than ever a sanctity so painful, and resolv'd never to engage in it.

But after all I must own freely, that neither the difficulties of the enterprize, nor this magistrate's arguments, prevail'd with me so much to lay aside all thoughts of retiring, as the views I had of mending my fortune by the favour of the queen. While I had no prospect of getting any thing at court, I was very hot upon retreating to a cell, and burying my cares in a monastery ; but as soon as I was put at the head of a regiment, I again began to relish the vanity and the life of the world ; and all that had been told me concerning the difficulties of a retir'd life, seem'd to me to be an unanswerable reason for my leading another. 'Twas this which convinc'd me, that disgraces are the most common ways God makes use of to engage men to a solitary life, and that it is very rare to see men who are happy in the world, take a resolution to quit it.

I did not tell the story of this gentleman's retreating, purely to usher in these reflections ; it was because at a visit I made him, an inclination was rais'd in me which had yet more power to engage me again in the world, than the favour of the queen, or the councils of the magistrate.

One day then, that I went to see him, I found him with several ladies, whose curiosity had led them to his solitude. Among them there was one of the queen's maid's of honour, whose beauty and adventures had been much talk'd of. The duke of *Guise* had for eight years been in love with her, and would have married her : for this purpose he went to *Rome* to procure a dispensation from his holiness to divorce his wife. In *Italy* he engag'd himself in the expedition of *Naples* ; where he was taken by the *Spaniards*, and sent prisoner into *Spain*. His amours were as well known as his misfortunes, and
when

when I was at *Madrid*, I heard him openly speak of the Mistress he left in *France*, whom I had either never seen, or quite forgotten, having liv'd most part of my time out of the kingdom.

I saw her at the visit I am speaking of, and had an opportunity to converse with her that day, not only in a walk which took up great part of the afternoon, but also all along the road, for I came back to *Paris* with her. She knew I had seen the duke of *Guise* in my travels; she was also inform'd of that prince's inconstancy while he was abroad; and our conversation ran wholly on him and his intrigues. I took not much pains to justify the duke; I was not then well pleas'd with him, and I began to conceive such sentiments of his mistress, that I should not have been sorry if she had prov'd unfaithful to him.

It would not have been to require of her a matter that would have cost her much; for what obligation soever she had to the duke of *Guise*, for a passion which had expos'd him to so many accidents, and for whom he had shewn so remarkable a constancy, yet she had not forbore to listen to others. The duke of *Candale* made his addressees to her as soon as she appear'd at court, and in a little time left her, for a lady with whom he had made an acquaintance in a journey to *Avignon*. Then the duke of *Guise*, and the marquis de *Villequier*, at once fell in love with her, and were so little jealous of one another, that instead of quarrelling, they kept a very good correspondence, animating one another to render services to their mistress; and agreed between themselves, to have no other dispute about her, but who could love, and who could serve her best. They carried this new way of disputing for a mistress so far, as to endeavour to be kill'd for her sake; and every body said, that at the siege of *Dixmudy*, their emulation to surpass each other in the most daring enterprizes expos'd them to a thousand perils. *Villequier* was first weary of this kind of gallantry, and the duke remained without a rival in his amour. His mistress had manag'd herself so, that she had conceiv'd hopes of charming the duke of *Orleans*, and indeed the duke

duke shew'd an inclination that way, but it soon vanish'd ; for he was more inconstant than *Villequier*, and he applying himself to another maid of honour, the duke *de Guise* once more had the pleasure to have the lady to himself. Not long after, he went to *Rome* ; and his main design in throwing himself into *Naples* was to marry her as soon as he was master of the city, so when he thought the town was his own, he sent a procurator to a person to marry her by proxy in his name, as if he had been a sovereign. His vanity was laugh'd at by every body ; and being taken prisoner soon after, he was forc'd to put off his marriage to another time. While he was in prison the prince of ——— made his court to his mistress : she perceiving the prince was not of a humour to love long in a place, was so cunning as to turn the passion he had for her to the duke of *Guise's* advantage, and engaged him to sollicite for his liberty. In truth, 'twas generally believ'd, that it was at this prince's request that the queen obtain'd of her brother the king of *Spain* to suffer the duke to return to *France*. This important service made his mistress the more dear to him, and he lov'd her with greater passion than ever, when I resolv'd to endeavour to gain her good graces : my inclinations at first determin'd me to it, but afterwards observing that the lady was not so far engag'd with the duke but she would hearken to me, I rejoyc'd at this opportunity to revenge my self of him for the ill turns he play'd me in *Spain*.

I made haste to acquaint her of my love ; and being receiv'd by her very favourably, I began to grow vain ; for I was every way inferior to the duke of *Guise*, and 'twas no small pleasure to me to think I was preferr'd to a person of his quality and merit ; but my vanity again deceiv'd me. The lady did not listen to me with any other intention than to hide an intrigue which she had with a man of whom she was scandalously fond, as much below me as I was below the duke. He was a citizen's son, and descended from a Carrier of *Orleans*, he was handsome, but all his merit consisted in his shape.

I knew

I knew nothing of her amour, and was not so inquisitive as to find it out : the duke of *Guise* himself first told me of it. We saw one another often in *Spain*, and our conversing together there, had given us an assiduity to each other, common to persons that grow acquainted abroad, when they meet at home. The duke one day made me a confidence of his mistress's infidelity : he told me he had discover'd that she lov'd a fellow whom he intended to have whipt. Having no knowledge of her love for the citizen, it entred into my thoughts that the duke meant me, and that I was the very man of whom he talk'd so contemptuously. I answer'd suddenly, I wonder'd to hear him talk so ; and that the person whom he threatned with the lash might perhaps be a man able enough to teach him to be more moderate.

Never was man more amaz'd than the duke of *Guise* at what I said to him : he ask'd what I meant by it ? and what interest I had in the rascal ? still thinking myself to be the person he treated so scornfully, I reply'd in the same tone as before, I would meet him with my sword in hand, and let him know that a gentleman was not to be us'd at that rate. The duke laugh'd heartily at these words, asking me if I was grown mad ? I at last perceiv'd my error, and finding I was mistaken, I laugh'd as heartily as he did ; and told him, I talk'd so only to hear what he would say. This answer did not satisfy him ; 'twas in vain for me to protest I was all the while in jest ; the duke however left me without having the matter further explain'd.

This conversation made the duke believe that I was his rival's confidant : he told my brother of it, and he gave me to understand who the man was the duke spoke to me about : I then saw that my mistake was the most whimsical and unfortunate that could have happen'd. My mistress was in love with a person unworthy of her, and I was thought to be concern'd in the amour, and to be the confidant of so scandalous an intrigue. I assur'd my brother I was wholly a stranger to the man, and so far from assisting him, that I would be the first that should revenge the duke of *Guise* on his rival, and, if he pleas'd

pleas'd, fight him to chastise his insolence. My brother reply'd, 'twas enough; that he would undeceive the duke, and that I should do well not to meddle in the matter, nor see his mistress more. I promis'd to do as he would have me, though at the same time I resolv'd the quite contrary; and whether or no he had some suspicion that I dissembled with him, I that day had orders to go to my regiment, which was in *Flanders*: I was oblig'd to obey. The prince of *Conti* had besieg'd *Arras*, and the king's army was drawn together to oblige him to raise the siege. I went away without seeing the duke of *Guise* or his mistress, and was heartily vext that I had not an opportunity to undeceive the duke, nor to revenge my self on that faithless woman.

I scarce came to my regiment, when I receiv'd a long letter from her, in which she complain'd of me for telling the duke of *Guise* of the intrigue between her and me. She inform'd me that the duke had insulted her upon it; and that she should be forc'd to take shelter at a friend's house in *Guienne* to avoid being worse treated by him. She accus'd me as the cause of all her misfortunes, assuring me however that she still lov'd me enough to long to see me; adding, if I had the least consideration for her, I would not now abandon her, but follow her to *Guienne*, whither she was going, taking the road by the *Loire*.

This letter touch'd me, and I could not bear that she should charge me with doing her disservices in her amour with the duke of *Guise*: I had well nigh resolv'd to depart immediately, to clear my self of these accusations; and had certainly rode directly after her, had not the remembrance of the intrigue, which I was told she had with the person the duke of *Guise* rail'd against, restrain'd me. I was willing to be satisfied on that affair before I took such a journey; I wrote her word, that I had never spoke of her to that prince; and if he was angry with her, 'twas only on account of the citizen whom she entertain'd: I nam'd the man, and gave her an exact relation of all that I had heard about him and her, protesting if she could justify her self in that matter, I would leave all things to wait upon her.

I receiv'd

I receiv'd no answer; and a little while afterwards I understood how she and the duke of *Guise* came to fall out. The duke happen'd to light upon some of his rival's letters, and was so exasperated at it, that he not only us'd her ill, but commenc'd a suit against her. In this extremity she had recourse to the marshal d' ———; and the marshal d' ——— her old lovers, who gave her a guard to convey her to *Guienne*, accompanying her themselves part of the way. Her engagement with the citizen was so strong, she could not part from him. The fellow follow'd her in a disguise: the passion the marshal d' ——— had formerly for her rekindled this journey; and having been inform'd, that the duke of *Guise* was jealous of no body but me, he had no suspicion of her real lover, whom he saw every day without the least mistrust; at last he was convinc'd of her falshood, and treated her as roughly as the duke had done; which oblig'd her to leave *France*, and retire to *Brussels*. The duke of *Guise* went on board the fleet which he commanded, and besieg'd *Castellamare* in the kingdom of *Naples*.

'Tis plain the young gentlewoman would have had me come to her to *Guienne*, for nothing but to confirm a report which she had spread that I was the only rival the duke of *Guise* could charge her with; and this artifice she hop'd would conceal the true cause of her quarrel with him; by which means she might without scandal continue to see and to love her dear citizen: I have good reason to believe this was all she meant by inviting me to come to her; and 'twas very well for me that my duty call'd me so far from such an unfaithful creature; but it was ordain'd that I should always be blind and easy, and could not resist the letters she wrote me upon her being compell'd to quit her own country. I did not receive them 'till the campaign was over, in which there had an accident fallen out which ought to have open'd my eyes, and make me more cautious than I was, to avoid the rocks and shelves that lovers are too apt to run upon.

There was never a more glorious campaign; monsieur the prince was forc'd in his lines, and oblig'd to
raise

raise the siege of *Arras*. Monsieur de *Turenne*, to whom the glory of the action was chiefly owing, laid siege to *Quesnei*: I follow'd him thither, and our army having made themselves masters of the place, I join'd the marshal *de la Ferté*, who kept the field till the latter end of *November*. My brother serv'd under him, and by his orders besieg'd *Clermont* in *Argant*: and the marshal commanded me to serve with my regiment in this enterprize.

Among my captains, there was one who having been a private soldier a long time, by his good service had got a company: he was an excellent officer, and his age and experience deserv'd, I thought, some distinction from the rest of his fellow-officers. My deference for him, gain'd his esteem for me. He seem'd to be out of humour all the campaign; and I often examin'd him concerning the occasion of it. After we had taken *Clermont*, the army being about to be put into winter-quarters, the old captain came to me one morning, and beg'd me to procure him a passport for him to go to *Spain* or *England*; since, as he told me, he could not stay in *France* without runing the risk of being hang'd, for that he should be prosecuted for a capital crime; and if he was condemn'd, there was no hopes of pardon. I prest him to tell what it was: he excus'd himself for a good while, at last he confess'd he had kill'd his wife. He had hopes, he said, that the murder would not be found out; but a friend of his had advis'd him that search had been made for him, and that monsieur the marshal would suddenly have orders to arrest him.

I answer'd that he would do well to make his escape; for tho' the marshal should not have him arrested, I would notwithstanding oblige him to part with his company, for I could not suffer a man in my regiment, that had been guilty of so wicked an action. He reply'd, if I knew what provocation he had to kill his wife, I would forgive him, and should have done as much had I been in his place. This excited my curiosity. I desired him to tell me what it was that had so highly provok'd him? he related the whole matter to me, and I was surpriz'd to understand, that the woman he had
kill'd

kill'd was monsieur *de Cinq Mars's* mistress, of whom I have spoken, and whom I lov'd fourteen or fifteen years ago, and who had so often set her wits to work to pick my pocket; though I pitied her death, I in some measure excus'd the cruelty of the captain, and help'd him to get out of the way. He told me the circumstances of the affair in the manner following; which I found to be true when I return'd to *Paris*, where the thing was very well known.

This woman fell from being monsieur *de Cinq Mars's* mistress, to be mademoiselle *de L* ———'s confidant; monsieur *de Cinq Mars* came acquainted with the latter at the visits he made the former, and finding her to be much handsomer, he made no scruple to address himself to her. He appeas'd his first mistress by the force of his presents; and mademoiselle *de L* ——— being not so self-interested as her confidant, she generously gave her part of her lover's bounty, and, as I mention'd before, she was very rich when monsieur *de Cinq Mars* died.

When I knew her first, monsieur *de Cinq Mars* had turn'd her off; but I was so young and unexperienc'd in intrigues, that she easily hid her disgrace from me, and she manag'd it so, that I never saw mademoiselle *de L* ——— at her house. I did not know that monsieur *de Cinq Mars* had another mistress; which without doubt was the reason that I found such easy access to her: and that my brother laugh'd at me as often as I talk'd of her to him. Interest was the reigning passion of this lady; she not only was very well contented to be her rival's confidant in her amour with monsieur *de Cinq Mars*, but was in hopes, as well as mademoiselle *de L* ——— that her friend would gain the affection of a great minister, and marry one of the most considerable officers of the crown.

I shall say nothing of the first of her expectations, believing all that has been said on that subject was invented by cardinal *Richlieu's* enemies. But 'tis certain mademoiselle *de L* ——— had married a comptroller of the finances, had she not been betray'd by her confidant: for she who by interest had been brought to

assist the amours of her rival, made no scruple of betraying them when she found it for her advantage.

The comptroller-general having gain'd her by his presents, she inform'd him that mademoiselle de L ——— had an intrigue with a councillor in the parliament of *Paris*; and shew'd him by ocular demonstration that she was unfaithful. Mademoiselle de L ——— understanding her friend had prov'd so treacherous to her, broke off all manner of correspondence with her, and met with a more generous friend in mademoiselle N ———, who was then and is still the wittiest girl in the world.

Mademoiselle de L ——— and her confident being fallen out, the latter had no hopes of encreasing her riches by another such profitable negotiation, wherefore she thought of settling her self by an advantagious match. Her reputation was quite lost, yet she was for marrying some man of note; she could not entertain any thoughts of matching her self to a *Frenchman*, however she met with an husband in the count d, ———, a relation of the king of *Denmark*, in whom she had what she desir'd, quality enough, being the wife of a prince, which gave her the title to precedence above her hopes or ambition.

The count liv'd with her a year or two, spent the greatest part of her fortune, and then return'd to *Denmark*, whither she refus'd to follow him. Her husband's extravagancies had reduc'd her to such streights, that in a little while after he had left her, she had much ado to keep up her equipage. She maintain'd her self by her credit; but debts came so thick upon her, that at last she had no way of living any longer unless she took upon her the old trade again; but times were changed; she could find no such lovers as monsieur de *Cinq Mars*, nor such confidants as mademoiselle d' L ———. It grew worse and worse with her, yet still she dragg'd after her the quality of a *Danish* princess; with which she impos'd on the city-ladies only, who reckon'd themselves highly honour'd in the visits of a princess.

Her husband having receiv'd information of the course of life she led before he marry'd her, would never after
hear

hear her name; and was endeavouring even when he dy'd to annul the marriage. At his death she found herself at liberty to marry again, and instead of vast ideas of a principality, which determin'd her to accept of her first husband, she had no other view in the choice of a second, but where to light on a man who could relieve her necessities. The old captain I have mention'd was become very much in love with her; though he had no estate, he was so good a husband, that he had saved enough out of his pay to be able now and then to lend her a few crowns; and this poor man had reduced himself to live upon little else than tobacco and brandy, that he might have wherewithal to maintain his mistress. As soon as he had got a company he propos'd marriage to her; she consented, on condition it might be conceal'd: he accepted of this condition, and by passing for a gallant, prevented the scandal that would have been thrown upon him, had it been known that he was her husband. After he had marry'd her, he perceiv'd that she was not of a humour to be contented with the supplies he furnished her with by his frugality, but that she had other ways of raising money.

To be certain that she was inconstant, he disguis'd himself, and being equipp'd like a man of the first quality, went to one of those useful women whose business it is to lessen the formalities of love, and bring the gallant and the lady presently together. The woman deceiv'd by his appearance, undertook to manage his wife, and telling her that a great lord was dying for her, perswaded her to give him a meeting: she came to the rendezvous, and her husband being convinc'd that there was nothing more necessary to prove her infidelity, drew his sword and ran her through the body.

Such was the fate of this unhappy wretch, who, wicked as she was, wanted neither breeding nor wit; and I confess I pitied her the more, remembering how heartily I once lov'd her. I blamed the captain for his brutality, and could not forbear laughing to hear him urge his starving himself to make her presents, as the principal reason for justifying his severity in killing her.

At the end of the campaign I receiv'd the letter I mention'd, by which the mistress of my heart acquainted me that she was at *Brussels*, and passionately desired to see me. The letter was tender and moving, and I was so weak as to read it a hundred times over, till it enter'd into my head, that she could not write so fondly had not she lov'd me in good earnest. I had nothing to say against her, could I have conquer'd my jealousy of the citizen, about whom the duke *de Guise* had quarrell'd with her. At my return to *Paris*, seeing the fellow there, carrying himself as if he had no interest in her, I fancy'd all that I had heard might perhaps be false. To satisfy my self on that point, I made an excuse to visit the marshal *de*———, who waited on her to *Guienne*, and discoursing on her adventures, he assur'd me that all those reports were without any foundation; and if the young lady lov'd any man, it was certainly my self. No, says the marshal, embracing me, she has no true love for any one but you; and to you only she sacrific'd us all. These words struck me stark blind, and not mistrusting that the marshal talk'd so out of pure malice, which however was the truth of the matter, I imagin'd that I was the happy favourite of this traitress: and from that moment resolv'd to follow her to *Brussels*.

I cannot comprehend my self how it was possible that I, who had so often experienc'd the falshood of the fair, could be such a fool as to be trick'd again: and I am perswaded that all who shall read these Memoirs, will take me for a blockhead, to be always cully'd and abus'd by my mistresses. I wish they may be wiser than I have been; and that their prudence may be useful to them on those occasions: but indeed, prudence is of little use where we stupidly give our selves up to vanity and love: Perhaps I am not the only man that has been blinded by his passions, and it may be several others will find their own likeness in the picture I have drawn of my self.

I now thought my self oblig'd to go to *Brussels*; and to make the shame and imprudence of the journey seem less in my own thoughts, I resolv'd not to be absent

sent from *Paris* above three weeks, intending to return as soon as I had seen what my mistress was doing there. Pish, says I to my self, what is a three weeks journey? no body shall know it, and I shall have the pleasure at least to shew a young lady that I love her, and that I only deserve to be beloved by her.

I pretended my presence was necessary at an estate I had about fifty leagues from *Paris*, where I had never been in my life, and from whence I had been able to get very few remittances. My brother lik'd very well that I was so careful of my affairs, and commended me highly for it; though in truth I was all the while meditating to run madly on an extravagant adventure, that was the only way to ruin me for ever. I departed from *Paris*, sending my servants before to wait for me at my estate: taking post-horses I arriv'd at ——— in a few hours, where, by means of the governor who was my friend, I easily found ways to pass on *incognito* to *Brussels*.

As I had resolv'd not to be long upon this journey; and besides, as I had a thousand reasons, supposing I intended to return to *France*, why I would not see the prince of *Conde*: the better to conceal my self, I thought proper to make as if I was one of the duke of *Lorraine's* domesticks. This duke had been arrested by the arch-duke, governor of the *Netherlands*, and sent to the cittadel of *Antwerp*, where he was still a prisoner. The pretence that was made use of to arrest him was, that he authorized his soldiers in those robberies and spoils which they committed; but the true cause of his being arrested was their fearing what hath since happen'd, that he would deliver up his country to the crown of *France*.

I impos'd my self on a burgher of *Brussels*, in whose house I lodged, for a person that belong'd to the duke of *Lorraine*, pretending I came to *Brussels* on his account, to see a lady with whom he was in love. The burgher ask'd me if it was not she who came lately from *France*? naming my mistress: I answer'd it was that very lady the duke my master had sent me thither about. The honest *Fleming* reply'd, 'twas pity so brave a man as the duke of *Lorraine* should have any thing to do with such

a devil, who had as many lovers as she could see men; for since the duke was imprison'd, she had first an intrigue with the count *de Bouteville*; afterwards with the prince of *Conde*; and then with a *Spaniard* who was in great favour with the arch-duke; and every body believed that the chief reason of the duke of *Lorrain's* confinement was this *Spaniard's* jealousy of him.

I let the *Fleming* run on thus as long as he pleas'd; all that he had said to me had no other effect than to make me more desirous to see my mistress. Indeed, I thought I desired to see her for nothing but to confound her: I begg'd my landlord to find her out, and tell her, that a gentleman belonging to the duke of *Lorrain* was come to *Brussels* to deliver her some letters from his master. She answer'd him that I should attend her the next day about ten a clock in the forenoon: I waited with impatience for the hour appointed; but at seven a clock in the morning I was arrested in the name of the arch-duke. Those that arrested me told me, the arch-duke understanding that I belong'd to the duke of *Lorrain*, would send me back to my master, who perhaps had occasion for me, and to whom I should be convey'd with safety.

I was going to discover my self, and had done it, but that I consider'd it might be the worse for me; so I continu'd to pass for one of the duke's domesticks. I demanded only, if I might be permitted to see a lady, which was all the business my master sent me thither for; that it was an affair of gallantry, and I would not even talk to her but before witnesses. I was answer'd by the officers, that they would see whether that favour could be allow'd me; and an hour after I was conducted to her lodgings.

For the understanding of this, it must be remark'd, that as soon as the *Fleming* had told the person I sought after, that a domestick of the duke of *Lorrain's* wanted to see her; this woman, who was willing to hide her engagements with the count *de Bouteville* from her *Spaniard*, resolv'd to take hold of this opportunity to shew that she sacrific'd the duke to him. She acquainted him, as a mark of her particular affection for him, that one
of

of the duke of *Lorrain's* gentlemen was in *Brussels*. The *Spaniard* upon this got an order of the arch-duke to have me arrested, and sent back to my master. He was inform'd, that notwithstanding I was discover'd, I still demanded to see the lady for whose sake the duke sent me to *Brussels*; and the man being willing to hear what I would say to her, and she to me, consented to it, hoping that at our meeting his triumph over the duke of *Lorrain* would be the more glorious and apparent.

They accordingly carried me to her house, where the *Spaniard* was got before me, to be a witness of my visit. I found her alone with him, and as soon as I entered the room, all my attendants withdrew. She was extremely surprized to see me; but the *Spaniard* and I were both of us much more so: it was the very same *Spaniard* of whom I have formerly spoke, under the name of *Manrique*, who had sworn to be the death of me when I left *Madrid*.

As soon as he saw me, he look'd on his mistress and turn'd pale; she blush'd to see him change countenance, and could not tell what to think of it. As for my self, I believe my colour came and went successively as well as theirs. It was truly a very comick scene; and when I call it to mind, even now, I can scarce forbear laughing; though at that time, I confess, I had no great disposition to be merry, on the contrary, I began to be really afraid. However, on a sudden, I resolv'd to make my way through the dangers that threaten'd me, and at once to revenge my self of the traitors, and get clear of the *Spaniard*. If I had had time to reflect, I should hardly have done what I did; but then I only thought how to deliver my self from a danger, to which I was sensible my mistress did not deserve that I should expose my self for her sake.

My lord, said I, addressing my self to *Manrique*, it is your self that I want. I ask'd to see the young gentleman here, because I knew I should find you with her; I was willing to make you amends for the trouble I gave you at *Madrid*, by rendering you an essential piece of service at *Brussels*; which is to inform you that you are deceived as well as my self. The person you see be-

fore you is unworthy to be beloved by such men as you and I are. At the same time that she hearkens to you, she writes the most tender letters in the world to me; she amuses both of us only to hide her intrigue with the count *de Bouteville*.

When I had done speaking, the *Spaniard* look'd on his mistress, putting his hand on his sword; and though she might have imagin'd that it was only a *Spanish* air, she cry'd out as if she had been already stuck: her women hearing her cries ran in to help her; she pointed to the *Spaniard*, and told 'em he would have assassinated her. The women fell upon him, I followed their examples; and while they held him by the throat I seiz'd his sword, the officers that arrested me having taken away mine.

When my mistress saw I had his sword in my hand, she seem'd to take heart, and commanding her women to barricade the door that no body might enter upon them, she took the sword out of my hand, and gave the *Spaniard* a blow with it that struck him to the ground half dead. The man roar'd while the women held him down, and their mistress beat him.

His men hearing the noise endeavour'd to break open the door; believing I should have the worst of it if they enter'd, I ran into a wardrobe adjoining to the chamber we were in, where there was a stair-case which happily led me to a trap-door that open'd to the top of the house; and out I got upon the tiles: yet not thinking my self safe enough there, I descended the same stairs, and met with one of the lady's women who attack'd the *Spaniard*, and she assured me the danger was over; that the man was surrendred to his servants; and their mistress was preparing her self to go to make her complaints to the prince of *Conde* and the arch-duke, to whom she had sent word that she had like to have been assassinated in her own house; in the mean while she advis'd me to be cautious how I appear'd abroad, and offer'd to hide me in a place where it was impossible any one could find me, so she conducted me down to a cellar, where I suffered her to lock me in,

I stay'd there all the rest of the day, not knowing how this business would end. Things did better than I expected

pected; my mistress went to the prince, who carry'd her to the arch-duke. She told them that the *Spaniard* came to her lodgings that morning and offered violence to her; that by the help of her women she took his sword from him, he having drawn it upon her; with which she wounded him. She made no mention of me; and the *Spaniard* in vain protested, that it was a domestick of the duke of *Lorrain*, his mortal enemy, who would have assassinated him. What he said was taken to be the effect of his ravings occasion'd by a violent fever, into which he fell as soon as he was carry'd back to his own house. The report of this adventure presently flew all over the city: every one commending the courage of the young lady, who, with the assistance of her women only, had so bravely resisted the assault of a ravisher. The arch-duke promised the prince all the satisfaction he could desire. The lady was attended to her house in a sort of triumph; and all the remaining part of the day she was visited by most of the persons of quality of both sexes in *Brussels*.

She learn'd where I was; and tho' she ought to have been outrageous with me after what I had said of her to the *Spaniard*, yet her curiosity to know what had brought me to *Brussels* got the better of her resentment; and when she was alone, she commanded that I should be let out of my dungeon and brought into her chamber; I told her I had not come to *Brussels* had she not sent for me; but being inform'd of her intrigues, I could not forbear reproaching her with them: I acquainted her also with part of my quarrels with *Manrique* at *Madrid*.

She wept plentifully on account of the ill opinion I had of her, swearing that she really lov'd no body but me. I was again soften'd by her tears, and in a short time our peace was made. She said, that after this accident she should not be able to stay at *Brussels*; because whatever promises the arch-duke had given her of his protection, she should still distrust the *Spaniards*, who at one time or other would do her a mischief. In the mean while she advis'd me not to appear in the city; and if possible to be gone that very night; giving me her word that she would follow me out of hand: that she had heard the duke *de Guise* had a new mistress; though if that was

not true, she did not think he could be come back from his expedition at sea so soon ; or if he was, she did not fear him ; nor wanted friends to take her part in case he continu'd to persecute her.

I believ'd all that she would have me believe ; at least, I made as if I did, for I had an extream desire to return to *France* ; and heartily repented of my unfortunate journey. However, as impatient as I was to depart, I consider'd that I should expose my self to new perils if I ventur'd out of *Brussels* without a pass. We consulted together on the way to procure one, and resolv'd that I should stay one day more at her house, whilst she convinc'd the prince of *Conde* that it was not convenient for her to stay where she was ; and pray'd him to get passes for her and her servants ; by means of which I might make my escape.

Every thing succeeded to our wish, and the next day we got what passes we wanted. I disguis'd my self like a mule-driver, and went out of *Brussels* leading two mules ; upon which she had loaded part of her baggage. In this equipage I arriv'd at——, having with me the only *valet de Chambre* that waited on me in this journey : he led one of the mules, and knew no better than I did how to manage those stubborn animals, that tir'd our patience long before we came to the inn: One of them fell into a slough, and threw down the baggage she was loaden with, and we had much ado to pull her out and load her again. Among the things that fell, was a little cabinet, which was all broken to pieces : I put it together as well as I could, and was forc'd to carry it under my arm till we came to—— : the cabinet was full of letters, the reading of which employ'd me all the evening whilst I staid at the inn, where I had orders to leave the mules and the baggage ; and being unwilling to make my self known to the governor, I took post at midnight and went away, carrying the letters with me.

Two days after I arriv'd at my estate, where I had sent my men, who began now to be in pain for me. I staid there two days, and then return'd to *Paris* just three weeks after I had left it ; my brother, nor any one else, having the least suspicion of my journey to *Brussels*. I found my self entirely cured of the passion that was the occasion

occasion of it, and I was never so thoroughly persuaded, as now, that I should never again be blinded by love. I prais'd heaven a thousand times that I got out of *Brussels* so luckily as I did; and that I found in the letters which fell into my hands, new arguments to avoid the follies that I had cause to reproach my self with.

Almost all these letters were from the citizen, on whose account my mistress had had such a quarrel with the duke *de Guise*, and the marshal *de* ———; and by the stile in which they were wrote it plainly appear'd, that this man had the greatest share of her heart. There was one of a very late date, in which he inform'd her that he was sick, and begg'd her to do what she could to come back to *Paris*. I believe it was the effect of this letter which made her tell me she could not stay at *Brussels*; and imagin'd, that the sickness of her citizen was much more the cause of her intended return, than her fear of the *Spaniards*.

The thought of this fellow's being prefer'd to her favour quite extinguish'd my flame; and nothing could be a greater proof of my change, than the indifference with which I heard what had happen'd to her after my departure. The count *de Bouteville* would not consent that she should return to *France*. In vain she said her baggage was gone: the mules were sent for back again, and not finding her cabinet of letters she believ'd I had taken it; and this in some measure contributed to her resolution of staying in *Flanders*.

However, fearing that the *Spaniards* would give her foul play, in revenge of the wounds she gave the *Spanish* lord, she left *Brussels*. *Bouteville* for some time conceal'd her at *Antwerp*; he afterwards carried her to the *Hague*, where the Rhinegrave fell in love with her. This amour caus'd a breach between *Bouteville* and her; and her citizen's sickness encreasing, she return'd to *Paris* to see him. I was so generous as to restore her letters, and to speak to her when we happen'd to meet as if I never lov'd her; she behav'd her self much after the same manner, and did that out of passion, which I was induc'd to do by reason; and at last her anger ceas'd, and she had as little regard for me as I had for her: for there

is no passion or prejudice but may be overcome when one goes about it in earnest.

We have not the same strength to encounter with a new passion as to forget an old one; and I was no sooner cur'd of this I am talking of, than I engag'd in another. Indeed, for a year or two my engagements were not so strong as formerly, and were even of another nature than those I had hitherto; however, they serv'd to give me new lights into the character of women.

I was one day at an assembly which a lady of quality held at certain times, for the benefit of a poor society in the country, which she took under her protection: the lady's custom at the meeting was to make a gathering, and she generally chose the prettiest of her acquaintance for that office. It was less for the sake of the poor, than for love of the fair beggar that the men went to the assembly; but the devout by profession do not care out of what motive they give alms, provided they have the glory of distributing them.

When I was one of the company, the lady I am talking of chose a beggar whom I lik'd extremly; she was her niece, about eighteen years of age, and tho' she was not a perfect beauty, yet she wanted nothing necessary to please and to charm. She had a very fine shape, and so much life and agreeableness in her person and carriage, that I was sensibly touch'd, and endeavour'd to get an occasion to speak to her. It was not long before I had the opportunity I wish'd for: I talk'd to her, and was less charm'd by her beauty than by her wit, which was very delicate, and as I thought, solid; for in our conversation she seem'd to be far above those trifles that most of her age and sex delight in; I found her mind was already as well inform'd, and her wit as well cultivated as could be; and that her judgment was good in all things. This quality weigh'd very much with me; for notwithstanding my folly and extravagance, I always relish'd polite learning; and except love and gallantry, I took pleasure in nothing so much as in reading and study. The fair one I speak of, besides all these rare endowments, had another that render'd her still more amiable, which was, she sung perfectly well.

Resolved

I resolv'd for these reasons to make love to her ; she at that time liv'd with her aunt, and it was not long before I insinuated my self so happily into her friendship, that I saw her neice almost as often as I pleas'd : I soon declar'd to her my sentiments, and by the reception she gave me, I was persuaded my person was not indifferent to her ; and indeed after two or three visits I began to think that she either lov'd me, or would love me in a little while. But my fond hopes soon vanish'd : she suspected that her aunt would have me for her self, and she did not think it convenient to give her any more occasion of offence than what she had already innocently administred. The lady, who was naturally jealous, accus'd her husband of having an inclination for her neice ; and on this account was very unkind to her kinswoman.

My mistress was loth to disoblige her aunt ; and imagining that she would be her rival if she look'd favourably on me, the young lady not only refus'd to hearken to me, but was very shy when I was in her company. I could not see her so cold without being very uneasy ; and the more because I knew her shiness was founded on a false apprehension. She believ'd her aunt and I understood one another ; and indeed the good lady appear'd to be very fond of me, yet all her aim by it was to engage me to visit her often, and make one at play ; for gaming was her predominant passion, notwithstanding she was one of the godly. As for my self, I had not the least regard for her more than for any other woman of her age and quality ; however, by her courting me to come often to her house, and by her following me up and down, it was thought we were more intimate than either of us desir'd to be ; this imagination, as visionary as it was, lost me a mistress whom I esteem'd above all the women in the world. I could not break her of her shiness by any other means than by forbearing my visits to her aunt, which was the worst way I could take ; for it would deprive me of the opportunities I had to see her self ; and I had rather let her think what she would of me, than lose the pleasure of seeing her : besides, I did not believe she lov'd me enough to think of me when I was out of her sight.

I therefore

I therefore continu'd to visit the aunt ; and seeing her niece every day without receiving any thing from her but compliments in general, it vex'd me to the heart : I was sometimes so angry with her, that I thought of hating her for not entertaining a better opinion of me ; but yet I could not cease loving her how little justice soever she render'd me. I say, she render'd me but little justice, for had it been true that her aunt had lov'd me, she ought to have had so much esteem for me, as to be persuaded that I should never have been capable of attempting to deserve her there. I cannot tell whether she was not more just to me afterwards ; she seem'd at least to take notice that I never miss'd any occasion to please her. It was partly for this reason that I kept up my correspondence with her aunt ; but the niece and I understood one another so little, that she did not reap the advantage she might from my counsels and cares ; and I had the misfortune to see, that out of distrust of my friendship for her aunt, she became the victim of the old lady's jealousy. Her uncle, on whose protection she depended, had not the courage to protect her as he ought to have done against his wife's ill treatment, nor to render her those services which she might have expected. Thus by an unhappy mistake in refusing to love me, she fell into worse inconveniencies than those she fear'd from loving me.

While I was in love with this young lady, and visited her aunt with whom she dwelt, I grew acquainted with several ladies of quality at *Paris*, who meddled much with acts of charity and devotion, and made a particular profession of being devout. Having acquir'd a talent of humouring persons of all sorts of opinions and tempers, and not quite forgot what I had learnt at the *Sorbonne* while I was an abbot, I talk'd of religion with these godly women as much as they would have me ; and by my maxims of morality I made them believe I was a very sober man, and well vers'd in theology.

One of these devout persons, a very rich lady, and of the first rank, seem'd to be mightily pleas'd with my science in ethics, and begg'd me to come and see her that I might resolve her in a case of conscience, which was so difficult, that hitherto she had not been able to satisfy her
self

self about it. I could scarce forbear laughing, to hear a lady of her quality desire a cavalier to settle the peace of her conscience : I was wonderfully pleas'd with the employment, and immediately guess'd what would be the issue of the matter ; nor was I deceiv'd in my judgment.

The lady was one of the finest women in the world ; she had the air and port of a queen, and in her youth was famous for her beauty and gallantry. She was near forty when I became acquainted with her, yet she was handsome enough to kindle a flame in the most frozen breast ; and I confess I began to take fire, when she told me she wanted to consult me.

I did not prepare my self by studying the casuists for the visit I was to make ; I was more solicitous about dressing to the best advantage, than furnishing my self with arguments to solve the doubts of her mind.

I waited upon her in a very rich suit, and she was not wanting on her part to make the best appearance she could : her dress was as fine and as rich as my own ; and never was spiritual conference better set off than ours.

I had good ground to believe, when I saw her so gloriously equip'd, that she had forgot the business I came about : but I was extremely surpriz'd to hear her begin by informing me how much she was disturb'd by a certain director, or ghostly father, who she suspected had a passion for her ; and my surprize encreas'd, when she told me this director was curate of the parish which was her estate, and where she us'd to spend a good part of the year. In short the curate was a peasant's son, and one of the most frightful figures that was ever seen.

I ask'd her what proofs she had of the passion which gave her such disturbance ? and in answer she shew'd me three or four of the curate's letters. By the manner in which these letters were written, I saw presently that a cavalier was fitter to decide this case of conscience than a parson : for never man express'd his love with less precaution than the curate had done. When I had read the letters, I told her that I had learning enough to declare, that the man who wrote them was certainly in love with her. Ah ! sir, said she, I always was doubtful of it, and am now heartily glad that I have the judgment of such

an able man as you are. But, madam, said I, my knowledge extends much farther, and I have so much studied these matters on which you consult me, to see that this man not only is in love with you, but also that you love him; for he durst not have written to you as he has done in these letters, unless you had given him encouragement. At these words she blush'd, and cry'd out, oh! how I am charm'd by your penetration, and how I rejoice that I have met with a person the most able of any man living to give light in such a dark affair: I perceive nothing is hid from you, you have discover'd by your insight into the recesses of the soul, what I could never have confess'd. How! madam, said I, is it possible that you can be guilty of so unworthy an inclination, and so blind as not to make a scruple of it? She answer'd, if I had not made a scruple of it, I had not consulted you about it. It is a long time since, that I have been dissatisfied in my self, and that I perceiv'd my correspondence with this man had the resemblance of a passion; yet the man being honest, and meaning no harm, I have hitherto permitted it.

This discourse startled me beyond expression; for the lady who said it was neither foolish nor mad; and I could scarce believe, after what I heard, that she was not either the one or the other.

I had not till then known how far it was possible for a deceiv'd conscience to be abus'd, when it intirely confides in a rascal cover'd with a black cloak.

I pity'd her infatuation: assuming a tone for which I was not prepar'd, I inform'd her that she was oblig'd in conscience never to have any further commerce with the curate, whom she ought immediately to expel the parish. Why so? says the lady; nothing criminal hath past between him and me: these letters and some other little affiduities are all that we can charge our selves with.

At this I took upon me the character of a true director, and remonstrated to her, that she ought not to think her correspondence with the curate innocent, because she had not granted him the last favour. In a word, as profane as I am, I told her what a great many directors would fain hide from their penitents. I endeavour'd to convince her that all engagements were criminal, as soon

as the heart was concern'd in them ; and that that devotion which serves for an occasion or a colour to them, is downright hypocrisy.

I own, had I not lov'd the lady my self, I should not have talk'd to her as I did ; but I was jealous of the parson, and with indignation reflected upon her familiarity with him. So true it is, that let a man be never so much in love with justice and truth, when he has a passion for a fair one, he will find it necessary to be animated by some secret interest to speak some certain truths.

I can't tell whether or no she perceiv'd my jealousy ; or whether her profession of devotion dispos'd her to have a good opinion of one whose sentiments were so pious : sure I am, that from this conversation she did what she could to persuade me I was belov'd.

She began contriving a hundred pretty ways to make me presents : she did not let a day go over her head without sending to ask how I did, or to desire my company ; and I believe I should have preferr'd the part she gave me of being her director to any other, if it had been the fashion in those days for ladies to have men of my profession for their directors. I was so sincere I could not away with such hypocrisy, nor belye the morals I preach'd to her. I industriously avoided meeting her ; and sought out for mistresses who would not put me on the necessity of deceiving them.

The world will wonder at my honesty, at a time when there are so many histories extant which informs them, that devotion might be made subservient to gallantry. However, it was not so much in use in the days I am talking of ; neither do I think it lawful for a man of honour to profane all that is holy in religion, by amorous intrigues.

I had therefore the courage to write the lady word, that the same reasons which oblig'd me to make a scruple of her correspondence with the curate, convinc'd me that I ought to have no such commerce with her my self ; and since she was in the right way in professing her self to be one of the devout, I thought it my duty to forbear visiting her, that I might not mislead her. I advis'd her in the same letter to shun me on the other side, that she might maintain the character she profess ; which after all was the best in the world. As

As soon as she receiv'd my letter she return'd me an answer full of rage and despair ; there was not the least shadow of her devotion or scruples in it : it was all furious and vehement ; the least evil that she threatned to do her self was to hang or drown. I was not proof against this vehemence ; I ran to her, and found that she was remov'd in such a manner from one extremity to the other, that every thing which put her in mind of her devotion struck her with horror. She told me she could not live without me ; and since her character of devout displeas'd me, she would be any thing that I would have her.

I had even now the resolution to represent to her the injury she would do her self, if the change of her life was taken notice of : I told her that such an alteration would put the world on examining into her conduct, and speaking of her the more freely, for that every body is dispos'd to rally persons of her profession.

These reasons did not weigh with her, and she compel'd me to promise her, before I left her, that I would marry her. The marriage was for my advantage ; but I foresaw the obstacles that her family would throw in the way, which made me not depend upon it, whatever I had said to her or she to me : I only flatter'd her to amuse her till she might recover the use of her understanding.

In the mean while she thought she could not please me better than by laying aside all the appearances of her devotion. She came to all the publick assemblies ; never mis'd the play, or some other publick spectacle ; which presently occasion'd a discourse that she intended to marry again.

What I expected happen'd ; the town did not spare her, a hundred stories were told of her ; some men less scrupulous than my self made their advantage of the opportunities she gave them ; and in a little while I had a crowd of rivals, which accusom'd me to think of her less and less, till at last I forgot her.

The more regularly she liv'd before her change, the more irregular her course of life seem'd to the publick ; from all which I concluded, that nothing is more likely to dispose persons to licentiousness than devotion ill understood.

After

After she had led this sort of life for some time, she hearken'd to proposals made by the duke of ——whom she marry'd. This match kept up her rank; and it was for this reason that she preferred him to others who were richer, and presented themselves to her in great numbers.

When the propositions of marriage were made her, I had almost given over visiting her; and I at first heard the news with a great deal of satisfaction. The wrong steps she had lately taken, and the little care she had of her reputation, had wean'd my affections from her so far, that I concern'd my self very little about her. Notwithstanding when I saw she was actually going to be marry'd, and did not condescend to communicate her design to me, though it was contrary to all the promises she had given, I had a secret spight against the negligence she shew'd, and was willing to see how she would bear my reproaches.

I wrote her a long letter, and affected to seem more troubled at her marriage than I really was; I thought to shew nothing but resentment in what I wrote her, yet my passion not being quite extinguish'd, there mingled as much love in the composition as resentment.

The letter was not deliver'd to her till two or three days after her marriage; and having heard nothing from her, I suppos'd she had either not read it, or scorn'd to answer it. I was making these conclusions upon her carriage one morning at day-break, when word was brought me that a woman from her demanded to speak with me. It was she her self, and I was extreamly surpriz'd to see her enter my chamber, disguis'd like one of the sisters with the grey-hoods.

She told me she could not overcome the trouble my letter gave her; and the better to demonstrate the despair she was in for having given me cause to complain of her, she was come in person to assure me she never had married, if she thought I had really lov'd her. However, since what was done could not be undone, she would shew how dear I was to her, by the contempt she had for her husband.

I admir'd at the fatality of my conversation with her, which always unavoidably ran on religious matters, and oblig'd me to act the part of a father-confessor.

I have already mention'd the occasions she had given me to preach to her, and I could not in this case do otherwise than to exhort her to live lovingly with her husband,

husband, and resume her former profession of being devout.

She did not expect any such serious counsel from me ; and answer'd me at first in a great fury : I insisted still on the proposition with which I began, and represented to her, that the best thing she could do was to make a virtue of necessity, and improve the affliction of an unhappy marriage for the good of her soul.

It was not that I concern'd my self much about her reputation, or her salvation, which prompted me to talk in this manner to her ; I had only a mind to punish her for her inconstancy, in putting her on leading a life which I believ'd she was very averse to, or she would not have thrown off the mask of religion, and given her self to liberty or pleasure. My advice had the effect I pretended to desire ; she took up again the veil of devotion : but what I did not mean or expect by it, she was devout and religious to none but her husband ; she was not a whit the better for her profession, and grew rather worse and worse, as if she believ'd that all things were justified by the holiness of her pretences.

The lady I am talking of was not the only devout person I knew at that time ; my conversation for several months with women of that character brought me acquainted with many whose conduct, tho' more regular to appearance, at the bottom was as unjustifiable as her's ; and I shall relate some adventures, which tho' I had no part, or a very little one in my self, yet the reader will perceive they are not foreign to my design in writing the memoirs of my life, which is to bring him acquainted with the sex.

The lady I shall first speak of was recommended to me as a perfect model of virtue ; her husband was a courtier, from whom she was separated two or three years after her marriage, under pretence that her husband was a debauchee. I do not know whether he was so wicked as it was said he was ; but it was well known, that this woman upon separating from him was become mistress of a very good fortune, and the poor man almost starv'd. He complain'd every where that his wife was the cause of his ruin ; that her ill humour and extravagance were the occasion of all the follies he committed : he said that
the

the directors who govern'd her put her upon profuse expences, and were the only gainers by his wife's ill conduct.

The wife being one of the devout, and the husband one of the wicked, no body hearken'd to his complaints ; they were condemn'd as the discourses of one of the world, who endeavour'd to calumniate the godly.

The lady, without having the least regard for his wants and misery, was prais'd by the whole town for her vertue and piety, and quietly enjoy'd all the advantages which by her interest she had procur'd at her separation from him. All that she would do for him after she had got his estate, and pretended to have the sole right to it, was to allow the miserable wretch a pitiful pension. He was reduc'd to live in lodgings ; he could scarce tell how to get subsistence, while his devout wife was leader in all works of charity, and was concern'd in all new foundations, and profusely lavish'd immense sums to these pious purposes.

It did not belong to me to decide whether or no the lady was in the right in doing so ; I shall only tell how I was scandaliz'd by her charitable extravagance ; and relate her delicacy, which I experienc'd in a journey I made to her house in company of one of her directors.

She had a manor about ten or twelve leagues from *Paris*, where she spent half the year : it was said she retir'd to be out of the world, and to have the more leisure for meditation. She engag'd me to visit her, at the same time a certain priest who past for an excellent director went thither to pay her his spiritual devoirs.

I can hardly forbear laughing when I think on the ridiculous care and precaution that was taken, that this holy man should not be incommoded on the road. The coach he rode in was as easy as any could be of itself: but to make it more commodious; a sort of bed was laid in it, on which he lay extended on soft cushions plac'd at proper distances, to the end this righteous one might lie at his ease. His companion and I could scarce find room, though the coach would hold eight persons very well. His companion was plac'd in one boot, and I in another ; I obtain'd leave for the benefit of the air, to put my head

head behind the curtains, which were drawn all the way, for fear his reverence should catch cold.

Thus we jogg'd on, stopping every two leagues to lessen the fatigue of the journey, and to give the director opportunity to refresh himself. The seat of the coach was full of comfits and cordials, and the pious personage was so temperate as to eat but three times of the fix that we stopp'd.

I had very little conversation with him; for he seem'd wholly taken up, as he lay at length on his cushions, in giving thanks to the lord for his mercies to his unworthy servant, and the blessing pour'd down upon him; till at last sleep clos'd his eyes, and put an end to his devout ejaculations.

As soon as we arriv'd near the lady's castle whither we were going, her people ran to give her notice of it. and she came forth to meet us, accompany'd by two devout ladies; who, when the director was got out of the coach, took him under the arms to help him to mount some steps which led to the hall, where they seated him in an elbow-chair to rest himself, till he had recover'd strength to get up to his apartment. When he was sat, a chamber maid, with low courtesies, presented him some soup to stay his stomach till supper. When he return'd the porringer, he happen'd to say that the soup was a little too high season'd: presently the lady of the house flew into such a passion, as if she would have kill'd the cook for his error; so angry was she, that the fellow should have no more care how he season'd the priest's soup. The cook promis'd to mend his hand the next time; and by the director's mediation, who said, one should return good for evil, he was pardon'd.

By the description of his entertainment hitherto, the reader may judge how he was treated all the rest of the time that he stay'd there, which was about eight days: I never saw more plenty nor more delicacy. I admir'd the doctor's good stomach, that could dispense with four meals a day, one of which would have been sufficient for me.

I could not forbear rallying the lady on her extravagance; who, to furnish out the treats for the director, had always, night and day, several men on horseback riding

ing post to and from *Paris* to fetch green pease, which were then a rarity, and cost ten crowns a peck.

The jests that I was so free to make on this expence made them look on me as one of the profane; and from that time the lady would never admit me to partake of the good cheer which she provided for her director.

The other devout persons of the fair sex whom I became acquainted with, differ'd very little from this; and I cannot imagine how, with all their sensuality and intemperance, they could be so blind as to think themselves religious as to other things.

I must confess I did not believe they were so stupid as to suffer themselves to be betray'd into any criminal pleasures; and I am perswaded, that all the respect which they paid their directors was merely out of the opinion they had of their sanctity. The good fathers ought to have corrected them, and reprov'd them for what was amiss in their expence, and their cares about them: but it is rare for persons to be so scrupulous not to forgive themselves a little sensuality and self-love, especially if they have no greater crimes lying on their consciences.

The lady I last mention'd was the friend of another lady altogether as devout, who behav'd her self, with respect to her children, as she did with relation to her husband: she took no manner of care of their education; and while she kept a great house and a plentiful table at *Paris*, she put her children out to board in the country at a very mean price, and that ill-pay'd, in a place where her sons were bred up by ordinary masters, little able to instruct them in what they ought to learn.

This woman did the very same thing, as she pretended, out of love to another world, that my mother had done out of affection to this; and was more wicked in her pretence to godliness, than my mother in the pursuit of her pleasures. She obliged her children to shut themselves up in religious houses; and that sort of life being against their humours, brought them almost all to miserable ends: some of them dy'd of grief, others, after having jump'd over the walls, led a wandering vagabond life, travell'd into strange countries, and were

never

never heard of. However, no body durst make mention of them to their mother, who liv'd without scruple, busying her self wholly about the good works which she reckon'd necessary for salvation, while she was deficient in the most essential duties.

Sometimes I would fain have represented to her how much she was to blame to neglect her own off-spring: but I consider'd it did not belong to me to reprove those who were noted for their devotion; and I knew very well, that to acquire the reputation of an able man with these devouts, one must never advise them to any thing that does not flatter their affectation of godliness.

I confess this did not very much increase my good opinion of the devout; and so many good works to so little purpose put all thoughts of devotion out of my head. It was my misfortune to light upon the worst of the profession; for if there are some who are a scandal to it, there are others who are an honour; and if I had known these latter sooner, perhaps I had not deferr'd my retirement to the last of my days.

F A R T VI.

ALL my views now tended towards making my fortune; I apply'd my self earnestly to the business I had undertaken, and for a whole year I had not one intrigue; I minded only my arms, and studied the art of war, resolving no more to trouble my self about the sex; and I believed once that I should keep my resolutions, so little did I know my own strength in the matter of love.

I serv'd in *Catalonia* under the prince of *Conti*, and assisted the count *de Merinville* in driving the enemy from before *Solfone*, I was commanded from thence to join the duke of *Vendosme's* army, who being put on ship-board, attack'd and defeated the *Spanish* fleet near *Barcelona*. My brother made his campaign in *Flanders*, and was at the taking of *Conde*, and *St. Guillain*. The king gave him a pension of twelve thousand franks, and he was so generous as to desire it might be divided betwixt him and me;

me; by this means I got a warrant for a pension of two thousand crowns, the only gratuity I ever receiv'd from the court, and for that I was indebted to none but my brother. It was not my fortune to be a favourite; and besides, I found that however the ministers might carry it civilly towards me, they had not forgot I was once on the prince's side.

My brother, who would feign have made me rich, thought it was my interest to marry again; and knowing that he had never been so easy in his circumstances had it not been for the fortune his wife brought him, he imagin'd that I stood in need of the same assistance: he propos'd to me a young woman who was of no great quality, but she wanted not for wealth, which was what he aim'd at by putting me on a second marriage. He believ'd I should find it no hard matter to gain the good will of the damsel, she having refused several gentlemen of the long robe, declaring she would have none but a soldier.

I had not naturally much inclination to marriage; and besides I did not think it so necessary to be rich as my brother did. However, being free from intrigues, and resolving never to engage my self in one for the future, I hearken'd to the proposals he made me; and tried my endeavours to get the love of the lady, and the good-will of her relations: she was neither fair nor well-shap'd; yet she had been flatter'd so much by those that had courted her for her estate, that she fancy'd her self as handsome as the fairest.

I could not imagine that a woman, who, as often as she look'd in her glass must be convinc'd of her ugliness, could expect to be complimented on her beauty; wherefore I said little to her on that subject. I contented my self with calling her aimable, and to swear she was the only person who was lovely in eyes. This was not enough; she had vow'd not to marry any man who did not think her handsome; and my compliments, how sincere soever, did not content her.

Who would imagine that such a trifle should be the occasion of breaking off a match that might have been so advantageous to me! had I been taught my lesson, I might have compared her to the fair *Hellen*, which would

have cost me little to have done, had I known it was expected from me; but I should never have imagin'd it, and in truth should have thought she would take for Irony every thing said in commendation of her beauty.

Yet this she had the vanity to expect; and perceiving that I neither prais'd her eyes, her shape, nor her complexion, she went to her parents and told them I was a brute, without manners, or civility, and that she would never marry me. She push'd the matter even farther; and to punish me for not calling her handsome, she drew my picture to seem as ridiculous as her own; she said I was proud of my fine airs, and believ'd there was no such thing as a handsome woman in the world: all the town could have contradicted her, there were but too many proofs that she was out in my character, and that I did not deserve such reproaches from the sex.

My brother hearing the girl was dissatisfy'd with me, ask'd me what I had said to her? and I told him. It was with difficulty that he believ'd it; but at length he told me it was yet in my power to reconcile my self, there being nothing requir'd of me to make my self agreeable to her than to swear she was handsome; that I was very happy to have so easy a method of making my court to her; that he advis'd me not to differ with her about trifle; but, on the contrary, to tell her upon all occasions, I thought her a perfect beauty.

As much as the reader may be surpriz'd at the whimsicalness of this girl, he will wonder more at my own, in refusing to do what my brother would have me. I protested I could never be so complaisant; acknowledging, if I had known as much at first, perhaps I might have done it; but it was too late: and besides, as rich as she was, I could not perswade my self to marry a young woman so blind to her own imperfections, and so unreasonably conceited of her charms.

My brother said I was more a fool than she, and it may be he was in the right; however, the matter rested there; and I venture by relating it of being thought both obstinate and ridiculous. It is true, I did not care to marry; and was afraid that a wife so conceited upon so little beauty, might be as blind in other matters

of

of more importance. The business broke off, and every body knowing the reason of it, the poor girl became the jest of the publick; as for my self, I found persons who commended my resolution. My mistress was the subject of raillery in all conversations; and she not only declared her self my enemy, but engag'd on her side all the homely women, who would be thought beauties; and it may well be judg'd I was engag'd against a strong party.

This accident did me a disservice for some time with the Ladies; they look'd upon me as a philosopher who could not dissemble his sentiments; and the fairest of them were afraid of me, believing they had not beauty enough to appear fair in my eyes. Happy for me had their fear and distrust lasted so long that they might always have hated me; but to my misfortune I met with women who pardon'd my freedom, and who appear'd to me so lovely that I might justly call them fair; and so fair, that I could not help thinking them lovely.

One of these was a princess; her rank was so exalted that I never durst pretend to have lov'd her, if she had not given me reason to believe that she was very willing that I should love her. She sought to have some discourse with me on the subject of my quarrel with the damsel I have mention'd; and having confest to her, that I had no other reason for it than what the whole town knew; I mean, that I could not bring my self to call her fair; the princess laugh'd out aloud; and then recollecting her self, she look'd seriously on me, saying, awo man might be proud of being belov'd by such a man as I was, who could not descend to dissimulation; for she may very well believe he lov'd her if he vouchsafed to tell her so; and I confess, that in an age when men make so little of betraying weak women, I should be well enough pleas'd with so singular a character as your's is; and should envy the fortune of the woman to whom you could say, I love.

I fancy'd she seem'd a little disorder'd in saying these last words; and flatter'd my self, that she did it to encourage me to make her such a declaration; however I kept my thoughts to my self, and was unwilling to give way to the passion which I felt within me till I was better

acquainted with her. I reply'd, what, madam, will a man get by being sincere with the fair sex, who are generally speaking more faithless than men? my sincerity will only help me to be the more easily deluded by them; and I own I have been so often deceived, that before I can resolve to be in love again, I must be assured that the person whom I would love is as just and honest as my self. Do you believe, Madam, added I, there are any ladies of such a character? The princess answer'd, I know not what to say as to other women; but as to my self, I am perfectly of the same opinion as you are; and if I once suffer a man to believe that I love him, he may depend upon my affections as that in which he can never be deceiv'd. Ah! madam, how unhappy, said I, are you if you are of this disposition, you must either never love, or must be betray'd by your lovers; and either of them is a sad misfortune to so fair and so lovely a princess as you are. How, sir, (she interrupted me) dare you venture to call me fair? is it thus you shew your plain dealing? Madam, I reply'd, I cannot dissemble my sentiments; I have call'd you fair, and I cannot suppose there is any one so blind as not to acknowledge and proclaim your beauty. You please me, said she, in giving me this assurance: I have had a mind to be handsome, and on your word I will believe I am. Why do you rally me, madam, I answer'd her with some confusion? I could not proceed; which the princess perceiving, ask'd what was the matter with me. I am miserable, madam, reply'd I, and more miserable than you would think; I would avoid love as the most dangerous rock that I could strike on; and this very minute I find I am more in love than ever I was in my life. At least then, said the princess, let me know the lady's name. No, madam, I answer'd, no body shall know my madness; for I must certainly be look'd upon as one distracted, should I be in love with the person who is now mistress of my affections: pray permit me to retire, for if I stay longer I shall grow giddy. Your passion, cry'd the princess, is very violent sure to have such strange effects: you shall not lay your madness at my door; so you may withdraw if you please. She rose up at these words; and I went without daring to look upon her.

As soon as I got home I recollected in my memory all this conversation, and imagin'd the princess had only fallen upon it for her diversion: I blam'd my self for fancying she was willing that I should love her; and not doubting, by the manner of her parting with me, that she guels'd, if I had stay'd, I should have declar'd my love: I suppos'd she meant to prevent it by permitting me to leave her; for which reason, not to displease her further, I resolv'd to name another if ever she ask'd me who it was that I had such a passion for.

The next day I saw her at the queen's apartment; she contriv'd a way to come near me without being taken notice of; she inquir'd if my brain was still turn'd, and what was become of my love? I made her no answer; and had such an assurance in my self of her purposing only to laugh at me, that I was vex'd to my very heart.

The princess seeing I would not speak a word, said, it is in vain for you to hold your tongue; I know whom you are in love with, and have her picture in my pocket: I will give it you on condition you shew it no body, and never say you had it of me. She left me when she had put it in my hands; on taking it I had not the power to make her one word of answer. As soon as it was in my possession, I went out, impatient to see whom it was drawn for.

How was I surpriz'd and overjoy'd when I saw her own picture: then indeed my brain turn'd, I did not question but I was belov'd, and gave my self up wholly to the pleasant contemplation of what would follow. I committed all the extravagancies that lovers are guilty of on such like occasions; I found all my experience in the business of love to signify nothing; I was as fond and as foolish as if it had been my first passion: I kiss'd the picture a hundred times, I kneel'd down before it, talk'd to it, and swore eternal truth.

Thus I spent all the day, and at night went to wait on the princess; but I could not be admitted to her presence. Whatever intreaties I made use of, all the return I could get from her was, she was retir'd, and would see me on the morrow at the queen's apartment.

I fell into despair upon her making an appointment, at a place where I could have no particular conversation

with her ; yet I was forc'd to content my self. I came early to the queen's apartment, she enter'd soon after, and passing along said, well, sir, will you depend upon me, am not I acquainted with all your secrets? no, madam, I reply'd, you do not know all ; and I want an opportunity to acquaint you with the rest. I would know no more, said the princess, and I can easily guess what you would say to me ; and you are not ignorant that I cannot and ought not to hear you. I expect you will restore the picture, I will send a *valet de chambre* to you for it to morrow ; pray give it him seal'd up: saying these words she left me, and I could not tell what to make of her proceeding : I try'd to have another sight of her that day, but it was to no purpose.

On the morrow she sent her *valet* ; to whom I gave for answer, that I had not what his lady demanded of me : and at that time I would rather have parted with my life than with the picture. The *valet* went home, and two hours after return'd with this billet from the princess.

I Know, sir, you took up the picture I drop'd yesterday in the queen's lodgings ; I beg you to restore it by the bearer, unless you would have me make a noise of it. I believe you are a man of too much honour to do an action unworthy a gentleman : think on it, and remember the respect you owe me ; for positively I will have the picture, and if you refuse to give it me by fair means I shall make use of force.

It was above an hour before I could come to a resolution what to do ; and the *valet* storm'd that I made him wait so long. Perhaps, said I, she does it to try me, and see whether I love her by my refusal to obey her. But no, the letter is too positive ; and I shall better shew that I love by obeying her. I fix'd here, and resolv'd to send her back the picture with the following lines.

I Obey you, madam ; and you need not put me in mind of the respect I owe you. What you have seen of me is sufficient to assure you, that I shall serve you with an implicit obedience. I doubt not you will suddenly demand my life,

life, since you have already taken from me that, which is much dearer than my blood.

I had no sooner return'd the picture with this letter, than I began to imagine I had been guilty of the foolishlest thing I ever did in my life ; and I would have given all that I was worth to have had it again in my possession. She will think, said I to my self, that I have very little love for her, since I could so easily part with a present she had so gallantly given me. She will reckon me a coxcomb not to perceive that she requir'd it of me, only to make a trial how I valued it: I could find no excuse for what I had done, and was ready to run mad when I reflected how stupid I was to obey her. I believed that after this I must not hope to be belov'd, nor even esteem'd by the princess ; and more than ever resolv'd to stifle my love for her.

But it was too late ; and I perceiv'd, that persons so much above us are capable of inspiring a passion quite different from other women. The love of a princess is a sort of enchantment ; and I had not till then known the charms of such an exalted amour. How wretched was I in my own opinion, to have lost all that I had to please me in this new passion by my foolish obedience ! I never was so heartily griev'd, not doubting but the princess would ever after treat me as a blockhead. I was so ashamed of my self, I durst not wait upon her, nor even look her in the face when I saw her at the queen's apartment. She perceiv'd my grief and my confusion ; and bid her man tell me that I should wait for her at the breaking up of the assembly, for she wanted to speak with me.

She told me, with a free air, I had done very well to send back her picture ; that she did not doubt it had cost me dear to part with it ; but she rejoyc'd to see I was ready to pay her a blind submission, that so it was she would be belov'd ; and she would have a greater deference for me than any man in the world, provided my love did not make a fool of me, and that I always obey'd her commands.

These words rais'd me to life again, and I was so pleas'd to find all my conjectures false, that I swore I would

would never desire any other reward for the extream passion I had for her, but the pleasure of loving her: as for the rest, she might do what she would with me. She answer'd, love and obey me, and I will not be ungrateful. I begg'd her to give me leave to write to her, and to watch for opportunities to wait on her. She would not suffer the one or the other, saying, I should leave the management of the matter to her, and it should be to my content.

After we had this conversation, I perceiv'd she avoided me; and in fifteen days time I could not get so much as a look from her. I did not know what to make of such a strange sort of carriage; but I thought she did not love me, or she would not have had such a command of her self. In a little more than a fortnight she sent to let me know she would speak with me in a garden, where she was walking with a great many followers, whom she left, and taking me aside, looking seriously upon me ask'd if I still lov'd her? I answer'd, that I could never change; and that my passion for her was so great, it was impossible it could receive any addition; but that it was likewise impossible for me to maintain any longer a love without hope; and she would certainly be the cause of my death if she did not at least suffer me to see her and to speak to her. She reply'd, I expect something more from you than all this: I look for considerable services; if you love me, you must deliver me from a man whom I hate, and who has affronted me. Have you courage enough to fight him? I pray'd her to name me the man; and as dangerous as it was for me to engage in a duel, at a time when single combats were so rigorously forbidden, yet I would pass by all those considerations if she would have me fight. It is enough, said she, another time I will tell you more; but keep this secret, and stay till you hear from me. She then return'd to her company, giving me no opportunity to inform my self further about the matter.

Two days after, she sent for me again, to come to her in the same garden; and having oblig'd me to swear that nothing should be too difficult for me to serve her in, to the utmost of my power, she put into my hands, a parcel of letters, which a woman of very high quality had written to a man whom she lov'd: she made me read them; and I found them written with such a passion and

in such a manner, that if they were publish'd, the lady would infallibly lose her reputation.

After I had run them over, she told me she gave them to me that I might shew them to all the world. What reason, madam, said I, have you to do this lady so much harm? she reply'd, I have good reason to expose her: and besides, I know no other way to raise a quarrel between you and the man with whom I would have you fight, and to whom these letters are written. When he hears that you are the person who shewed the letters about, he will presently send you a challenge, and I am sure you will kill him if he dares engage you.

These words struck me dumb with astonishment. The princess finding I made her no answer, snatch'd the letters out of my hand; and cry'd out with a deal of fury, that she perceiv'd I did not love her, since I was at a stand whether I should obey her or not.

I confess I was ashamed of the proposal; and the love that she had inspir'd me with, was incapable of hiding the baseness of the action she requir'd of me. I knew the lady who wrote the letters, and was one of her friends; but supposing she had been a stranger, a lady's honour being in the case, was a sufficient reason against publishing them; and I thought my self oblig'd to have so much regard for every one's reputation: such always hath been my character; and tho' I may have often been deceived by women, it never was owing to my want of respect for the sex.

I did what I could to convince the princess, that it was below her to ruin the good-name of any woman: and when I saw she would hearken to nothing of that nature, I continu'd my discourse thus: if you had demanded my life, madam, I would have sacrific'd it to you; but I should not deserve your esteem could I be guilty of so base a complacency, as to obey your commands in this particular.

I spoke these words in such a manner, that she might perceive I intended to refuse her: and I own, that at that instant I felt all the flames that she had kindled in my breast to be extinguish'd. It was not generosity only that caus'd this alteration; I was satisfy'd she was not so

earnest to have the lady defam'd, and her lover murder'd, but because she was jealous of both of them ; which altogether made me resolve rather to break with her, than to yield to what she desired of me.

I expected to be overwhelm'd with reproaches ; but I was very much surpriz'd after she had several times ask'd me, if I was in good earnest when I refus'd ; and I told her as often, that so base an action was below her self and me ; to see her look smiling on me, and with a pleasant air to assure me, she rejoic'd to find that love had left me so much the free use of my reason that I was incapable of doing any thing unworthy a brave man ; that she propos'd it to me only to try me ; that the lady, whose letters she had shewn me, was her intimate friend ; that the letters were fictitious ; and she had never receiv'd so great injuries from the person to whom they were directed as to desire his death ; on the contrary she wish'd him well ; and what she had done now was to know me better.

She spoke this with so much seeming sincerity, that I did not doubt but that every thing was as she had given me to understand. I chid her a little, as handsomly as I could, for putting me to such a proof ; and forgetting the ill opinion I had of her, while she persisted in demanding such an unreasonable thing of me, with my former esteem all my former passion return'd ; I was pleas'd with my self for being so bold as not to shrink from my duty, or dispute whether I should obey her or not ; and believ'd she ought both to esteem and love me the more.

I earnestly intreated her, since she knew all my heart, to tell me what she would have become of me ; whether she would always deny me the joy of seeing her ; and shewing her how much I deserv'd by my zeal and constancy ; she reply'd, she would have me love her always, and that it was recompence enough for a person of her rank to permit me to love her, without pretending to any thing more. I told her I saw plainly she meant to be the death of me ; and as exalted as her station was, I could not live unless she flatter'd me with hopes of being belov'd. She answer'd, that time brought forth all things

things ; and if I was constant, I should not repent loving her ; that she had more value and more inclination for me than for any man ; that she was sorry at the inequality of our conditions ; however, since I scorn'd to do any thing unworthy my self, I ought not to take it ill if she did nothing but what was worthy of her. This was all I could get out of her, and I withdrew more amorous and more desponding than ever.

I heard, two or three days afterwards, that the letters she had shewn me were become publick at court, that copies of them were handed about ; and it was said there, that I was the man who first divulged them.

The lady who was said to be the author, complain'd to my brother, as if I had been the person who publish'd them at court. My brother spoke of it to me, and I told him all that pass'd between the princess and me ; there being no way more likely to convince him that I had not publish'd the letters, than to acquaint him how I had refus'd such a base employment.

My brother said it must be the princess her self that had shewn them to the world, and had laid the blame of it upon me. We consulted together a long while how we might undeceive the publick ; my brother said, he knew no other way but to inform the queen of my discourse with the princess ; for when her majesty was satisfy'd of my innocence, I should easily clear my self to the world : however, whether I did or no, it was necessary that the queen should know the truth of the matter.

I saw a great many inconveniencies in letting the queen know more of the business ; I must by this means inform her, that the princess her self had publish'd the letters. I was not against doing it out of any esteem or love for her : I perceiv'd all that she design'd by flattering me with the hopes of her favour, was to engage me, whether I would or not, in this unfortunate affair ; and I hated her for it more than ever I had lov'd her. I answer'd my brother, it was reasonable I should wait on the princess before I said any thing of it to the queen ; and to know of her if she had shewn the letters, and spread about that they came out of my hands ; my brother was of the
same

same opinion, and I endeavour'd to procure a fight of her.

I had a great deal of trouble to succeed in it; at last I met her as she was going into her coach. As soon as she saw me she call'd to me, and, in presence of one of her women who was with her, spoke to me thus: I guess what you have to say to me; but I assure you, it was not I that shew'd the letters you gave me, you must have shewn them to others your self; for this young woman can testify, that those which you gave me in the garden some time ago, are still in my possession, and that I have shewn them to no body. How, madam, I reply'd, did I give you any such letters? she answer'd, it is to no purpose to deny it; did not this girl see you give them to me? It is enough I tell you I did not shew them, and you ought to be satisfy'd, since I condescend to make you this assurance: I have no more to say to you, and you may seek your revenge where you will. Saying these words she left me, and bad her coachman drive on.

It is impossible to express the confusion and rage I was in; I found she did not care what I thought of her; and too late repented of my vanity in loving a person of her rank. I saw then how a man exposeth himself in forgetting his own condition to such a degree; and was too well convinc'd of this truth, that it is not safe for any persons to equal themselves with princes. I return'd home resolving to wait upon the queen; but I was scarce got into my lodgings, before a gentleman came to me with a challenge from him to whom the letters were directed. He told me the gentleman would meet me on the morrow in such a place, and that himself was to be his second; with which I would do well to provide my self.

I said to the gentleman that brought me this message, that he need not distrust my courage; yet I was not willing to fight till I had inform'd the person that sent me the challenge, what little cause he had to be angry with me: and when I had come to an understanding with him in the affair, I would do whatever he could desire of me. The gentleman promis'd me to tell his friend all that I had said to him; and if I was not willing to go abroad, he would bring him to me in an hour's time.

time. I reply'd, I would wait for him ; and soon after they came together.

Instead of deferring the business till the next day, I found the gentleman in such an ill humour, that I thought we should have decided the controversy before we parted : for I answer'd him in as high a tone as he spoke to me. I assur'd him, that I had not only not publish'd the letters, but that I had always taken the part of the lady who was said to have written them ; and I would give any one the lie who durst affirm that they came from me. He reply'd, go then and wait on the princess, naming her of whom I have spoken, for she had them of you.

What this man asked of me was very just, he did but take me at my word. However, as the princess had before the assurance to tell me to my face, that it was I who had given her the letters, I fear'd she would assert the same in the presence of him whom I would have undeceiv'd : besides, it was not very easy to give a princess of her rank the lie ; and I was afraid that my dilatoriness wou'd make the man that had challeng'd me suspect I endeavour'd to avoid engaging with him. I therefore answer'd, that what he had propos'd to me would take up too much time ; and since he would have the matter decided, I had as good begin it by giving him the pleasure of being beaten ; that I had desir'd to see him only to acquaint him with the truth of the business ; and that he ought to have taken my word ; but if he wanted any further satisfaction I would give it him with sword in hand. He accepted of my proposal, and we agreed to meet the next day at a certain time and place which he appointed : we resolv'd to fight single, because we would not engage any other person in this affair, and were willing to keep it as private as possible ; for in truth, nothing ever seem'd more unjust and ridiculous to me than the custom of fighting with so much bustle, which might be easily avoided ; and of engaging two persons in a quarrel who have no difference with one another.

This caution was the cause that our duel was not known : I received first a wound in my arm, and gave my antagonist such a push which enter'd his shoulder and
disabled

disabled him. I did not stand upon obliging him to beg his life: as soon as I saw he was not in a condition to continue the fight, I thought only of helping him. Neither of our wounds were dangerous; we both wrap'd our selves up in our cloaks, and went into his coach, which waited for him at a place where the coachman might not see us. We met the gentleman that brought me the challenge the day before: he came to part us; and we told him, smiling, that he should come into the coach, for all was over. We went to my lodgings, order'd something for breakfast, and presently sent for a surgeon who had formerly serv'd me: he dress'd our wounds, and we were forc'd for some time to have our arms ty'd up in a scarf. We reported abroad, that as we two were a going two leagues from *Paris*, our coach overturn'd, that one of us had his shoulder put out, and the other receiv'd a wound in his arm. Every body believ'd what we said; and none was so inquisitive as to examine further into this business.

Thus we were more fortunate than we deserv'd; but by the manner of my being engag'd in this combat, one may perceive the sad condition of the nobility, to believe that the point of honour consists in demanding, on the least shadow of an affront, such whimsical satisfaction. When they are once challeng'd, there is no way of avoiding a duel; and if I had refus'd this, I suppose the world wou'd have spoken meanly of my courage.

P A R T VII.

WHEN our wounds were bound up, and we had reason to believe there was no danger of our being arrested, we talk'd over the subject of our difference. We had been good friends till this duel; and our friendship increas'd, after we had told one another all that we knew concerning the adventure that made us quarrel. I understood what the princess design'd by publishing the letters; and that she had not suffer'd me to love her, but out of a desire that I might serve her in her revenge.

I can

I can relate the whole affair in a few words ; and since some persons now living were engag'd in it, I think it convenient to give them fictitious names. The princess I shall call *Aspasia*, the friend with whom I fought *Celidan*, and the lady who wrote the letters *Cleonice* ; a fourth person whom I must necessarily mention in this little adventure, I shall distinguish by another name ; and report it less with a design to tell what of it relates to me, than to shew that if those who have to do with women must beware of rocks ; those rocks are most inevitable and most dangerous with princesses.

Aspasia's birth was so exalted, that she could not without demeaning her self, think of marrying any one below a sovereign, or at least a prince of high rank. She was witty and ambitious ; and her ambition was the more reasonable, because her riches were immense ; her wealth hindred her marrying out of the kingdom, and her ambition would not let her marry in *France*. The government would not let her carry so much treasure as she was possess'd of out of the nation ; and it was fear'd if she marry'd in *France*, she might inspire her husband with her own ambition, and enable him by the vast estate which she brought him, to attempt any thing. These reasons lost her all the matches that were propos'd to her : she was already very near thirty, and being weary of a state of life which did not at all answer her ambition, she resolv'd to engage in an intrigue, by which she reduc'd all those that had any power in the disposal of her, to a necessity of marrying her. Next to a sovereign prince, none could pretend to her more lawfully than prince *Aurelian* her kinsman, who indeed was not so rich, but his birth was of a degree somewhat higher than her own. She study'd to please, and to render her self agreeable to him, yet all her endeavours were in vain ; the prince was a great deal younger than she, so there were no hopes that her beauty would have any great effect upon him.

Though, as has been seen, I have prais'd her beauty elsewhere, and on her account got over the scruple that lost me the match I have mention'd, yet it is true enough that she was too old to pass for fair ; and I had never given her that quality, had I not been dazzled by her
other

other of a princess. She was so just to her self as to guess that interest would have more power on *Aurelian's* mind than the charms of her beauty, which was wearing. She bribed all those who had any influence upon him, to represent what advantage it would be to him to marry a princess so rich as she was.

Aurelian, whose fortune depended on uncertain pensions, was glad to hear of a way to mend it: he promis'd to omit nothing that could assist him in this marriage; but the means he made use of to succeed, were those that ruin'd his hopes; by which we may once more have a proof of the capriciousness and vanity of women.

Aurelian was gallant, he fancy'd to marry the princess, he must appear to be amorous of her; and so well he counterfeited a violent passion, that the princess forgot her own defects, and began to think she had been unjust to her charms. She believ'd really that *Aurelian* lov'd her; this imagination made her more delicate and jealous than she would have been, if she had all along suppos'd that he had only his interest in view. She endeavour'd to find out in the prince all that devotion and officiousness which are to be met with in real lovers; but she was disappointed in her search: the prince was in an age that is incapable of constraint, and could not have so much complacency for her as she required. To say truth, although he had been in more advanc'd years, I question if he could have been reduc'd to such a state of slavery; for one can give no better name to the treatment which she gave those whom she believ'd to be in love with her.

In the mistake she was in, it was not long before she quarrel'd with the prince: she had a hundred spies about him, who inform'd her of all the steps that he took; and every time they met; they spent it all in examinations and reproaches. The prince grew weary of making her believe he lov'd her; and not being able to bring himself to purchase her riches at such a dear rate, he affect'd to make love to another, and address'd himself to *Cleonice*, one of the fairest ladies at court.

Cleonice knew well enough that the prince's love would be prejudicial to her reputation; she was by no means a fit match for a prince of his rank: and besides, she lov'd

Celidan,

Celidan, who was every way suitable to her; and she did not doubt of marrying him very suddenly. She therefore told the prince, that as much as she was honour'd by his passion, she must intreat him to see her no more.

The prince became more eager by this refusal; and the report ran, that he was passionately in love with her: this enrag'd the princess *Aspasia*; she made no question of the prince's love for her self: all women are vain enough to think they deserve whatever passion men have for them; which was the cause of her believing that *Aurelian* was in earnest. She reckon'd his love for *Cleonice* was the effect of his inconstancy; and resolv'd to revenge her self by publickly defaming her rival, and seeking all sorts of ways to do her a mischief.

The princess's outrage against her had quite different consequences from what she intended by it. *Cleonice* who had refus'd the prince's visits out of fear of her reputation, permitted and encourag'd them on purpose to vex the princess. Thus are the passions strengthen'd by that which should destroy them; and a desire of doing a despite to a rival has more power on a woman's mind than that of pleasing a lover.

The more the princess cross'd *Aurelian*'s love for *Cleonice*, the more *Cleonice* study'd to flatter him; and by her complacency every body suppos'd the prince was belov'd.

Celidan, who heartily lov'd her, was not the last who took the alarm; he complain'd of it, and *Cleonice* own'd, that what she did was out of pure spite to the princess. She was so entirely mistress of her lover's heart, that she perswaded him to believe she had only a counterfeit kindness for the prince; and she oblig'd him to assist her in giving the princess new disquiets, and in vexing her more than ever. Thus was he prepar'd to receive all that the princess might tell him to cause his jealousy; and the more she endeavour'd to raise a suspicion of his mistress's fidelity, he affected to appear the better satisfy'd, and the more amorous.

I know not after all if *Celidan* was not bubbled by his confidence in *Cleonice*; and I could not forbear, when he told me the story, suggesting something to him thereupon, which might have given him a concern he had
not;

not ; but the many proofs I had had of the deceit of women would undoubtedly have made me very uneasy, had I been in his place.

The princess not being able to make a difference between *Celidan* and *Cleonice*, endeavour'd to set her at variance with the prince. Nothing is difficult when revenge is in view. She brib'd one of *Celidan*'s servants in whom he confided most ; and by this means she got most of the letters which his master receiv'd from *Cleonice*.

As soon as she had them in her possession, she sought for some body to spread them abroad in the world ; not doubting but the prince, when he saw them, would break with her.

This was not the only reason why she was willing to have the letters publish'd by another hand, and not by her own ; she imagin'd that she should thereby be clear'd of the guilt of a base action, which would have lain at her door had she shewn them her self, or been charged with it ; and besides, she was so much offended with *Celidan*, for shewing so little respect to the advice she had given him of the ill conduct of *Cleonice*, that she resolv'd to destroy him. She thought me proper for this purpose ; and it was that induc'd her to permit my love, and which engag'd me, as has been seen, in this affair.

She heard nothing of our combat, and *Celidan* and I having mutually inform'd each other of what we knew of this adventure, were both persuaded that we could complain of no body but the princess ; and we grew greater friends than ever. He promis'd to inform *Cleonice* of all that I had told him, and to assure her that I was innocent of the wrong which it was said I had done her, in stealing and shewing her letters.

Cleonice, desir'd to see me, to be better satisfy'd of the truth of my defence ; she then requir'd that I should acquaint the queen and prince *Aurelian* of it. I refus'd both the one and the other ; and represented to her, that it would be accounted base in me to accuse the princess ; adding further, that since she had only suffer'd the prince to make love to her out of mere spight to the princess,

princess, she ought to rest contented; and that the princess was sufficiently punish'd by the ill success of her designs: that it would be a new punishment for her to see me a greater friend than ever of *Celidan's*, notwithstanding the pains she had been at to set us at variance; and what was more than all, since she lov'd *Celidan*, she had cause to rejoyce that she had clear'd her self of the prince, and found her lover more faithful than ever.

These arguments ought to have weigh'd with her; *Celidan* who was the most concern'd in it, thought them admirable: for after all, he had but little reason to approve her giving her self any concern to preserve the prince's good opinion; and it signify'd little his knowing who publish'd the letters, which she could not disown, and which would be justified by her confining her love to the person to whom they were written.

But how can one expect reason from a woman's vanity; *Cleonice* insisted that I should inform the world that the princess had put this trick upon her, nor would she be satisfy'd with this; she would have had me publish the story I had told her about *Aspasia* and me, and that she had lov'd me well enough to give me her picture: I could not bring her to be contented with any thing less, and *Celidan* succeeded no better than I in arguing with her on that subject; they were so sharp upon one another in it, that at last they quarrell'd. I was at first sorry that my friend had lost a mistress, whom he had till then tenderly lov'd without any manner of jealousy: however, he ought to have been contented, since the sorrow which she shew'd, when she fear'd to lose the prince, prov'd, that she was not over-constant; yet he was inconsolable.

He was not so well experienc'd as I in the characters and inclinations of women; he was even so foolish, that he could not hide his love from me, and scarce ever saw me but with concern. Some time afterwards they were reconcil'd, and having had two or three such quarrels more, they were marry'd. They were not at all happy in this new state; *Celidan's* suspicion grew upon him after this marriage; the common fate of those husbands who fondly imagine, that they shall in the wife forget
the

the infidelity of the mistress. Matrimony is the most uncertain of all remedies, let the distemper be what it will to which it is applied.

As for my self, I fell out with *Cleonice*, and we were never good friends again ; I had too much reason to be angry with her for her telling every body, that I boasted of being belov'd by the princess *Aspasia* : She told the story of the picture with such circumstances, as made me sorry I ever let her know any thing of it.

The princess flew into the most violent rage when she heard of it : she told my brother that if ever I appear'd in her sight, she would not promise that I should not be treated as she said I deserv'd. I was inform'd of it, and carefully avoided meeting with her, till the view of another marriage made her forget her anger and my love. However it has been plainly seen, that the misfortune of knowing and being in love with this princess had, more than once, gone near to have endanger'd my life. I had another happy escape, and the history I am about to relate will convince the reader, that there are yet much greater misfortunes to be feared by such as dare make love to a princess.

At this time monsieur the prince reliev'd *Valenciennes*, and oblig'd monsieur *de Turenne* to raise the siege. I served under the marshal *de la Ferté*, and had like to have been made a prisoner with him ; the marshal was taken ; yet we retired in good order by the prudence of monsieur *de Turenne* : this retreat of this great general is one of the finest actions of his life. I became the better known to him on this occasion ; and had I been so wise as to have improv'd the opportunity, I might have made my advantage of his protection and favour. We lost *Condé* after a siege of greater length than such a place deserv'd. monsieur *de Turenne* besieg'd another city, which taken would more than make amends for the loss of *Condé*. *Chappelle* was the town we attack'd and took. With this conquest the campaign ended ; so I took post and rode to *Chantilli*, where the king was to receive *Christina* queen of *Sweden* ; she having made her publick entrance at *Paris* about three weeks before.

I had

I had as much reason as any man to pay my duty to that princess; my children had the honour to be ally'd to her family; and one of my friends, whom I got acquainted with in *Poland*, was a considerable person in her court: my friend made several journeys into *Poland*, on this princess's account, while she negotiated the affair of her abdication. I met him afterwards at *Venice*, where queen *Christina* had some affairs to manage with the republick and the princes of *Italy*; in both these places we were so very friendly, that when we saw one another in *France*, our joy was next to transporting. I little thought of the accident that befel him soon after; this man being the wretched actor in the tragical story I am about to relate.

His name was *Monaldeschi*, an *Italian* by birth, and one of the first quality; he had lived from his childhood in *Sweden*, whither the count *de la Gardie* his kinsman sent for him. He was bred up with the queen, they being near of an age; the count *de la Gardie* had a son not much older than either of them. The queen seem'd to have a greater liking for him than for *Monaldeschi*. The two youths having the opportunity to see her every day, were both amorous of her: *Monaldeschi*, who was naturally vain and ambitious, was in despair to see the young count *de la Gardie* found a more favourable reception than himself. He was an *Italian*, and consequently a dissembler; he resolv'd therefore to set his rival against the queen.

They were intimate friends, and never fail'd to tell one another all their adventures and intrigues: *Monaldeschi* told him one day that he could not forbear acquainting him, that the inclination the queen shew'd for him was only a colour for her engagements with the *Palatine* her cousin; and if he question'd it he would shew him the very letters she had written to the *Palatine*.

Monaldeschi had a dexterity in counterfeiting all sorts of writing; and he shew'd *la Gardie* a parcel of letters, in which he had so exactly imitated the queen's hand, that *la Gardie* was deceived. He did not doubt but the letters were really written by the queen: and since his amour was not gone so far as to justify him in reproach-
ing

ing her, he contented himself with making this discovery contribute to the surmounting the passion he had for her; and to help him in the conquest over it, he courted the *Palatine's* sister, who received him favourably, and in a little time lov'd him.

Thus was *Monaldeschi* deliver'd of a dangerous rival; and with more liberty might now pay his vows to the queen. This princess was enough concern'd at *la Gardie's* addressing himself to another, to endeavour to recover him; to that end; she seem'd to be as well pleas'd with *Monaldeschi* as she had been with his rival: but the latter was already so far engag'd with the *Palatine's* sister, that he did not trouble himself about this preference of his kinsman.

The queen was extremely sorry for his indifference, and it was generally thought that the little hopes she had for marrying *la Gardie* was one of her greatest motives to her abdicating the kingdom. She did not believe *Monaldeschi* was in love with her; for the cunning *Italian* was so wary as never to carry himself before her like a lover: he only shew'd an extraordinary zeal for her service, and a blind obedience to her commands; which got him so much credit with her, that she made him the confident of her thoughts and designs.

He was the man that encourag'd her in her resolution to resign the crown, because he foresaw that while she was a queen and in *Sweden*, he must never hope to be beloved by her; yet he was not so cautious in what he said to others about her, as he was circumspect in his discourse to her self. He did what he could to have it believ'd there was an intrigue between them. I remember, when I met him at *Venice*, he talk'd of nothing else. He shew'd me letters which he said he receiv'd from her; and as I had no reason to suspect the truth of the letters, I gave credit to them, and thought him as happy as he made himself to be: I only represented to him his indiscretion: but he seem'd so sure of her, that he might do or say what he pleas'd, without fear of punishment.

When I saw him at *Chantilli*, and we were together alone; you see my friend, said he, what the queen
does

does for my sake : she has left all, and yet I am not the more happy for it : I have a secret aversion for her which I shall never get over, and I wish she was still a queen and in *Sweden*, and that I had never thought of her. He then inform'd me, how, as he pretended, he had made her leave her kingdom ; and every word he said was so romantick I had much ado to believe him ; yet I could not but give credit to some part, I saw the queen without a crown ; and he was so well with her, that she was scarce a moment without him. I advis'd him to do that out of gratitude, which he could not do out of inclination ; at least to put a better disguise on her love for him, and on his aversion for her ; but it was to no purpose.

Two or three months after, the queen being at *Fontainebleau* with the king and the whole court, a packet was put into her hands ; the superscription was by an unknown hand ; but there were three letters inclos'd in it of *Monaldeschi's* writing. One of the letters was in *Italian*, and seem'd to be written to a prince of *Italy* ; the other was in *French*, and directed to a lady, As well as I can remember they were to the following purport, for the queen shew'd them to me, when she punish'd the writer of 'em according to his deserts ; and I believe no one ever had any copy of them.

The *Italian* letter was much the same, with the following translation

YOU have reason to blame my conduct ; I am quite in despair. I had better think of making my fortune, than of the ridiculous vanity of being belov'd by a queen who is the cause of so many unpleasing and tiresome nights to me. How hard a case is it to give a fond woman those pleasures which one cannot relish with her ? I am become a meer knight-errant, I don't see when, or where we shall settle. We have nothing about us but pedants ; and it is my misfortune that in so gallant a court as that of France, there is not one man who will dispute my old conquest with me. I am resolv'd to bear my torment no longer than till I have secur'd what she has given me. As soon as I am possess'd of it, I will fly to my dear country, &c.

the

The two other letters were as follows.

I Thought madam, it was enough to deserve your heart, that I offer'd you one for which a queen has sacrific'd her dominions, her crown and her glory. Why is it that I found you so fair? You make me ungrateful; and ever since I saw you, I have been insensible of the queens caresses, which till then had been agreeable to me. You are the cause of my imprudence and as some persons are revengeful, I am afraid they will find out the reasons of my coldness and disgust; and that they will punish you for your insensibility to me, and mine to them, &c.

I Am sick, madam, and when I was the last time oblig'd to shew a complacency for your rival, she soon perceiv'd that my heart was elsewhere. I fear, while I am dissatisfied with you, she will be the same with me: It is a dismal thing to offend a queen in such a matter. If the kindness I am forc'd to shew her shocks your delicacy, you ought to content your self, for I swear to you that I am like a dead logg near every thing that is not you. Suffer me to hope, I will take heart and grow well, and will make no other use of my health than to sling off the chains I abhor, that I may wear none but yours, &c.

As soon as the queen had receiv'd the packet, and perceiv'd the letters to be of *Monaldescbi's* hand, she shut her self up in her closet, and an hour after sent for me: she ask'd me, with a great deal of concern, whether I had known *Monaldescbi* in *Italy*; if since that I had been his friend; and if I had understood that he had any intrigue in *France*. Having no manner of grounds to imagine the queen should have the motives she had thus to question me, I thought her speaking to me after this manner might perhaps be occasion'd by her being jealous. I was very sensible that the *Italian* had address'd himself to a lady of the court, but I did not care to tell the queen so. I reply'd, that I had seen *Monaldescbi* in *Italy*, and contracted a friendship with him there, but since that, had heard no news of him; and

and as to engagements in the court of *France*, I had not perceiv'd any such thing.

Having made her this answer, she said, it is enough; and then turn'd the discourse to some other subject; and amongst the rest, what the world said were the motives that induc'd her to quit her royalty. I told her that every body was perswaded she did it on a religious account. At these words I saw the tears come into her eyes. She sigh'd, and said, God was her witness that that was the only inducement to her leaving *Sweden*; but that princes were unfortunate, in that they had very few friends. She ask'd me what time of day it was, and where the king was. I answer'd her question, and then she took her leave of me, putting me in mind of the honour I had of being ally'd to her by my marriage. I reply'd, it was an honour I durst not boast of; but I was as sensible of it as it was possible for any man to be; which I would endeavour to demonstrate as long as I liv'd, by the profound respect which I ever had and always should have for her.

As I was going out she call'd me, and ask'd me if I had ever read *Machiavel*, and what we thought of him in *France*. I told her he was very much esteem'd for his good sense; but that there were several maxims in his works very little conformable to religion. There is one, she said, which is indispensibly necessary for princes. It is when their honour obliges them to it, to punish their subjects themselves, in case there is any danger of hurting their reputation in proceeding with them by the forms of law. Pray what do you in *France* on these occasions? I answer'd, it was seldom that such extremities were made use of there, and that *Henry* the third had been blamed for punishing the duke *de Guise* as he did. I know better than you, she reply'd, what you say of *Henry* the third; his action had not been odious, had he not kill'd the cardinal *de Guise*. We argu'd on this point a long while; and I was so accusom'd to hear this prince's dispute on all sorts of subjects, that I had not the least suspicion of the action she meditated at that time. As soon as I was gone she sent for *Monaldeschi*, with whom she was alone a few minutes; and half an

L

hour

hour after she sent again for me : she had no body with her when I return'd. She begg'd me to be a witness of some discourse she was oblig'd to have with *Monaldeschi* ; that it was about an affair of great consequence, of which she was desirous to have me know the secret : but it was convenient that I should be hid that none might see me. She then lock'd me in a closet where I could hear every thing ; first having conjur'd me, if I would not be my own destruction, to make no noise, nor give any sign that I was there. I did as she desir'd me ; and I began to call to mind our discourse at my last interview, and to be apprehensive what would become of *Monaldeschi*.

Soon after I was shut in, he enter'd ; so, wretch, said she to him, canst thou still deny these letters to be thine ? canst thou disown thy own hand ? tell me in what I have deserved that thou shouldst raise such foul calumnies upon me ; when had we the wicked commerce together which thou dost brag of ? speak, and say the truth, as thou wilt answer it to thy creator, for thou hast but an hour to live, and oughtest to prepare for thy end.

Monaldeschi stood mute a long time : he was on his knees, and did what he could to embrace the queen's feet ; she still push'd him from her, bidding him speak out as she had commanded him. I cannot justify myself, madam, said the *Italian*, I have deserv'd death, and have recourse only to your goodness. He ask'd her pardon, repeating it twenty times, praying her to have pity on him : nor was it possible to shew more weakness than he shew'd on this occasion : he talk'd like a man out of his wits, distracted by the fear of death.

I was often tempted to sally out from the place where I was conceal'd ; but not imagining that the queen would have proceeded to so sudden an execution, I waited for her orders, to join with the poor wretch in endeavouring to appease her.

A moment afterwards she call'd in some of her people ; and three arm'd men enter'd with a fryar : she bid them follow the orders she had given them. They carry'd off *Monaldeschi*. The fryar gave the queen a packet seal'd ; and she commanded him, without delay,

lay, to confess the man she had spoke to him of. The good father threw himself at her feet, to beg mercy for the criminal : I came forth of the closet, and pray'd her to have pity on the miserable *Monaldeschi*. She was deaf to all our prayers, bid me not to stir, and sent the friar out to take his confession.

The friar came twice or thrice from the criminal to tell her, he ask'd to speak with her : she demanded whether he had made his confession ; the friar telling her he had, she order'd one of the three arm'd men to come to her, and commanded him to kill him without any further delay. They had difficulty in doing it ; for he wore a coat of mail, which probably he put on after the queen had shewn him the letters, suspecting that upon such proofs he should have been assassinated : this precaution serv'd only to make his death the more slow and painful.

I once more threw myself at the feet of the queen ; all the answer she made me, was to break open the packet and shew me the fatal letters. I could never know with what design she had put them into the hands of the friar. She read them to me, and ask'd if after I had heard such letters as these, I could take the part of a man so guilty, so perfidious and ungrateful. I reply'd, he deserv'd to die ; yet I pray'd her to be merciful.

While I was upon my knees begging her to spare him, word was brought that he was dead : she said, never any one should see those letters ; and she order'd me to let no body know that I had seen them, nor that she had told me any thing of the affair ; that she had been willing to acquaint me with it, to have an irreproachable witness in me what little ground she had given for such calumnies ; and who, upon occasion, might testify the whole truth, as I learn'd it from *Monaldeschi's* own confession ; though she did not suppose she should be oblig'd to give reasons for her proceeding in that manner, being a queen who was accountable to no person living for her actions. I promis'd to say nothing, and to do nothing in the business further than I receiv'd orders from her.

The king complain'd of the method she took to do her self justice; and gave her to understand, he wish'd she had proceeded in punishing the criminal with less precipitation. She took no notice of this reproof: on the contrary, she order'd me more strictly than ever not to speak of the secret she had intrusted me with, thinking it below her dignity to justify her actions.

I have been so true to her in the matter, that though it was said every where she put *Monaldeschi* to death for his indiscretion in boasting of her favours; yet I never offer'd to say what I knew, and was very glad that it was not known I was present at this business: perhaps I should have been blam'd for not running to help a man who was my friend; for there are some persons, who without weighing the circumstances of a man's condition and ability, would engage him in the most rash and unprofitable designs; and it would have been foolish and vain in me to have attempted singly to save a man who did not defend himself; and who was in the hands of three officers well arm'd that were order'd to kill him: besides, if I would have done it, the queen would not have suffer'd me to come out of the closet; and I could not assist him without offering violence to that princess.

Be it as it will the thing happen'd just as I have reported it. I suppose I may now do the queen that publick justice, which she forbid me to render her when her reputation was most attack'd. I have all the reason in the world to believe, she had given very little and innocent grounds to the foolish vanity of *Monaldeschi*; and the knowledge I had of the *Italian's* character confirms me he was the most vain and impertinent man I ever met with, and even the most base. How unhappy are those princesses who place a confidence in persons of such a character.

I was a long while ignorant by what means the queen of Sweden got *Monaldeschi's* letters into her possession; I suspected the lady whom he seem'd to like had betray'd him, and two years after I understood it was she: I was told it by a woman that was a servant to her at the time when *Monaldeschi* courted her. This woman be-
ing

ing dismiss her service, liv'd with a relation of mine; and I learn'd the whole affair from her. I cannot but think the adventure worth the relating, as well to finish all that I know concerning that unhappy wretch, as to shew what women are capable of doing.

If the queen of *Sweden* has been blam'd for her cruelty in punishing him so suddenly, she that sacrific'd him to her vengeance ought, in my opinion, to be condemn'd as much more cruel.

Monaldeschi fell in love with this lady at a time when she was courted by a great officer, who lov'd her passionately, and would have been a very good match for her: she was very covetous, and the *Italian* being represented to her as a person who was able to make her very rich presents, she made no more resistance than she thought necessary to excite his liberality. However, *Monaldeschi* was the least guilty of profusion of any man, he would promise more than he would perform; and all the offers he made her were only so many tricks to surprize her. The lady, who did not know his character, resolv'd to try him, and not standing much on punctillio's with a stranger, whom she look'd upon as a bird upon the wing, she told him, after she had withstood him some time, and received several amorous letters, that she had occasion for fifty thousand crowns, and whoever would supply her with them should have no cause to repent his generosity. The *Italian* seem'd to be wonderfully well pleas'd at an opportunity to oblige her: he demanded an assignation, and promis'd to bring her punctually the fifty thousand crowns she wanted either in bills of exchange, or in jewels: the day was set, against which *Monaldeschi* provided a number of false diamonds, such as nearest resembled the true; and took them along with him to the place of rendezvous.

His visits had alarm'd the lady's lover: he watch'd all her motions, and was inform'd of the time and place appointed for this meeting: he took no notice of it to her, resolving to see whether she would go so far with him or no; and in case she did, to surprize her. She did not fail coming at the time: *Monaldeschi* gave her the diamonds, and he requir'd her to pay him the purchase

just as the lover came in. As much as she was amaz'd to find he had caught her with the *Italian*, she had the presence of mind to hide the jewels, intending to make her market of it, let the adventure end how it would; for the last thing a covetous woman forgets is her interest.

The two lovers quarrell'd, and the lady left them to decide it between themselves, comforting herself with the diamonds for the loss of a marriage on which she had depended before, and which she reasonably suppos'd could come to nothing after this adventure.

Monaldeschi's cowardice ended the dispute between the two rivals; he said he would not fight for a woman who had not consented to his passion before he paid dearly for it with his money; that he had just now given her fifty thousand crowns in jewels, and when she had restor'd them to him he would fight him as soon as he pleas'd. The lover knowing by that the character of his mistress, was not very earnest to press the thing further. He told *Monaldeschi* it was just he should possess a mistress he had so dearly bought; and that he relinquis'd her to him with all his heart.

He would have left him at these words; but *Monaldeschi* affecting to appear generous, told him, he gave him his promise never to see her more; and should think his diamonds well laid out, since he had by that means been undeceived in the merit of a woman whom he thought worthy of esteem: he said he would not ask her for them again, and she should never hear more from him.

The rival was surpriz'd at this generosity: he thought it was impossible to find a man in the world so little self-interested as to think the loss of fifty thousand crowns a trifle, and began to imagine that he had not given her to the value of so much money as he pretended; but made use of this artifice to induce him to think the woman not worth contending for. He told him his thoughts; and the *Italian* confess'd the diamonds were counterfeits. The lover was more pleas'd to find his mistress had been cheated by the *Italian*, than he was before in imagining she had tricked him. They hugg'd themselves

themselves upon it, and spread the story without naming the lady.

She heard it as soon as any body ; and though her name was not mention'd, but on the contrary the thing was reported to have happen'd to another, yet she did not doubt but she was the bubble they talk'd of. She shewed the diamonds to a jeweller, and was so enrag'd to find them false, that she resolv'd to be reveng'd. She had kept *Monaldeschi's* letters, and he must have given her also that which was written in *Italian*, since it was among the others in the queen of *Sweden's* packet, which she receiv'd from her.

One cannot enough admire the stupidity of this man, to have so little regard for a woman, who had in her hands that which might be his destruction. It may be he flatter'd himself, that the queen would pardon him if she had come to the knowledge of it ; or, he may perhaps have forgotten that the lady had such letters of his in her custody : whatever was the occasion of his negligence and forgetfulness, we are taught by his sad adventure how dangerous it is to make a jest of a woman.

I cannot tell whether the lover who broke with her on the discovery of her meeting *Monaldeschi*, knew any thing that she was the cause of his death ; I never heard him speak of it, and I should not have known any thing of the matter had not the woman that liv'd with her told it me.

While the queen of *Sweden* was in *France*, she interceded with the king for my second brother, who when he left the kingdom to avoid his majesty's displeasure, went into *Sweden*, and accompany'd the queen in her journey to *Italy*: he stay'd at *Rome* in expectation of the pardon which she had promis'd to obtain for him of the king. She perform'd her promise, and word was sent to my brother that he might return ; but he was gone from *Rome* before the news arriv'd, and went back to *Sweden*, where he was very well receiv'd by persons of the highest quality.

He was a man as famous for his adventures as any one ; there was this only difference between him and me, that the greatest part of his misfortune fell upon him by his

own inconstancy and deceit ; whereas mine happen'd by my honesty and sincerity.

We were both cullies to the sex, and I was no more happy in behaving my self honourably towards the ladies, than he was in deceiving and dealing roughly by them : wherefore I think I may say, that the fortune of lovers is equal, let them use their mistresses well or ill ; and that honesty is little necessary in a commerce in which women seem to have sworn to sacrifice to nothing but their vanity, interest or caprice.

I knew them better than ever, and my last adventure with the princess *Aspasia* convinc'd me, that it was a great unhappiness for a man's thoughts to be always roving, whereby he is induced to make love to every woman he thinks agreeable. Wherefore for my future repose, and to avoid the rocks I had been like to split on, I resolv'd to engage my self with a person whom I could willingly make my wife, and seriously set about seeking out a woman worthy of me. This was not a very easy thing to do ; I must have one on whom I could settle my affections, and who should be an agreeable fortune ; two qualities that very rarely meet together in one woman ; yet I would by no means marry a person that wanted either of them : and it was in vain for my elder brother to persuade me that I ought to look out for nothing but money. I was afraid if I marry'd a woman I could not love, I should fall to intriguing again ; and I thought the only way to cure me of that humour, was to find a woman who had all the graces and perfections that I could admire in others of her sex.

My mother had been dead a year or two : she had no children by her second husband ; and by her death I was become a better match than I was while she liv'd. I fancy'd my self therefore in a condition to make a good choice for my self ; yet I found the business more difficult than I imagin'd. I fear'd if I happen'd to meet with a person worthy to be lov'd, I might love her at first sight, and that my passion might make me regardless of the rest ; but then likewise I could not bear to think of marrying a woman that I could not love.

My brother laugh'd to see me perplex my self about it ; and made use of my incertitude to convince me, that
I should

I should run no manner of danger in marrying a rich woman: that perhaps love would come afterwards; and if not; money would make amends even for love. I did not very much approve of his reasons; and though he propos'd several matches to me, I came to no conclusion on the point.

This perplexity had at least a good effect for some time: I look'd upon women with the eyes of a man that intended to marry, which hinder'd my engaging in any intrigue with them. It was the first day of my life that I could say I was free from such engagements; and I must with shame confess, that I did not think my self so happy as I had fancy'd those to be who were not in love: on the contrary, I liv'd a tiresome life perpetually. The least trouble disturb'd me, having no body to comfort me in so soft and sweet a manner as a woman that loves one. On the other side the views of my fortune made little impression upon me; for I never desir'd to be rich, but that I might divide my riches with a person I lov'd: wealth seem'd to me to be good for nothing else. At last I was entirely convinc'd, it was impossible to be content without being in love.

It was to no purpose that I call'd to mind all the troubles I had undergone through that passion: I concluded with my self, after I had compar'd the one with the other, that the pleasure is more sensible than the pain. It was a great unhappiness for a man to have contracted such an ill habit; for we must own, that religion, and a sincere desire of salvation, is the only way to peace.

These motives work'd little with me then: I would fain be happy, and was so foolish as to fancy there was no happiness to be met with in any thing but love. I often said to my self, is it impossible to find a woman with whom I may taste the pleasures of loving and being belov'd? I then call'd my dear *Carmelite* to mind, and bu'ied my self to seek out in some other person what I thought I should have found in her, if it had been our fortune to come together.

There is nothing so pleasant and so whimsical as the disposition I was in after these reflections: I look'd out every where for a woman whom I could love; and as soon as I found one to my mind I was afraid of address-

sing to her, lest I should be again deceiv'd. All that I got by my experience was not to hate women, but to fear them : which made me more unfortunate than I was when I gave my self up to them without distrust or fear ; and I was sorry sometimes that the time was over, when I was blind without knowing my blindness : my reason, being not strong enough to master my inclination, rather puzzled than assisted me. I perceived then, that a man in love ought always to be a little blind to think himself happy. And nothing is a more certain proof of the errors and misfortunes of that passion, than to reflect, that it is never entirely happy but when it is entirely blind.

The knowledge I got of the nature of love by my reflections, was far from depriving me of the relish of that passion ; I continued obstinate in the belief that I could and ought to fix my affections. Nothing more, said I, is required for this purpose, than to find a woman one could love out of inclination as well as duty : this did not seem to me impossible, and I determin'd to spare no pains in seeking for such an one.

With this view I kept company chiefly with married people, that by conversing with them I might learn the conveniencies and inconveniencies of marriage : and I must own, that I met with scarce any one example that did not make me afraid to venture. Those who doated on their wives, and those that did not love them, seem'd to me equally unfortunate. My eldest brother was happy enough in his estate ; but he had so little inclination to love, and was so occupy'd about making his fortune, that his example weigh'd very little with me. I did not like his indifference, or his ambition : I was willing to love, and not over-sollicitous to advance my self : I had not been so indifferent towards riches, could I have been more indifferent towards love. It is no wonder that a man of this humour did not get preferment. There is no other way to it than by making every thing give place to the desire of advancement ; and as for me, I would have every thing give way to my design of loving, and being belov'd. This prepossession hinder'd me from doing any thing extraordinary ; and if I may be allow'd to say so, spoil'd all my talents for business.

I wish

I wish those that read these memoirs may profit by my example; and learn betimes to resist a passion that cannot be master'd without a miracle, when a man begins to wrestle with it so late as I did. The time wherein my errors were to be corrected, was not yet come, and I was to give other instances of weakness and blindness; for all my reflections serv'd for nothing more than to engage me the more firmly, as soon as I imagin'd I had got what I thought I sought after. Among the persons my brother propos'd to me, he named one who he said was a perfect beauty. She was related to monsieur *Fouquet*, whose family began to be in great credit by means of the abbot *Fouquet*, a favourite of the cardinal.

The young gentlewoman was the daughter of a lawyer, born in *Britany*; and tho' her father was a practitioner, his extraction was not ordinary; it being customary for the sons of good houses in that province to wear the long robe. This lawyer, besides that he was a very good gentleman, pass'd for an extraordinary rich man; and this match my brother preferr'd to all that he had recommended to me, in hopes it would be of service to our family, by means of the favour and support of that of *Fouquet*.

I did not much consider the consequences of the marriage: the girl was young, and I must confess I was a little apprehensive of her beauty. I could not suppose a young and a handsome woman had all the qualities necessary to make me happy; and was afraid of the fortune of those husbands, who are oblig'd by the youth and beauty of their wives to become their tutors and guardians. The business stopp'd here: the girl was newly come out of the country; I had not yet seen her, and was not very desirous to see her, being not very fond of the marriage.

One day as I was going over *Red-Bridge*, I saw a coach overturn, and three women taken out of it with difficulty: I was alone in mine, and I thought I could do no less than offer it to the ladies: the eldest of them accepted of my compliment the more readily, because, as she said, she was oblig'd to go that very moment to a place where she was expected about an urgent affair: she ask'd pardon for the freedom she us'd, and stepping into the

the coach, one of her company stopp'd her, saying, she would not follow her, nor owe me such an obligation. I was surpriz'd at her refusal, and looking upon her, found her to be the most shining and lively beauty I ever saw: she seem'd in some disorder after what she had said, and I fancy'd she did not care to look me in the face. She that accepted my offer chang'd her mind upon what the other that refus'd it said to her: she thank'd me, and said she would stay till her own coach was refitted. No, madam, I reply'd, you shall if you please take mine; and tell me how I have deserv'd, that the charming person who stopp'd you should deprive me of the honour you would do me. She smil'd, and answer'd, I will assure you she is angry with you: she is handsome enough to be sought after, and I suppose she does not take you for a friend of hers. Me, madam, said I immediately, I do not believe I had ever the honour to see her; I am sure I never saw any thing so fair as she. Perhaps, says the lady, in the same tone, it is that very thing which offends her: she has been in *Paris* six weeks, and cannot think that so gallant a man as you ought to have stay'd so long without seeing her. Pray, mother, said the young lady, don't let us keep the gentleman any longer; he has, without doubt, other affairs on his hands than to trouble himself about us. I answer'd her, no madam, you must accept the offer which the lady your mother was so kind not to refuse; and let me know what I have done to make you so much my enemy. I, sir, she reply'd, would only save you so much pains; and I know well enough, that it is not about such country girls as I that you trouble your self. She seem'd, in saying these words, to reproach me; and I was equally surpriz'd and confounded. I spoke so many soft things to her, and made so many compliments to her mother, that at last they accepted of my offer, and I carried them whither their business call'd them.

On the way I understood that this fair one was *Fouquet's* kinswoman: the term of country girl, which she repeated several times with affectation, put me in mind that I had indeed call'd her so, when I refus'd to think of her, before I had seen or known her. I did not question but that she had been told, that in discourse with a friend
of

of mine who recommended her to me, I had said, to put him off, that I would not marry a country girl, who perhaps might not have common sense. This was repeated to her word for word, and this made her so angry with me. So dangerous it is to speak without consideration before one's best friends; and at a venture to talk injuriously of persons we never saw. I parted from her, making a thousand offers of services; and I doubted not but I had sufficiently repair'd the injury that had been done me with her.

When I was alone, I felt my self sensibly touch'd by the beauty of this girl: the little vexation that she gave me made me think the better of her: I found her to be witty in every thing she said, and her merit appear'd above her years. I look'd upon our meeting as having something of fatality in it, and from that minute was enamour'd. There appear'd neither humour nor vanity in her anger; and I fancy'd she thought me worthy of her, or she would not have been angry for a word that had escap'd me; or been offended at the little forwardness I shew'd for knowing or seeing her after the proposals that had been made me; for her mother agreed to the propositions, and she was not ignorant of them.

In short, I was at last caught in the snare, and believ'd I had found what I sought for. I went the next day to see my brother; and without telling him what had happened to me the day before, I told him I had consider'd his advice, and agreed with him that monsieur *Fouquet's* kinswoman was the most proper match I could think of; and that I desir'd he would demand her of her parents for me. My brother said he would lose no time in it; that he would see the abbot *Fouquet*, and in the mean while it might not be improper for me to visit the young gentlewoman. He promis'd to procure me an opportunity of seeing her, and would immediately go to the abbot and talk to him about it.

Being impatient to see the charming maid, and fearing the opportunity my brother talk'd of would not happen so soon as I wish'd, I told him I had already seen her, and acquainted him with the recounter. He laugh'd at me, and said; he perceiv'd now what had determin'd me to the marriage; telling me I should be mad and
amorous.

amorous as long as I liv'd : he caution'd me not to appear to be so, for the lady and her friends would be surpriz'd to find that I was so much in love in so short a time ; that they would thence apprehend that it was too hot to last. For he that would marry, ought to be aware of nothing more than to shew too much passion for the person he would espouse. From thence he said arose all the unhappy marriages in the world ; for a woman accusom'd to find in an husband all the devotion, and all the earnestness of love, is apt to give herself but little concern to shew him respect ; that she will abuse the passion he has for her, and will always think her self despis'd upon not finding in her husband that ardour with which he first pleas'd her ; that it was impossible this passion should long preserve the same strength, and that its slackning would be a change difficult for a wife to bear.

Nothing could be more wise, nor more to the purpose than these counsels ; but to whom were they given ? to a man whom love had already blinded. I assur'd my brother I was not that amorous person he took me for ; and if I were, I would not see my mistress oftner than he should think convenient. He answer'd, I should do well to be as good as my word ; and as soon as he had seen the abbot *Fouquet*, and talk'd to her mother, he would order the matter so, that I should have as many opportunities to see the young lady as I would : he again caution'd me as to my conduct, and bad me remember his advice, saying, I was now too old to be extravagant, and to be guilty of the follies in which I had spent my youth. He added, the whole town would make a jest of me, if I appear'd as amorous at thirty-five as I was at twenty. He left me presently after, and I hearken'd so little to his wholesome counsel, that I went directly from him to my mistress : I saw nothing inconvenient in this visit : I imagin'd it would be attributed to pure good manners ; but happen what would, I was no longer my own master ; and I believe that if my life had lain at stake, I should not have been resolute enough to have pass'd that day without seeing the person with whom I was so much charm'd.

But

But had I to do with people wiser than my self. I was inform'd, that neither she nor her mother was at home, tho' I knew that both of them were within: this refusal put me in mind of my brother's advice, and hinder'd me from pressing to be admitted so earnestly as I desir'd. I return'd full of a real despair; and I am sure, if I should say all that I suffer'd that day by being forbid a sight of the person without whom I could not live, the world would laugh at me; for I was never more a fool in my life,

A man of my character is very much to be pity'd when he is in love: and I wonder it did not make me more wretched than I was. I own, I might have been more wise could I have been less fond; but I valued my self on my fondness, and was falsely perswaded in my self, that a man of honour should spare for nothing to shew his passion to the woman he loves.

The next day, my brother acquainted me, he was afraid my marriage with that young lady was not feasible; for the *marquess de Bellefonds*, who was engaged to another kinswoman of *monieur Fouquet's*, had seen this, and it was likely that he would prefer her to the other; that tho' the *marquess's* estate was not greater than mine. yet he doubted not both the mother and the daughter would hearken to him, if he address'd himself to my mistress; because he was a favourite at court, and had behav'd himself so prudently, that there was no reason to fear from him what my many adventures gave grounds to apprehend from me.

My brother bid me let him alone in the management of the business; and if that girl was given to *Bellefonds*, he would procure the *marquess's* first mistress for me, who would be a much better match, being more nearly related to *monieur Fouquet*, whose name she bore.

I did not at all like my my brother's proposal: the lady whom he would have me take, if the *marquess de Bellefonds* left her, was a woman who had no fault but her want of beauty: but alas! had she been as fair as an angel, I had already chosen elsewhere, and was in love. This was not the only reason that made me dislike my brother's discourse; I was very much displeas'd that it should be said the *marquess* had behav'd himself better than

than I. It is true, I did not know of any amours he had, but he was the most irregular man in the world for play. He gam'd without reason and without measure, a vice, which in my opinion, was more to be fear'd than the inclination I had for women. Besides I was so well satisfy'd this inclination of mine was no vice, that I would not have exchang'd my management for his, tho' the world might not judge as I did. He was thought prudent, and I debauch'd; and we must own that there is no sort of extravagance so injurious to a man's fortune as the love of women.

I told my brother that it would be mean in me to wait for the marquis *de Bellefont's* leavings; that I believ'd it would be best to hinder his having the young gentlewoman whom he would have me give up to him; in order to which it was necessary I should see her; and I hop'd she would like me better than my rival. My brother oppos'd this design; yet at length he submitted, seeing I was resolv'd upon it, and fearing I should be guilty of some indiscretion if he longer oppos'd me.

I went from him to my mistress's mother, and not being able to find her at home, I ran after her to church, whither I was told she was gone to hear mass: I waited for her until she came out, and then gave her my hand to lead her home. By the way I told her, I did not doubt she had been inform'd that my brother had demanded her daughter for me. She reply'd, she had heard something of it, but she did not meddle in the matter; that it belong'd to her daughter and her relations, to whose choice she should be willing to consent; if it fell upon me, she should be glad, and would not disserve me in it.

I beg'd her to let me see her daughter: she presented her to me, and left me with her. I assured the lovely maid, that I was heartily sorry for having so long deferr'd doing my self the honour of seeing and getting acquainted with her: that I was now come to make amends for the little haste I shew'd in paying her my duty; and that I could not do it better than by giving my self up to her: that I had asked her in marriage of those whose care I had been told it was to see her well settled; but that I would hope for nothing but from her consent: that

I knew.

I knew she had already made the *marquess de Bellefonds* inconstant; but believ'd she would not accept of a man for her husband who was capable of such infidelity; nor do so great an injury to her kinswoman: She answer'd, that the *marquess de Bellefonds* had not been mention'd to her; that she look'd upon him as a man engag'd elsewhere, and therefore what she heard from me was news to her. 'That she would submit to those who were to settle her in the world, and would obey them as soon as they should speak of it to her. How, madam, said I, would you take a husband in this manner, without consulting your heart or your inclination? do you know that marriage is the greatest and most terrible affair of your life; and that you alone have a right to decide in it? I will not dissemble with you, my happiness centers in having you for my wife; yet I will never think on it, unless you order me to do so. I shall speak to no one besides your self to know what I have to depend on: consider with your self, be sincere, and I swear, if I am not agreeable to you, I will be gone and satisfy my self with adoring you without seeing you, or complaining of you. I assure you, she reply'd; these generous sentiments are very pleasing to me; give me time to think upon it, and in the mean while you may depend I never will marry the *marquess de Bellefonds*. I suppose those that told you he had any thing to say to me, took pleasure in deceiving you: However, be it as it will, rest satisfied, I love my kinswoman too well to deprive her of her gallant. This answer charm'd me. I asked leave to visit her, and openly to wait upon her: She told me I forgot what I said just now, and that we had agreed she should have time to consult her inclinations before I declared my self further; however she would not make any delays in giving me satisfaction, and pray'd me to take no notice of our conversation together. I left her, protesting I would expect her resolution as that which was to give me life or death.

The more I reflected on the proceedings of this lovely person, the more I found her worthy of my devotion. I could not question her want of wit; and her desiring to consider with her self whether she could love me, before she suffer'd me to court her, seem'd to me an instance

instance of wisdom, much above her years. I perswaded my self she must have a good opinion of me to deal so by me; and could not help blaming the conduct of those young women, who are afraid of speaking their minds, and marry without considering whether they are in love or not: I imagin'd my mistress had more sense than others of her sex for believing marriage to be a business which required deliberation; and I doubted not, if after she had deliberated upon it, she should determine the matter in my favour, I should be one of the happiest men living; which may serve to give a judgment of the impatience I was in to have her answer.

The reader must not think I past my time of expectation very quietly; nor that I did not in the interim shew her new marks of my love. I invented an hundred pieces of gallantry, which gave the world to understand I was in love with her. She her self had the greatest reason to believe it of any one; neither did she make any doubt of it: and on my side, I had cause to suppose she thought my affections real and perfect; for when she gave her answer, she assur'd me she thought I was more capable than any man of making her happy; and she would not obstruct our marriage if her relations approv'd thereof.

I then fancy'd my self on the pinnacle of felicity; for every thing was prepar'd to my purpose with her relations, and we had nothing to do but to be marry'd. However, three or four days afterwards I went to wait upon her, and found her very melancholy: she would not tell me the occasion. She lock'd her self up in her chamber, leaving me with her mother, who spoke to me in these terms.

I will not dissemble with you, sir, you seem to be a man of too much honour, and too much concern'd for my daughter's welfare, to oppose her advancement. Monsieur the prince of—— is in love with her: he has declar'd himself to her, and to her friends, and waits for our answer to marry her with all the ceremonies due to a prince of his rank. Tho' he is a stranger, yet being a sovereign, his quality gives my daughter a view of such a high station, that she would be mad not to accept of him: nothing hinders her giving him her hand but her
engage-

engagements with you. To remove this impediment, I have assur'd her, if you really love her, you will be the first to advise her not to lose an opportunity of raising a fortune so much above her hopes.

Thus did her mother speak to me, and I fancy'd at first that what she said was mere pleasantry, only to try how I would bear it; but the thing was too true: and what a dreadful revolution was this for a man in love! I ask'd several times what her daughter said to it. I was answer'd, that she should come and tell me her self, and accordingly she came, I look'd on her without saying a word, she also remain'd mute for some time; at last she broke silence with saying, you cannot doubt, sir, that I have not a value for you, by the consent I gave to your proposal of marriage; but I also assure my self you have too much reason, to oppose the fair occasion that presents in my favour. If I had valued you less I would have refus'd to have seen you as things stand at present; but I have relied on the good opinion you have occasioned me to have of you, when you assur'd me, that love should not make you desire any thing to the prejudice of what might be to my advantage.

These words struck me almost dead. I was amaz'd to find she had already resolv'd what to do: the hopes of being a princess had so dazzled her, that she was not a moment in suspense. I cast my eyes towards the ground, and rising from my seat; no, madam, said I to her, I will be no obstacle to so glittering a fortune: heaven grant that you may meet therein with that happiness which you would have found elsewhere. Having said these words I went out of the room, and she shewed no disposition to detain me.

I repented then that I had follow'd my brother's advice no better; I was heartily vex'd that I indeed was and had appear'd to be so much in love with a young woman that had not a minute's dispute with her self in my favour.

I spent a whole day in contriving how to cross her marriage with the prince; and should have been infinitely pleas'd to see her reduc'd to a condition that might make her glad to return to me. My anger wore off in time; I condemn'd my self for those mean thoughts.
Ought

Ought I to blame her, said I to my self, for preferring a prince who will make her a sovereign, to a man who can very little mend her fortune ? since I love her, ought not I to desire that she may be as happy as she deserves to be ? if she had been so resolute as to have taken me, rather than so advantageous a match, should I have been so base as to have agreed to such a sacrifice ? I have sworn to her I lov'd her for the sake of her self : would I have deceiv'd her, or did I speak as I thought ?

Here I ended my reflections ; and it seem'd as if my soul was in a calm after a storm that had ruffled it. The idea of her marrying to another man look'd less dreadful, when I consider'd he was a sovereign, and that nothing lower than such an elevation could have ravish'd her from me. I own I was a sufferer ; yet I felt a secret pleasure in doing a generous action, in sacrificing my love to her fortune. I was ambitious of having the glory of this sacrifice, and the next day went to her again. I told her, that the day before I had not been my own master, and thought I should have dy'd with sorrow and despair ; but at length I had overcome my weakness, and now waited upon her to rejoice with her on the rank to which she was about to be advanc'd ; and that instead of opposing it, I would give my life to see her settled with so much glory.

She seem'd to take but very little notice of what I said, being wholly taken up with preparations about her dress, and the ornaments for her wedding.

I was going to complain of it to her, when she interrupted me thus ; since you are desirous of having us oblig'd to you for the concern you have for our welfare, pray, sir, come here no more, lest your presence may raise suspicion : I assure you I will not be ungrateful, and as occasion offers, will make you satisfaction for what you have done for me.

These words rais'd my choller a second time : I went out of the room more hastily than I had done the time before ; and I confess, I could more easily forgive her preferring the prince to me, than her application about trifles, when she should have heard what I had to say to her.

I apprehended well enough, that the most reasonable maid in the world might be so ambitious as to lose no opportunity of being a princess; but I could not think that any reasonable woman could be so busy about preparations for a wedding, as to forget decency and good manners. I began to think she had not so much merit as I once believ'd she had; and that she must certainly love trifles and vanity, to prefer the care of her ornaments to gratitude, which should have oblig'd her to have us'd me better, since it was the last time I was to see her. This opinion worked more with me towards altering my mind, than her hasty consent to a marriage that destroy'd all my hopes of her: and I really think, that the fault which one ought least to pardon in the sex, is that trifling spirit which make them fond of great settlements rather out of vanity and pride, than out of opinion that they are more solid than little ones.

I was glad to discover a defect in her which rendred her less lovely: I suppos'd, since she was of such a temper, I should have been plagu'd with her had she been my wife. All this together comforted me for the loss of her; and though at the bottom I was griev'd and vex'd to see her about marrying another man, I fancy'd it was not so much because I still lov'd her, as because it is uneasy and mortifying to give place to another.

I now thought I was cur'd of the passion I had for her, or in a fair way of being so; and to my thinking had play'd my part like a gallant man. Yet I soon found that I was a perfect stranger to my self, and was never more amorous nor more fond.

Her marriage with the prince was broken off, by remonstrances made to him on an alliance so much below him; or rather by the inconstancy and infidelity of the prince. For I all along believ'd he had propos'd the marriage only to deceive the young lady, and endeavour by that means to gain her affections. Be it as it will, the matter came to nothing: the prince return'd into his own territories, and instead of all the fine hopes he flatter'd the damsel with, he left her nothing but a present which the young lady was so generous as to refuse.

As soon as I heard the marriage was broken off, I felt as great a joy as ever I tasted in my life : I imagin'd it was only the pleasure of seeing the girl mortify'd that was the occasion of it ; but I suddenly perceiv'd my joy had another motive. I had not the patience to stay till I was sent for ; I ran hastily to her mother's house, and when I saw her, was more eager than ever to marry her. I framed a thousand things to my self in excuse of her conduct with regard to the marriage of the prince : I forgot how she treated me the last time I saw her. I did not think it was any shame to court her again, since I had not thought it shameful to resign her to another : the quality of a prince seem'd to make all things excusable.

Thus I argu'd like a blind lover, who believes what he desires. It were to be wish'd that I had been either more wise or more foolish. Since I was so prudent to give place to her advantageous match, I ought to have had the prudence at least to have staid till they sent for me ; or since I was so foolish as to run after her, I should have been enough so, not to have parted with her so easily. My behaviour convinc'd her that I was very amorous, and very tractable, two qualities which a wife generally abuses.

When my mistress saw I came again to her, and came with as much love as before, she carried her self more handsomly than she had hitherto done : she told me she had not a moment's joy or quiet all the while she was in expectation of marrying the prince ; that she consented to it in appearance, only in obedience to the commands of her friends ; that she knew very well that the affair would break off, because she was willing it should do so ; in short, that she was resolv'd to be no body's, or to be mine.

It was easy, with the little sense I had left, to see the falshood of this fair discourse ; but I was blind, and indeed, unwilling to open my eyes. I reply'd as if every word she said had been true ; and I conjur'd her to give leave that I should press the conclusion of our marriage. It was soon concluded, My brother found his advantage in being ally'd to monsieur *Fouquet* ; and besides, he saw I was so much in love, he perceiv'd it would be in vain to oppose

oppose a passion in which I had made so little use of his wholesome counsels.

We were in the end married, and the fruit of all my deliberations that I might make this settlement with prudence, was to hear and follow only a blind passion, which did not find in marriage either the means to satisfy me, or to make my self belov'd.

The woman I marry'd perhaps would have been more sollicitous to please me, had she been less certain that she was belov'd; but we were scarce got together before I perceiv'd she presum'd too much on my weakness and on my love.

The match she was in hopes of with the prince made her intollerably vain; and she did not forget to reproach me that I was the cause of her losing it. In a word, I found I was not happy, and soon perceiv'd that I stood in need of all my strength and dissimulation to live well with a wife, who every day shew'd the little regard she had for me.

I thought then I perceiv'd that she never had any other motive, in the conduct she had observ'd towards me, but to increase my passion, and to see what she could bring me to. I had indeed given her too much ground to believe I was such a man as she would have a husband be, over whom she intended to tyrannize; and she was so well satisfy'd of it, that she soon began to exercise a dominion which disturb'd me.

What a mortification was it to me to be govern'd by a wife, after the experience I had of the sex! yet this was no more than a beginning of the troubles she was to give me. I met with others afterwards, which taught me thoroughly the truth of what my brother preach'd to me before I courted her; that the first thing a man ought to keep from a woman he intends to make his wife, is the knowledge of his passion for her, and that he is blind enough not to see her faults, or foolish enough to love her though he sees them. Instead of the happiness I had in view, by marrying the handsomest woman I ever saw in my life, I found in my marriage nothing but an eternal necessity to keep my self under a constraint, and to dissemble, in order to avoid clamour.

Her

Her beauty that appear'd so lovely to me lost its graces, when I consider'd it belong'd to a person whose demeanour was so odious; and I learn'd by woeful experience, that the greatest beauty cannot make amends for ill humour, but that an ill humour on the contrary spoils the greatest beauty. I got nothing by marrying so fair a lady, but more cause of inquietude; and such was my misfortune, that though my wife was not handsome enough for me, she seem'd too handsome for others.

This marriage was still more unfortunate than that in *Poland*; I got a woman of the same temper; but what made me much more a subject of pity was, that I durst not make so much noise of it as I did then. I was willing to be thought more prudent; and besides, I must observe measures with her family, which oblig'd me to be complaisant to her. Thus had I nothing to alleviate my unhappiness, and above six years did I endure, without saying a word, all the different torments which spite, jealousy, resentment, and constraint can inflict on a husband.

The time and the cares that this marriage took up, kept me in *Paris*, a good part of the summer. Tho' I had a furlough for the whole campaign, yet I was scarce marry'd before I would fain have put my self at the head of my regiment. It serv'd in monsieur *de Turenne's* army, which, as it was reported, was to besiege *Monmedy*. We were not very fortunate in the beginning of this campaign, and I was not very sorry that I did not serve in it. We lost *St. Guilain*, and were forc'd to raise the siege of *Cambray*. I did not doubt but we should besiege some place or other to repair the loss, and I was willing to have my share in the action.

The abbot *Fouquet* put me off it, by telling me, that since I could not live without something to do, he would find out an employ for me, with which I should not be displeas'd; that he would have propos'd it before, had he not believ'd I should have been loth to have been torn so soon from the arms of my bride. I answer'd him, he knew nothing of marriage, if he suppos'd a man was so fond of a wife as to neglect an opportunity of acquiring glory. That was a fault which was only pardonable

donable in lovers, but marriage was of another kind ; and such was the fatality of this engagement, that the most happy husbands rejoyce sometimes to be out of their wives sight : tho' I said this smiling, yet the abbot mistrusted that I began to grow weary of mine, and I was in the wrong to talk so to him. He chid me for it : I reply'd in such a manner as might persuade him that I meant only to shew him, how the most agreeable engagements could not make me in love with idleness.

Notwithstanding the colour I would have put upon what I said, either the abbot told it abroad, or the surprize people had to hear I ask'd leave to be gone so soon from one I had express'd so much love for, gave occasion to several reports that we did not love one another, which rais'd several ridiculous stories about us ; this convinc'd me, that a husband can never enough dissemble the disquiets of matrimony ; for if there is the least subject from his own confession to think he lives uneasy at home, it is an inexhaustible fountain for slander. The man is not spar'd, much less the woman.

I was amaz'd to hear what they said with relation to my marriage, that I had only the leavings of the prince, who was my rival ; and tho' I had no reason to believe my wife had given any cause for such a reflection, I could not help being concern'd at it, which made me endure her imperious humour with the less patience ; for to make here this farther reflection, a woman gains little by being innocent, it is enough to allarm the husband, that her virtue is attack'd by the publick, though without any foundation. Men, as soon as they are marry'd, have weakneses and visions, of which one would not think reasonable creatures were susceptible.

The abbot *Fouquet* seeing me resolute not to live idly, commended me very much, and acquainted me, that he had propos'd me to the cardinal as a fit person to undertake a certain foreign negotiation ; and that his eminency was of the same sentiments. He said the business was to be done in *England*, and the occasion of my voyage was this.

Our ministers in *France* had receiv'd information, that the *Spaniards* were treating with *Oliver Cromwel* for money and troops to possess themselves of some of our

M

maritime

maritime towns, upon condition to put all such as should be taken after this treaty into the hands of the *English*; the cardinal having notice of this affair would prevent it, by offering *Cromwel* a treaty of the same nature. He propos'd to him, that if he would lend us the same assistance the *Spaniards* desir'd, he would order *Dunkirk* to be besieg'd, and when it was taken, it should be deliver'd to the *English*.

To bring this treaty to a conclusion, his eminency sent me to *London*. The abbot *Fouquet* inform'd him I was ready to depart. The cardinal in person gave me my instructions, and two days afterwards I set out on my journey *incognito*.

I perceiv'd in my discourse with the cardinal, that by my living much abroad, I had got the reputation of being a man fit to be employ'd in foreign courts, tho' to speak the truth, my time therein had been taken up in things far different from affairs of state; but no body enquir'd what life I had led, nor what business it was which kept me from *France*. It was sufficient that I had lived in foreign courts, to have it thought that I had a talent for negotiations; so little is requisite to get a man a name in some things, scarce any thing is regarded besides appearances, and a man has pass'd for a great politician, who hath owed this reputation only to some circumstances wherein fortunately he hath been found, which hath determin'd the advantageous opinion the world hath had of him. Happy, when being engag'd in an employ by chance, one studies to acquire the merit necessary to acquit one's self well therein.

It was not difficult for me to succeed in the business I went to *London* about. *Dunkirk* was a bait that soon tempted *Cromwel* to abandon the *Spaniards*; and besides, he had much more hopes of the success of the troops, if they serv'd under monsieur *de Turenne*, than if they were commanded by the *Spanish* generals, whose power was divided.

Monsieur *de Turenne*'s fame was settled in the world; and when *Cromwel* heard he was the general that would besiege it, he did not doubt of its being taken. I obtain'd all that I desir'd, and in three months time got the treaty concluded and signed.

My

My destiny would not let me make this voyage without a new intrigue. A few days before I arriv'd in *England*, the chief conspirators in a plot against *Cromwel* had been executed. I had heard several relations of the conspiracy, and among other circumstances this was one, that the person who was most concern'd in it was a mistress of *Richard Cromwel*, the protector's son; who being disgusted with her lover had set the quakers against his father, by her intrigues amongst them: this young woman was not taken, and no body knew what was become of her.

I heard the story more than once, and always with very little attention. What I learn'd from it was, that the protector's authority diminish'd thro' the hate and contempts which the people had for his son *Richard*; inso-much, that it was said openly, that should the father happen to die, and leave only this son to preserve the authority after him, he would soon give it up, and the people would recal their lawful king.

I have related elsewhere, that I had the honour to be known to the king of *England*, *Charles II.* whilst he was in *France*; and every report that I heard against his enemies pleas'd me. The day before I left *London* a young *English* gentleman came to my lodgings, and begg'd that he might go with me to *France*; telling me, he had the honour to be a servant of the king of *England*; and that that prince would think himself oblig'd to me in assisting him to get out of *England*. I ask'd who he was. He answer'd, he would let me know as soon as he out of danger. That he could not stay, nor be seen in *London*, without running the hazard of his life. He entreated me, that if I would grant him the favour that he requested of me, to add another to it, and let him lodge there that night, and take him with me the next day.

The youth had an influence upon me; and though his countenance was full of sorrow, I saw so much beauty in his face, and so much grace in his air, that I believ'd he was something more than he appear'd to be.

I told him I would guard him with pleasure, and he should depart with me the next day betimes in the morning. He threw himself at my feet to thank me for my kindness, and pray'd me to let him have somewhat to eat. I made him sup with me, and by his discourse and his behaviour I was satisfy'd, that he was well born and educated.

He eat but little, and was sick after it : I could not tell what to make of this adventure ; I was touch'd with compassion, and took as much care of him as if he had been my son.

I did not press him to tell me who he was, because I perceiv'd he was uneasy when I mention'd it ; but when we were come to *Dover*, I took him aside, and pray'd him to satisfy my curiosity.

How was I surpriz'd when he told me he was a woman, and the very same whom I heard to have so great a share in the plot I before mention'd.

I saw then the danger I had brought my self into, by taking the charge of her as I had done ; but that could not now be prevented, and there being no appearance of our being follow'd, I assur'd her I rejoyc'd I had an opportunity to carry her safe out of *England* ; and ask'd whither she intended to go, and what she design'd to do with her self. She reply'd, she hop'd the queen-mother would take her into her protection ; and that she had to discover several important secrets which might help forward the king's restoration, which she believ'd would be improv'd in *France* ; for she could not think the *French* hated the king so much as not to be willing to assist him in recovering his dominions when a fair opportunity presented. I advis'd her to discover her self to no body till we were safe arriv'd in *France*, and I had seen how she would be receiv'd there ; because, I was apprehensive, that we having made such an alliance with the protector, she would not meet with so favourable a reception as she expected ; and perhaps it might be thought criminal in me to have brought her over. She answer'd she would do as I would have her ; and that she resolv'd, if she was not welcome in *France*, to go and seek out the king of *England* in *Holland*. I desir'd her

to tell me the particulars of the late conspiracy, and of her share in it ; which she did, thus.

My name is *Elizabeth Darcil*, a name that I suppose is not strange to you, if you ever heard the story of the late king of *England's* death. My father was always on the king's side, and one of the first victims that *Oliver Cromwel* offer'd to his security. I was scarce thirteen years of age when he was beheaded: the countess of *Shaftsbury* mediated for favour for me, and entertain'd me at her house. Sometime after, *Richard Cromwel* became acquainted with me : he said he lov'd me out of pity to my misfortunes, and flatter'd me with hopes that he would marry me. I believe the misfortunes which have since befallen me, are a punishment for my complacency towards him. I was dazzled with his fortune ; and the hopes of the settlement with which he flatter'd me, stifled the resentment I ought to have had of my father's murder.

The countess herself encourag'd the passion and desires of this traitor. She imagin'd that by making a sacrifice of me, she should fix an interest in him ; and by his means procure favours for her family. She was the first that endeavour'd to extinguish the few remains of revenge that still burn'd in my breast ; and by her persuasion I manag'd my self so, that he believ'd I lov'd him : but as soon as he had receiv'd some tokens of my affections, I perceiv'd he neglected me, and talk'd no more of marrying me, as he flatter'd me before he would do. The countess laugh'd at my sorrow and despair on this occasion, and at last told me coldly, that it was an honour for me to be his mistress ; that my fortune would be more shining and happy than I had reason to expect, after the ruin of my family.

I knew then that I was betray'd, and resolv'd to be reveng'd. I had a kinsman whose name was *Aschelay*, him I made acquainted with the affront *Richard Cromwel* had offer'd me. *Aschelay* was a man ready for any violent attempt, and one that for a long time had been contriving how to make himself famous by doing something worthy of note. He advis'd me to dissemble, till I had got out of *Richard* as much as was necessary to

form a conspiracy, and cut off the protector when he would be easiest to come at: for he suppos'd that if we were once rid of him, his faction would die with him.

I acted my part so well, that *Richard* was deceiv'd so far, that he hid nothing from me. He appear'd likewise to me dispos'd to wish his father's death, as much as those did who were his greatest enemies. He complain'd daily of his father's severity; and indeed the protector was naturally severe, behaving himself almost as cruelly to his son as he had done to his sovereign.

He was mad to see how little qualify'd his son *Richard* was to succeed him, and hop'd by severities, and frequently reproaching him for his unworthiness, he might at length be render'd such an one as he wish'd him.

You may imagine I did what I could to encreate *Richard's* discontent. I ventur'd one day to tell him, that I wish'd some body or other would deliver him from such a father. Pray heaven, reply'd he, they would; they might expect from me all that I could do for them, if they did me such a piece of service.

I reported to *Aschelay* the subject of our conversation: he desir'd me to bring on the same discourse the next time I saw him; and in case he seem'd willing to join in a conspiracy against his father, to make no scruple of discovering my self to him; and tell him that I would find out accomplices to undertake it.

It is no new thing to hear of a plot in *England*; and *Richard Cromwel* had all the qualities from whence we might hope this design would not shock him. He was a cruel man, and one who seem'd to be insensible of all the dictates of nature. *Aschelay* was a person much of the same character, and these two were very fit for the most barbarous and rashest enterprizes. I did as *Aschelay* desir'd me; *Richard* was willing to speak with my kinsman himself, and promis'd to facilitate all things for the success of the conspiracy, provided his name should not be mention'd to the other accomplices, and *Aschelay* would act as if he alone had contriv'd this great enterprize. This was promis'd, and they agreed together that the protector should be kill'd in his own chamber

chamber where he generally was by himself. *Richard* was to introduce the conspirators, and open them a secure passage into *Cromwel's* closet, where he could not defend himself.

You see, sir, I took a ready way to be reveng'd on *Richard*, by arming him against his father; for I was certain that when his father was dead, he would not have been left in a condition to make any advantage of his crime; but would soon be sent after him. *Aschelay* having concerted his measures, try'd to engage all those he could find for his purpose, bold resolute fellows; among whom he made choice of some that did not keep the secret. The protector was inform'd of the design by this means: the greatest part of the conspirators being engag'd in it out of hopes of reward, it is no wonder some of them thought they should get more by betraying it.

As soon as *Richard* knew his father had notice of it, he was afraid if *Aschelay* was apprehended he would discover the share he had in the plot; to prevent this he got him to be murder'd; and the matter was order'd so well that it was believ'd he kill'd himself.

When I heard of his death I immediately suspected *Richard* was the author of it, and was apprehensive of the same treatment: I disguis'd my self immediately and ran away in man's habit, not knowing what would become of me. The conspirators were seiz'd, but none of them knowing *Richard* was in the plot, only *Aschelay* and I were charg'd as the authors of it. *Aschelay's* corps was hang'd up and quarter'd. Strict search was made after me; and they not being able readily to find me, the protector did not trouble himself to make any longer enquiry about me. I lay conceal'd in *London*, till the time that you were so generous as to bring me thence. I hope, notwithstanding, to be reveng'd on him as soon as I am in a safe place; from thence I will give the protector information that his own son was one of the conspirators.

Here the young woman ended her narration, which I should scarce have believ'd, had she not given me full satisfaction in all parts of the relation which I thought incredible, and on which I had question'd her. She said

nothing which did not agree with what I had heard at *London*; and I did not doubt the truth of her story. She added, that while she was hid in *London*, she liv'd almost a week in a starving condition, not daring to trust her self with any one to procure a bit of bread: that all the day she liv'd in an uninhabited house, and went out on nights to gather provision; that she was found by some women who were out very early, to whom she said she was a footman, who durst not return to his master for fear of being hang'd for a robbery of which he was accus'd; that those good women had compassion on her, and gave her some bread; that it was of them she heard that a *Frenchman* was returning to *France*, and that by their advice she had taken the resolution of coming to me.

She threw her self again at my feet upon ending this recital, and I confess in my life I never felt more different emotions than this adventure gave me.

I call'd to mind what happen'd to me formerly, when I sav'd the maid at *Charleville*; and I imagin'd that I felt for the young *English* woman now, what I then felt for the *Fleming*: in short it was impossible for me not to love her; her youth, her beauty, the condition in which I found her, the continual caresses she gave me as her deliverer, the relation of her sufferings, and the opportunities I had of seeing her every minute in a dress that provok'd my passion; all these incitements kindled a flame in my breast as fierce as I had ever felt in my life for any woman. She quickly perceived it, and entreated me with so much tenderness not to take advantage of the condition she was in, to abuse her; that I treated her with as much respect as if she had been the person I was most afraid of offending. In the mean while my men guess'd she was a woman, and we were scarce arriv'd at *Calais* before it was nois'd about that I had brought a mistress with me from *London*. The news got to *Paris* sooner than I did, and when I arriv'd there every body talk'd to me of her, and ask'd to see her; I lodg'd her with a woman whose husband had been my servant, and oblig'd her not to say a word who it was that plac'd her there.

Thus

Thus believing no one would see her, and waiting for an opportunity either to speak of her to the queen, or get a passage for her to *Holland*, I answer'd those who ask'd any thing of the mistress I had brought away, that I knew not what they talk'd of.

My brother, who had heard as well as others of the report, ask'd me whether I would always be a fool; and I assur'd him more positively than any body else, that it was all a mere story. The same I said to my wife, who, to hide her ill carriage towards me, took hold of every thing that might give a colour to it, and justify her complaints of me.

She had gam'd incessantly in my absence, and when I return'd, I found her one of the top gamesters of the town: she play'd away the very money that should have been laid out in house-keeping. She always came home in the morning, and went to bed when others were going to rise; and I seldom saw her unless I accidentally met her at a visit. This management of her's serv'd to set me quite against her. Tho' we lodg'd under the same roof, we were strangers to one another; and it was very seldom that we exchang'd a word. I was heartily vex'd, yet the measures I ought to keep with her family, and the little inclination I had to make a noise, oblig'd me to dissemble. I only observ'd her as much as I could, and to prevent my entire ruin, I allotted her a sum for her particular expences, and took on my self the charge of the whole family. She requir'd no more of me than I engag'd to give her: this made me easy on the account of interest, but not so on the score of jealousy and niceness; for I perceiv'd plainly it must be, since she was sparing of my money, that she was free in her behaviour, and that others supply'd her with what she was so discreet as not to ask of me. I durst not dive into these mysteries; but to be sure no husband, whose wife games so excessively, and so continually, can be easy on this account: he must be afraid, or for his honour, or for his purse; often doth he fear both for the one and the other. And if a woman who plays after this manner, is perswaded that her husband is contented with her, she must either be blind and insensible her self, or must think her husband so.

I was no more troubled with visions than another man ; yet as much as I resolv'd to be a good husband, and to think well of my wife, I could not forbear being convinc'd of some things that would allarm the most incredulous husband in the world. All that I pray'd for was, that the town might not be as well satisfy'd in the matter as I was ; I did not value much what I thought of her my self, provided other people did not think so.

What a sad condition does marriage bring one into ? it is in vain to say there are some easy, contented husbands ; I am very well assured, the most easy of them all are heartily vex'd ; and that there are none so blind as they would have us think they are. No one is so easy an husband, but that he fears being something worse.

No body will think it strange, that considering what terms my wife and I were upon, I should give way to my passion for the young woman I brought out of *England* : I saw her with the greater pleasure, because I suppos'd no body would observe my steps, and cross my love. She press'd me often to speak to the queen about her, or to let her go into *Holland* ; but I lov'd her too well to separate her from me. I resolv'd to keep her where she was, no person being so likely as she to comfort me amidst my domestick disquiets. And to make her love *Paris* I put her into finer lodgings, and gave her a noble equipage : I took a house ready-furnish'd, and enabled her to make a figure answerable to the quality she assum'd. She called her self the countess of *Suffex*, and gave out that she came to town the day before she appear'd in publick.

Those that believe marriage is the way to reclaim a man that loves women, may be undeceiv'd by the follies I was now guilty of. As irregular as I had been before my marriage, one may see that I had never been thus foolish to undertake things beyond my fortune. Except my adventure at *Venice*, where I was trick'd like a young man and a fool, I had been but at little expence on the sex, always despis'd those that were, and could not suppose that it was possible for me to have an intrigue which I must pay for.

Matrimony made me overcome this nicety ; I was convinc'd I could not live without loving. I could not love my wife ;

wife ; and the torments she gave me encreas'd my desire of seeking in some other woman the pleasure and quiet I could not find in her. I durst not appear open in addresses to any lady at court, for fear my wife should cry out against me, and traverse my love : this oblig'd me to love secretly, and to purchase with my money the conveniency of a secret amour. The *English* woman seem'd for my purpose ; I lov'd her too well to deny her any thing ; and I fancy'd I should hide my love better in taking a house for her, than if I had kept her still in lodgings.

It was engaging my self in an expence enough to ruin me ; and if I was so simple as to undertake it, the ill example of my wife was the sole cause. I thought I ought to spare nothing for my ease, since she spar'd nothing for her pleasure. I confess it was reasoning ill ; but a man does not trouble himself much with reason, when he seeks at any price to soften domestick cares, which of all others are most likely to turn his brain.

Thus all the fruit of this fine match which was to settle me in the world, and cure me of my follies, produc'd nothing better than to make me more foolish and more extravagant. After this, will any one continue to say that persons should marry to forsake an irregular life ? marriage is only a remedy for those who are inclin'd to change their heart, who repent of their disorderly courses, and who chuse wives whose examples and cares may teach them to be wise ; and who, besides all this, are resolv'd to place their sole comfort and consolation in the principles of their religion, and the testimonies of a good conscience, when ever they meet with troubles and disquiets, the inseperable companions of marriage, even the most equal, the most chaste.

I was in hopes to enjoy, without any disturbance, the quiet I propos'd to my self in the company of my *English* mistress. I made no shew as if I knew any thing of her, and visited only on evenings, which I used to pass at her lodgings without taking any body with me. However, it was not long before I had new grounds of discontent : this young woman found herself able to see company by the condition I had plac'd her in, and to see
them

them without fearing my jealousy by the care I took to avoid being seen, and coming to her only in the evening.

She had her lovers and her intrigues : I took notice of it, and became sensible, that a man must not expect more ease or tranquility in such sort of engagements than in matrimony. This should for ever have set me against women ; but as to remedy the troubles a mistress gives, I did not find the same obstacles which hinder our defending our selves from those we receive from a wife, I thought only of getting quit of this last intrigue, without carrying my reflections any farther. I declar'd to the *English* woman that I did not like her carriage towards me ; and was resolv'd to withdraw my protection, and the allowance I had made her. She wept plentifully, and I believe I had been fool enough to have lov'd her still, if stronger reasons had not prevail'd upon me to part with her.

The cardinal, at my return from *England*, receiv'd me very well. He order'd a commission of marshal de camp for me ; and my fortune was on a way of mending daily. These views contributed to my expences on the *English* girl : I thought my treasure would never be exhausted, which is the fault of most courtiers ; they spend upon the prospect of advancement, and are ruin'd by their hopes : they anticipate favour, and if we may so say, eat the fruits of it before they are gather'd.

While I was reckoning on the hopes which I had from the court, complaints came from *Cromwel* against me, that I had conceal'd mistress *Darcel*, and carried her out of *England*, tho' she was one of the conspirators against the protector : these complaints occasion'd the remembrance of the report, which was current upon my return, that I had brought a mistress with me from *London* ; and and every one believ'd it was the same now spoke of by *Cromwel*.

My brother inform'd me of it at first : I told him, that indeed an *English* youth had begg'd me to let him pass over to *Calais* with me, I left him there, and suppose he went thence to *Holland* ; that I mistrusted, as well as my servants, the pretended youth was a woman, but was not sure of it till we came to *Calais*, where I dismiss her, and had never heard of her since. My brother bad
me

me wait upon the queen and cardinal without delay ; I promis'd to do it : but as soon as he was gone I ran to the mock countess of *Suffex*, and told her she must immediately leave *Paris* ; that it was known at court how I brought her out of *England* ; that *Cromwel* demanded to have her deliver'd up, which I doubted not they would do, or confine her. She was frighted with these threats, and prayed me to furnish her with the means to make her escape to *Holland*.

As much as I was displeas'd with her, I was a man of too much honour to deny her request : I took her presently into the house where she lodg'd, and presented her with two hundred pistoles ; I provided a man to conduct her to *Brussels*, where she safely arriv'd, departing from *Paris* the very day I heard from my brother what they said at court of her and me. When we were going to part, she assur'd me that she had not stay'd at *Paris* had it not been on my account ; that she had always desir'd to present her self to the king of *England*. She said she hop'd I would continue to be her friend, and she would be sure to let me hear from her in what part soever of the world it would be her lot to settle. With pain did I see her depart. It was happy for me that I had cause to suspect her conduct ; for otherwise I believe I should never have consented to separate.

As soon as she was gone I went to court, and related to the queen, without the least disguise, the manner how I had brought her of, without knowing her sex. I fail'd not mentioning every thing which had mov'd me with compassion in her recital. The queen was affected with it ; telling me, she should have been very glad to have seen her. I answer'd, I knew not who she was till she came to *Calais* ; and from thence suppose she went to *Flanders* or *Holland*. The queen order'd me to visit the cardinal : I waited upon him, and he presently told me I had involv'd him in a terrible affair. I made him the same relation as I had made to the queen ; but that did not appease him ; and I stood in need of the abbot *Fouquet's* credit to recover his good opinion.

P A R T VIII.

WHEN once a man has offended the great, the misfortune is irreparable ; and as soon as a minister of state is pleas'd to take a disliking to any person, tho' it be for a trifle, it is a wound which can never be heal'd. 'This rock is very much to be fear'd, and renders the condition of a courtier very unhappy. Who can be sure of never displeasing at court, or hope to succeed again when once he has displeased ?

I found to my cost afterwards, that the complaints the cardinal receiv'd out of *England* against me always stuck in his stomach : he never shew'd me his favour in any of the occasions I had for his protection ; and when he undertook to ruin those that supported my interest with him, I was more sensible than any one of their disgrace and declension.

However, I did not then foresee the consequence of the fault which was laid to my charge. On the contrary, I thought the disgust which was taken against me would wear off, the cause of it being of so little importance ; and the temptation I had to it being out of pity to an unfortunate woman. I could not imagine it would be reckon'd a crime in me ; and as soon as the talk of it was over, I thought it was forgotten.

I suppos'd I should now have no other causes of disquiet than those my wife gave me. The report of my intrigue with my *English* mistress render'd her more proud and more insupportable : but as it was by my marriage with her that I obtain'd all my patrons, I had no course to take but to dissemble. I left her intirely at her liberty to govern her self according to her own fancy ; and she abus'd that liberty so much, that I was of all men the person for whom she had the least kindness or respect. I doubted not this weakness made me the jest of the town ; yet having no other remedy, I thought to lessen the shame by being insensible of it. No body discover'd the vexation I suffer'd from her ; and the more my heart

was

was full of it, the more contented I appear'd to the world. I confess I had not strength enough to resist the temptation of softning my cares by some pleasant amusements; and when I had lost my *English* girl, I endeavour'd to find out some other mistress who might make me forget my concern.

It was no longer the heart which determin'd my affections. I had lost that delicacy, to which I formerly so much pretended, and had no other regard for love than on account of the pleasures it brought. I lik'd my conversation with my *English* mistress; and was not much troubled at her inconstancy, because I did not much value my self on that conquest: I was only sorry for the expence she put me to, and I did not question I should be satisfy'd with a mistress of the same character if she was less chargeable. My liberality to her was so well known, that when it was understood that I wanted a new mistress, I had the offer of several on the same conditions; and I must say this to the shame of the sex, some of them were of very good quality, who had been beggar'd by debauchery or ill fortune, and had nothing to subsist on but the money and presents they receiv'd from their gallants.

Among the rest, one was nam'd to me whom I knew, and had been in love with two years before, if her husband had not been my intimate friend. A handsomer woman was not to be met with; my friendship for her husband made me resist my inclination for her; and besides, she being of a very whimsical humour, my respect for my friend had sufficient power over me, to stifle the sentiments which her beauty inspir'd: from that time I seldom saw her. Her husband's circumstances growing low, she left him without quarreling, and liv'd with a relation of hers, while her husband made several journeys into the country where his estate lay, to bring his affairs into a better posture.

I was troubled when I heard that this woman wanted a gallant, who would give her liberally; and believing her necessities only had reduc'd her to make such a scandalous offer, I resolv'd to assist her without requiring any thing of her for it: it seem'd to me to be base to abuse her necessity. Thus I had no other motive in endeavouring

vouring to see her than pure generosity. I did not fail in the midst of these fine sentiments, foreseeing that possibly I might not be insensible; but I found my self so resolv'd not to have any more intrigues which should be purchas'd, that I hop'd to see this woman without any other design than that of serving her.

I sought then for an opportunity of speaking to her. She came to the place where I was told she would be met. I reproach'd her for the confidence she had plac'd in the persons who had been for engaging me with her, and I told her that without coming to such an extremity, she might have found friends who would have assisted her, and that I desir'd her to accept of an hundred and fifty pistoles, which I had brought with me for her: I added, I knew she was streightned, and gave them to her freely, not pretending to put a force on her inclinations by it; and in short, pray'd her, when she wanted money, to address her self only to me.

She seem'd surpriz'd at this discourse, and disown'd that she had given order to the persons that had spoke to me, to make any such proposals on her behalf; that it was true, she wanted money, and had endeavour'd to borrow it; and that she would not accept of my offer, but on condition I took her note to repay it. She press'd me to take it, and to please her, I did so.

I left her after this conversation, in which I had not let fall one word which should induce her to believe I was in love with her. But then I was too much delighted with the fine action I thought I had done to think of any thing else. I slighted every other thought as a temptation enough to spoil the beauty and merit of my generosity.

But scarcely had I left her when it repented me that I had been so generous. I perceiv'd I was neither so nice, nor so disinterested; and that in the main, I did not much stand upon the shame of abusing the necessities of so amiable a person. I became passionately in love with her, and resolv'd, if possible, to be belov'd by her.

I did not think that the generosity with which I had given my money, ought to oppose the hopes with which I flatter'd my passion. I rather argued with my self, that so honourable a proceeding ought to give her a better opinion,

opinion, and a greater inclination for me : but it seems I did not know my woman.

She was really angry that I reproach'd her for making use of those means to get money ; and far from thinking me generous, she look'd upon me as a stupid coxcomb, or one that had not done her beauty justice. Here I cannot forbear observing, that when a woman once forgets the laws of duty and honour, she cannot be pleas'd with what puts her in mind of them ; and through whatever motive women make advances to men we cannot please them but with answering their expectations.

Having no suspicion that my generosity would have such an effect, and fancying, on the contrary, that the lady would be charm'd with it, I did not doubt of her giving me a favourable hearing : I could think of no way so short as to declare my self by writing ; so two or three days after I sent her the following letter.

I Find my self, Madam, very much embarrass'd : I love you, and cannot live without being belov'd by you ; I dare not tell you to what excess my passion is grown, nor pray you to have pity on me, for fear you should accuse me, that I presume too much upon the goodness you had to accept of my service in your distress. This, madam, is what puts me into confusion. It is not in my power to cease serving you, or to require any thing as a reward of my services. But in the mean time, I die. Tell me, madam, what I shall do ? and if it is not permitted me to love you, to hope, and to seek out, always for occasions to be serviceable to you.

She answered me thus :

I Remember your instructions too well, sir, and they have made too great impression upon me, for to be so soon led astray from the path in which you would have me walk. I receiv'd your money as a token of your generosity ; and would never have receiv'd it, if you had offer'd it to me out of any other motive. But I see I am deceiv'd ; and all that you said to me against t^e persons that told you my necessities, was an artifice to delude me. No, sir, I am not such an one, as you said these persons represented me,
and

and I perceive you thought I was ; if you persist in making me such proposals as you did in your letter, I will return you your money, and renounce being ever oblig'd to you.

It is easy to imagine how this answer surprized me ; yet I cannot tell whether any one will find out all the reasons that I had to resent it. I knew the lady was as handsome as those that propos'd her to me said she was ; and was satisfy'd that at our first meeting I might have had what I desir'd. I did not doubt therefore but that this letter was either a mark of her contempt, or a trick to encrease my passion, and bring me to her lure. Either of these opinions equally shock'd me ; and I resolv'd, cost what it would, to put her upon the foot on which she was propos'd to me. I had better have despis'd her ; but I lov'd her, and would be belov'd. I knew well if I continu'd to discover a nice and tender passion, she would continue to abuse it ; yet I durst not do otherwise, fearing she would answer me as she had hitherto done, if I should alter the stile.

I spent above a week in this uncertainty, and did not let her hear from me all that while ; I thought it my wisest way to be silent. She was dissatisfy'd in her turn ; and not knowing to what to attribute it, she sent to enquire how I did, and why she had not heard from me. I imagin'd by this message, that she was not willing to lose me, and thinking my self sure of her, resolv'd to make use of the advantage she had given me by this step, to come to the point with her, and know what I was to depend on. I sent her word that I wanted the money I had lent her, and that she would do me a kindness to repay it.

It was about three weeks before I receiv'd any answer ; I was sorry during that time, that I had demanded my money back ; I was going twenty times to her house, to ask her pardon for such proceeding, yet I had the courage to refrain ; and as I did not doubt her being so long silent was to try me farther, or to avoid returning me my money, I thought the love I had for her was on the decline, and was sensible I could not continue to love, or even visit her, without injuring my honour.

It was only the ill opinion I had of this woman's virtue that kept me in this disposition. And I found by experience, that a man cannot carry himself delicately and honourably towards persons whom he thinks do not deserve it.

At three weeks end, she sent me the money I lent her, excusing her self for not having done it sooner. I was so surpriz'd at it, that I began to imagine, I had wrong'd her, and to think that she had behav'd her self in the whole affair, like a woman of honour, and I had behav'd with a great deal of indecency

Who can tell the hidden springs that move the heart, and how blind a man's inclination sometimes is? my passion reviv'd with so much the more violence, as I conceiv'd of this woman, a quite different idea, from what I had hitherto entertain'd. I was almost mad to have us'd her as I had done. I could not forgive my self for appearing at first so generous, and so self interested afterwards; and I perceiv'd plainly that there is no other part to be taken with women, than to maintain constantly the character under which we present our selves first to them.

I had more reasons than one to wonder at her returning my money. I knew she had none. It was no question with me, but that she had been oblig'd to borrow it of others to repay me. This confirm'd me in the opinion that I ought to send it her back again. It was the first step by which I hop'd to regain her, but it was too late, the lady had already met with a gallant, who knew better than I how to improve her necessities to the advantage of his love. He lent her the money to pay me, and they liv'd so well together, that she was not very sorry for losing me. I was inform'd of their intrigue, and what ought to have cur'd me increas'd my passion. I could not bear that another man should be more happy than my self; and tho' I knew his happiness was owing only to his not having so ill-tim'd a generosity as mine, yet I could not help envying him, and all the contempt which this woman's carriage ought to have rais'd in me, was not powerful enough to overcome my desire of being belov'd by her.

It was at this time I learn'd, that it is not always the esteem we have for a mistress, which occasions the violence of the passion we conceive for her, but that in some circumstances we do that for the most coquettish women, which we think ought to be done only for ladies of the utmost modesty. All lovers are vex'd to be supplanted, without examining whether the conquest deserves it. I had never a greater desire of being belov'd of my mistress, and reveng'd of my rival.

I sought an opportunity to see this woman, and to enter into discourse with her without knowing what I should say. I met with as fair an occasion as I could wish for.

Her gallant was gone into the country, and I went to her lodging at a time when she receiv'd no visits: as soon as she saw me, she cry'd out, what would you have me do, sir, with the money you sent me back? there it is, I pray you to take it; for it seems you want it, or you would not have demanded it so hastily. In answer, I pulled out the letter she sent me, and ask'd her what else I could have done after the receipt of such a letter. What did you find in it, that was extraordinary, sir? she reply'd, could I have sent any other answer, seeing you believ'd I would purchase your bounty at the price of my honour and my duty? what did I ask of you, reply'd I, that you have not granted to others, who had been no more happy than I, had they not been less generous? what is it that you reproach me with, madam, unless it is my having been unwilling to take advantage of the condition in which I found you, and the seeking to have been indebted only to your heart for the favours others owe only to the ill state of your affairs? how, said she, do you come here to insult me? never any man has presum'd more than you on the streights to which I am reduced. You must think me wretched, indeed, she added, weeping, to pretend that I should endure all this from you. I reply'd, I don't design, madam, to be troublesome to you. You may remember, when I saw you first, how sensible I was of your glory. I am still the same, and you had not seen me now, if I had lov'd you little enough, to have suffer'd what is said of your commerce with some persons; which without doubt,

doubt, you would not suffer your self, had you not been unwilling to be oblig'd to my innocent love, for what you receive from the brutality of another's passion. It is yet time, madam, to recover your self. I have money at your service, if you will never more see the man whose love dishonours you; you shall have the same help from me without hazarding your reputation; for I shall consent, if you will have it so, not to see you till you have no farther occasion for me. I pronounc'd those words in such a manner as seem'd to make an impression upon her; and, after keeping silence for some time, she spoke thus: I am oblig'd to you, sir, for so generous a proceeding; but if you are willing that I should have an entire obligation to you, be so just to me, as to believe, that every word you have heard of my conversing with any other man, is groundless: I never did see the person you talk of, but in promiscuous company; it is true, I borrow'd the money of him, which I return'd you at your demand. He generously lent it me; and if I determine to keep yours, it is only that I may no longer be oblig'd to him. I shall be glad to owe nothing to any one but you; and it does not lie at my door, that I do not shew you, that of all men you are he I most value: yet I beg you, sir, never talk to me of love. Stay till my inclination and my fortune put me in a condition to hear you.

These words made me to forget the character of the person that spoke to me. I from that minute believ'd that all I had heard of her was a mere illusion. I begged her not to see any more the man I suspected. She promis'd me she would not; and I on my side promis'd her to declare my love only by my cares and my services.

I parted from very well pleas'd with my self and her; but as soon as I reflected on the promises I made her, I saw I had engag'd my self to be as much a cully as she would have me. What I knew of her and her intrigue came fresh into my memory, and I did not doubt, but every word she had said to me, was only an artifice to see how far my love of her might carry me.

Her gallant came out of the country. I understood she no longer saw him; but I also understood the reason of it. The man, either out of inconstancy, or that he was weary of a mistress to whom he must never have
done

done paying, addresses himself to another woman. She knew he had left her when she promis'd me to see him no more; and she had not much to do to keep her promise.

She sent to me the next day, and did the same every day for a good while; but when I understood the cause that her gallant had to leave her, I did not value her breaking with him: and I own, as soon as I had no rival, I began to have no love. I hearken'd to the suggestions of my reason, that she appear'd so discreet in her carriage towards me only to bind me the faster; and I could think of no way of avoiding to be her cully, but to make as if I could no longer continue to love her, without receiving some tokens of her love.

I arm'd my self with resolution, and plainly told her what I thought; but whether or no she fear'd that it might happen to me as it did to the lover that had forsaken her, and that when my passion was satisfy'd I should grow weary of paying; or whether having made my first application to her on a different foot, she was unwilling to falsify the idea she imagin'd her self to have given me of her virtue; or whether she had little inclination for me, she constantly persisted in refusing me, and since then I have known her concerned in ten intrigues with persons of much inferior condition: yet she still gave out that I broke with her, because she would not comply with my dishonourable desires.

I have since reflected on the proceeding of this woman towards me, but have not been able to find out any better grounds for it than the manner of my beginning with her; and I have ever since believ'd, that women who love money look upon those men that are silly enough to love them with any delicacy, as a surer card than those that will not give them a penny without receiving present returns for it.

Be it as it will, I broke off my acquaintance with her, after having continued it for some time longer; and I must own freely, I was in the wrong to quarrel with her; for ever after I promis'd to love her. I could observe nothing in her carriage which I had reason to complain of: but what I had learn'd before, had its operation when I least thought of it; and in the main, it is impossible to be
fond

fond of a woman any considerable time, let her behaviour be never so good, when it is known that she has formerly behav'd her self ill. Sooner or later a man will be asham'd of loving a person that is not worthy of his esteem.

This truth will be farther evinc'd by an adventure that happen'd to me soon after, with a woman, who besides that she resembled my last mistress in her want of conduct, had a worse character as to the manner in which she would be belov'd.

People being still perswaded that I would pay my mistresses, I had every day persons who came to propose some to me; and we must acknowledge, that interest is the most powerful motive to engage the sex to be kind.

I always admir'd at the vast number that I had the choice of. There were ladies of all ranks, ages and conditions; yet I was averse to all such treaties of commerce, either out of good husbandry, or out of abhorrence of any engagements where the heart was not concern'd. I hearken'd very little to the proposals that that were made me, and waited till chance presented some more agreeable amour. It was not long before I had what I desir'd: there was a lady in *Paris*, a widow, that had been publickly kept by a Prince, who had loaded her with riches; she had above fifty thousand livres a year, and no body of her quality liv'd more magnificently than she did.

The prince had been dead a year or two; however her intrigue with him had made so much noise, that no modest woman would keep her company. She was always in the walks, or the play-houses. Almost all the young persons of the court address'd themselves to her; but she hearken'd to none of them, and she was not charg'd with any gallant at the time that I knew her first: tho' she was above thirty, yet she was very beautiful, and I had several times a design to address her, but I was restrain'd by the natural aversion I had for women without reputation or conduct. Besides, the example of so many younger men whom she had deny'd, made me fear she would not accept of me. I met her one day at the play, and sat in the same box with her; I chatted with her an hour or better, and she was so free

as to tell me, that she had a long time wish'd to be acquainted with me. I promis'd to visit her, and left her in an uncertainty whether I should be as good as my word.

It was my misfortune when I return'd home pretty early that night to find my wife in such an ill humour, that I was not so complaisant as to sup with her. I resolv'd therefore to get rid of the vexation she gave me, and to go and spend the evening at the lady's whom I saw at the play. I sent to tell her I would sup with her; she answer'd, she would expect me, and that I could not oblige her more. I went thither soon after, and was so kindly receiv'd, that it determin'd me to love her.

I compar'd the reception this lady gave me with what I met with at home, and had great reason to respect her; I believe what was my case at that time, is daily the case of a thousand husbands; that the little complaisance and good-nature of their wives obliges them to seek abroad for company where they may be free from strife and variance.

From that day, the lady and I were intimate. I had at her house always a pleasant reception, when my wife's ill humour drove me out of my own; and besides I was at no expence, which indeed at that time my circumstances would not suffer me to be, having been so lavish in my late amours.

However, this intrigue did not last long, and I could not be satisfy'd with this woman's temper. I had never till then met with one whose greatest care was not to hide her intrigues; on the contrary my new mistress affected to let all the world know that we lov'd one another. She follow'd me every where to shews and assemblies. I every day receiv'd billets from her; and I could not step abroad but I met her for a man with some message or other. Wherever she saw me she came up to me; in short, she would have no body ignorant of our intimacy; I could not endure this noisy intrigue, nor was willing to be thought to have any thing to say to a woman that had been talk'd of several years for such sort of commerces. I endeavour'd by perswasions to get her to be more discreet, but my shame and my discretion seem'd to her a sign that I did not much esteem her.

It

It was her first principle in love, that true lovers will always publish their amours; and that there was a delicacy in blushing at nothing. I did not like her maxims, nor did I love her enough to value my self on her favours; the more she affected to talk of me in publick, the more did I endeavour to avoid her. She, by this means, drove me from all publick places when there was any likelihood of my meeting her; and at last I left her house, and came off in this intrigue with as little honour as in the former. I was blam'd for not improving the advantages I had over her; but I confess I never once thought it an advantage to be belov'd by a woman one cannot esteem.

I was then no happier in addressing to women of honour, than I formerly had been in engaging with others; I was even more grossly deceiv'd by them, than I had been in any other adventure in my life.

While I had mistresses every day propos'd to me, and began to be weary, finding none to my mind; I was seiz'd with an inclination and esteem for an illustrious lady, whose wisdom and virtue made her look'd upon as a perfect pattern all the time she liv'd at court. I never told any body that I liked this gentlewoman, and she liv'd so regularly, and irreproachably, that I look'd upon my inclination for her as a piece of folly which I ought to stifle: but one of the persons who undertook to provide me a mistress, told me one day that she knew I was in love, and nam'd this lady.

Having never open'd my mouth about it to any one whatsoever, I believ'd she commerc'd with some demon, or she could never have guess'd so rightly. I ask'd her how she came to know what she had told me. She answer'd, the lady her self, perceiv'd that I lov'd her, and had as much inclination for me, as I had for her; and if I was a person that would be at a little expence, and not regard what it should cost me, she would bring about a meeting.

The reader has not forgot, that I have said, I did not care to be at any expence on my mistresses; but it was not avarice that withheld me; it was the fear of being bubbled, as I thought all those were who paid so dear for a commodity that was worth so little. However, I

N

manag'd

manag'd my self so only towards women of an ill reputation, and imagin'd, that a woman of honour could never be too well paid. There was a sort of a contradiction in this opinion, it was an error in principle to think a woman of honour was to be purchas'd ; but this was not the only error I was guilty of, and I do not pretend to pass for a very wise person. My whole life, as has been seen, was a series of infatuations and contradictions ; and every man that has not more virtue and wisdom than I had then, will be expos'd to the same follies.

I fancy'd that what this woman propos'd to me was the most glorious thing for me, and the most agreeable in the world. I promis'd her as much money as she would have, if she brought to pass what she gave me hopes of : but she was a cheat, who guessing that I lov'd the lady I mention'd, by perceiving me one day look amorously on her, was resolv'd to empty my pockets by promising me a sight of her. She never had spoke to her in her life ; yet for six weeks I was such a coxcomb as to flatter my self with the thoughts of her doing as she promis'd. Every day she came to see for me, as if she had been sent by the lady : every day she propos'd a place of meeting, which she countermanded two hours after. Nevertheless, for every assignation she expected a fee, sometimes to hire a coach, sometimes to provide a convenient lodging. In a word, it cost me above a hundred pistoles after this manner ; and I did not mistrust that I was cheated, till the woman that made the proposal to me on a sudden disappear'd. I never heard what became of her, nor how she was so well inform'd of the lady's affairs ; for I had not given credit to her, had she not told me a hundred particularities of her that were really true.

I will not trouble the reader to relate what other snares were laid for me, while I was thought to be a man that had money for a mistress : I have said enough to shew how one is expos'd, when debauchery and extravagance put one upon dealing with those infamous creatures that trade in love, crowds of which are to be met with in *Paris*, and sometimes in places where no body would have expected to have found them. How many men, and how many women, enjoy a good reputation

tation, who have no friends, credit, or estate, but what they have obtain'd by this scandalous profession ?

I spent all the winter in these amusements, and found my self free from any intrigue, at the opening the campaign : I confess, whatever trouble it might be to me to pass my time without some such engagement, I thought my self happy in having none, when the time came to return to the army. I then went with another sort of application to my duty, and another kind of ardour for the war, when I had no inclination to stay in *Paris*. It is in vain to say love inspir'd the greatest men with courage : I am very well satisfy'd that passion has destroy'd more heroes than ever it made ; and without bringing any other proofs than my own experience, it is certain, that when I had a mistress, I was mad when the time came that I must leave her ; I rejoyc'd when the business of the field was over, or I could obtain leave to return to my fair one. I doubt not what happen'd to me in this respect, happens to every man in love ; and I believe, let a man be as great as he will, when once love gets into his head, he will be expos'd to commit abundance of faults in his profession as a soldier. How many great men have left their conquests imperfect to return to their mistress, and neglected their glory to satisfy the impatience of an amorous passion ? but to speak only of my self, I am convinc'd that had it not been for this passion, I had done something considerable in the world long before this time ; I wanted not courage nor conduct to carry me through my business : love always has oppos'd me, intricated my affairs, and if I may so say, render'd my merit useless.

I must be forgiven, if I often make these reflections, for whenever I think of the manner in which I have liv'd, I cannot help deploring my ill conduct ; I wish all men of honour who are capable of serving the state, may be convinc'd as well as I, that it is their interest to avoid those rocks on which my reputation and my fortune have split : it is the misfortune of most men that they make these reflections too late, and do not find out their faults, till they are irreparable.

My brother, who was made lieutenant general the year before, was sent to command the army in *Catalonia*, till the arrival of the duke de *Mercœur*. I was design'd to serve in *Flanders*, in the army, commanded by monsieur de *Turenne*, which, as it was stipulated with *Cromwel*, was to besiege *Dunkirk*.

Having no amour in my head, and being glad of an opportunity to be absent from my wife, I sought only for occasions to distinguish my self in this campaign: it was the first time that ever I desir'd a long campaign. When I was in love, I thought of nothing at my departing from *Paris*, but how to contrive to get thither as soon as I could: and I never minded the business of the war so much as to inform my self of the particulars, even of those actions in which I had my share; for it must be own'd, that a man may be in an army, may fight, and distinguish himself, without being able to give a good account in what manner affairs pass'd there. No body sees any thing but what is near him; and we must love the trade, and have it in our mind to know, and describe well such kind of events. As I have said, I was now in this disposition, resolving when I left *Paris*, to take particular notice of all things that happen'd in the army this year: I kept little journals, which I sent to my brother, as I had occasion to write to him; and I believe the reader will be glad to see some of them.

Amiens, May the 15th, 1658.

WE break up to morrow, and are to rendezvous at *Merville*. Monsieur the marshal tells me, he is sorry you are not in *Flanders*, and believes you will have little to do in *Catalonia*. I am the only man who maintains that we are marching to *Dunkirk*; every body thinks me fanciful for it, and it is generally said we are going to *Hesdin*: as for my self, who am satisfy'd since the treaty with *Cromwel*, that we must have *Dunkirk*, I stand in need of a great deal of faith, not to charge my opinion; for although it be argued, how can we attack *Dunkirk*, while none of the neighbouring places are in our hands. *Bergues* and *Newport* are possess'd by the enemy, and no body talks of attacking

‘ attacking them. If it is possible to take *Dunkirk* without having first taken those places, I shall believe that to be the design of *monieur de Turenne*; but that will be a terrible enterprize. Besides, on the sea-coasts we shall want forage, and the enemies are masters of all the posts by which we could have any communication with *Mardike*: time will let us see further into this matter. Adieu.

‘ On coming away, I sent the bill of exchange —

Bethune, May the 19th, 1658.

‘ **T**HERE is no more talk of *Hesdin*, yet no body guesses better than before, what *monieur de Turenne* designs; it is said, he will attack *Furnes*, and at the same time *Castlenaut*, and the count *de Soissons* will besiege *Bergues* and *Newport*; this indeed is the way to fall upon *Dunkirk*; but then it will give the enemy notice, that we have an eye upon the place. I cannot tell what to think, *monieur de Turenne* is the only man that knows the secret. He is very gay, and whenever he sees me, he enquires if you are not weary of *Catalonia*. I was commanded, with a part of the garrison of *Bethune*, to discover the enemy on the other side the *Lys*; I found a body of their troops at *Mount-Cassel*, and on the report I made to the marshal, he order’d me, with the *marquiss de Crequi*, to drive them thence. They say, *monieur de Turenne* will follow us. Adieu.

Cassel, May the 21st, 1658.

‘ **M**ONSIEUR *de Turenne* is arriv’d, the army is to follow; he has sent his baggage to *Montreuil*. The troops we found here made no resistance, almost all surrendred themselves prisoners. *Monieur de Turenne* very much commended the *marquess de Crequi*; and gave me to understand, he was very well satisfy’d with me. It has rain’d incessantly for the space of two days, so that the ways are very bad. I believe the marshal will stay here till the artillery comes up, which arrives but slowly, by reason of the

badness of the ways. The three sieges, I before mention'd, are still expected.

We have been already here one day ; the baggage is arriv'd. We are in sight of *Bergues*, and all the country about *Dunkirk* is under water. Monsieur de *Turenne* is continually merry. He ask'd me if I could swim, I told him no ; but I would learn, if that only was wanting to take *Dunkirk* : he has already caus'd a redoubt on the hill to be taken. I still am of opinion, that he will leave *Furnes*, *Bergues*, and *Newport*, and will invest *Dunkirk*. I forgot to tell you, we have found out a way for our communication with *Mardike* ; yet we are never a whit the better for it, the ways being so bad, we can make no use of them.

On the Downs by *Newport*, *June* the 5th, 1658.

YOU will be surpriz'd, when I tell you *Dunkirk* is besieg'd, and that this night the trenches were opened. We must own monsieur de *Turenne* knew more than we did. The way to *Mardike*, by means of fascines is made useful ; and we are also masters of a fort which covers us as well as if we had taken *Bergues*. The *English* barques bring all sorts of provisions from *Calais* to the camp. In a word, nothing but the courage of the prince can retard the taking of *Dunkirk*. The *Spaniards* give out the prince will force our lines ; but we are prepar'd to receive him. Adieu.

I must leave you in order to mount the trenches : the besieged have not yet made any sally. I see no likelihood that they will surrender so soon as some imagine : don *John* of *Austria*'s army is but two days march off of us.

From the Camp before *Dunkirk*, *June* the 8th, 1658.

OUR works are very much advanc'd, notwithstanding the vigorous resistance of the besieged. They made a sally yesterday, with fifteen hundred foot, and six hundred horse, from the side of *Newport*, and were repuls'd with the loss of above six hundred men. The count de *Soissons* was commanded to receive them,

' them, together with the marqués *de Crequi*, and the
 ' count *de Guiche*: the latter is wounded. I lost twenty
 ' five soldiers out of my regiment; St. *Alard* is kill'd:
 ' we have stood out against the greatest fire that ever
 ' was made. I have been slightly wounded in my left
 ' arm. Every thing is quiet to day. It is said the mar-
 ' shal *de Hoquincourt* is commanded to view our lines, to
 ' see if the *Spaniards* are able to force them. I pity the
 ' marshal. I saw a letter, in which he curses the mis-
 ' understanding between the prince and *don John*. He
 ' should not content himself with repenting of what he
 ' has done: if he were well advis'd, he would bring
 ' over the body of troops he commands to us, instead of
 ' serving with them against us: we should receive him
 ' with joy; for as bold as our troops are, the neighbour-
 ' hood of the enemy is very troublesome to them. We do
 ' not doubt if they advance, we shall meet them, and
 ' and there will be a battle in form; we should like it
 ' better than to languish before a town. In the mean
 ' while we live jollily: the *Eng'ish* do wonders; and
 ' my lord *Lockhart* is always making one present or ano-
 ' ther to *monieur de Turenne*. This general is no more
 ' concern'd about the taking of *Dunkirk*, than if he had
 ' read it in the stars, that it should be so. They game
 ' incessantly at my lord *Lockhart's*: the marqués *de Bel-*
 ' *lesfons* lost there yesterday four thousand pistoles: there
 ' has been a little difference between the marqués and
 ' *Buffy*; the latter was reveng'd on him by a couplet or
 ' two in a sonnet. Adieu.

From our former camp, *June* the 13th, 1658.

' THE poor marshal *de Hoquincourt* is kill'd; his
 ' last words, lamentations, and farewell to the
 ' world are cry'd about our camp. We have abundance
 ' of the *Pontneuf* ballad-fingers here; yet as merry as
 ' we are, no body questions but there will be a battle.
 ' It was the *Swissers* who kill'd the marshal *de Hoquin-*
 ' *court*, when he advanc'd to view our lines. *Humieres*
 ' was order'd to drive them back, and had like to have
 ' been taken; but *Mollondin's Swissers*, who were be-
 ' hind a hill which flank'd the way by which the mar-

shall advanc'd, came out just as he retir'd, and fir'd on him: he was wounded with a musket shot in his belly, and dy'd two hours after. Yesterday night monsieur de *Turenne* made himself master of two hills near the king's quarters, from whence the enemy annoy'd us. Every thing is in a good disposition. Don *John* is but a league off. Our troops are eager for a combat; but it is said the cardinal has written to monsieur de *Turenne* to storm the town, and not hazard a battel. This general however designs nothing less than to fight the enemy if they appear. His eminency may write what he pleases, it will make no alteration in the designs of monsieur de *Turenne*. Things are gone too far now to go back.

June the 14th, 1658.

IT is but noon, and we have already fought one of the most signal battels and obtain'd one of the most glorious victories that ever was. When I wrote to you last night I little thought we were so near action. It is now over, the victory is compleat, and the manner of it as follows.

I wrote you yesterday that the enemy was within a league of us; and before I had done writing monsieur de *Turenne* got on horse-back to observe their motions; he found they had already thrown a bridge over the canal of *Furnes*, and that nothing hinder'd their approaching to our camp. He concluded there was no time to lose, but that he must immediately give battle; and accordingly being return'd to the camp that evening, gave order for all things to be ready the next morning. *Pradel* was left to guard the trenches with fourteen companies of guards; and *Marins* to defend the camp with two regiments of foot, and two squadrons of horse. Our cavalry were drawn up in two lines, twenty six squadrons in the first, and nineteen in the second. *Crequi* and *Humieres* commanded the right wing of the first line, *Castlenaut* the left, having *Varenne* under him; *Equanccour* had the right wing of the second line, and *Schomberg* the left. Between the two wings

wings of of the first line were eleven battalions commanded by *Gadagne* ; and between the two wings of the second, seven battalions under the command of *Bellefonds*. The body of reserve consisted of fourteen squadrons commanded by *Richelieu*, supported by the *gensdarms*, where *Buffy* and *la Salle* were posted. My station was in the right wing of the first line, opposite to the enemies left wing commanded by monsieur the prince, which gave me an opportunity of seeing him often during the action ; and likewise to save *Bouteville's* life, about whom seven of our horse were disputing after they had taken him prisoner. *Castlenaut* begun the attack, and had an easy task to beat the *Spaniards*. The count *de Soissons*, at the head of his *Swissers*, cut their infantry in pieces.

What gave us so sudden an advantage on that side, was, that our left wing attack'd the rear of *Don John's*, who having no cannon, nor body of reserve, were soon routed. Their left, where the prince commanded, made more resistance, and we had been broken, had it not been for monsieur *de Turenne's* precaution ; who hid the regiment of *Bretagne* behind some hills, which flank'd the prince's army : from whence they fall'y'd, and firing on the *Spaniards* in the flank, while we did the same in front, the enemy were broken and routed. The prince had two horses kill'd under him. *Bouteville*, *Mailly*, *Torigny*, the prince *de Roubais*, *Rochefort* and *Guitault* were made prisoners. We din'd with the marshal, and I suppose after this victory I shall soon send you an account of the taking of *Dunkirk*.

I continu'd to write after this manner to my brother all the campaign ; but I have suppress'd the remainder of my letters, because they would swell these memoirs too much.

Dunkirk held out but ten days after the battle, it being surrender'd on the 25th of *June* ; *Leyde* the governour dy'd the 24th, of a wound he receiv'd during the siege. The king came to the camp as soon as the garrison beat a parley ; and when they march'd forth he took a view of them.

The taking of *Dunkirk* was follow'd by that of *Bergues*, *Dixmude*, *Graveline*, and *Oudenarde*; *Ipres* was also taken before the end of the campaign, monsieur de *Turenne* having beaten the prince de *Lignes*. We had also a design upon *Alost*: monsieur de *l'Islebonne* was commanded to form the siege, and my self to serve under him; but we were countermanded, on advice that the enemy had thrown seven regiments into the place. Thus having nothing more to do in *Flanders*, I return'd to *Paris* in *October*, and I had taken such a liking to war that I believe it would have entirely cured me of that which I had for women, if two things had not hapen'd which help'd to make me more foolish than ever with respect to gallantry and love: the one was cardinal *Mazarin's* coldness to me; and not only to me, but to my brother and all our family. He kept my brother in *Catalonia* where he knew nothing would be done; and chid him at his return for raising the siege of *Camredon*, though my brother, in retiring from before that place, had pursu'd his eminency's order. As for my self, I thought I had deserv'd something for my behaviour this last campaign, and expected to have been caress'd by the cardinal, as well as the other officers that had distinguish'd themselves; but I was almost the only person to whom he said nothing. He began at this time to be disgusted with the family to which I was become ally'd, and on whom I look'd as my protectors with him.

The second thing that finish'd my ruin was the peace, it being my misfortune to grow in love with war at the the time when it was almost over: we were scarce arriv'd at *Paris* before we understood the king's marriage with the infanta of *Spain* was negotiating, and that the marriage would produce a general peace.

To compleat my misfortune my second brother return'd to *Paris*, bringing with him a *French* woman out of *Sweden*, whom he call'd his wife. They had neither of them any money, and the first thing they did, was to commence a suit with me and my eldest brother for my mother's estate. She had been dead a year and half, having near spent all that she had. My sister had been a widow two years; she had no children, and liv'd with my

my brother or me, being sensible that what was left us by our mother, when it was divided amongst us, would not be enough to maintain her without assistance: but as soon as my brother return'd she had a hundred notions in her head, which my brother instill'd into her: they leagu'd together to call us to an account for the estate, which they pretended we had fraudulently with-held from them for our advantage. Thus I was oblig'd to go to law, and any man may judge how fit I was for such a curs'd occupation: I left all the management of it to my elder brother; and depending on his care, I thought of nothing but how to comfort my self in so many misfortunes by my usual consolations, love and gallantry.

I address'd my self to a young lady who was lately receiv'd into the queen's service, and whose beauty eclips'd the other young ladies of her majesty's train. Nor was her modesty and wisdom less conspicuous; virtues very rarely to be met with in those of her station, who generally live without conduct or reputation. I perceiv'd it would be a difficult thing to make her love me, not only because she valued her self on her virtue, but because she had a view only towards finding a settlement; and I could not think she would, having such intentions, hearken to a marry'd man; yet these difficulties did not dishearten me, and I can say they rather help'd to push me on. I wanted a delicate amusement, and after all the mischances that beset me with coquettish mistresses, I was very desirous of trying if I should not find more pleasure in possessing the heart of a virtuous person, who should know how to reconcile her passion with her duty; however, this idea was chimerical, and I did not find either so refin'd a passion in my self as to confine my self within such bounds, or so much virtue in her as to content her self with a platonick lover, could I have made such an one.

I had scarce engag'd her to give me a hearing, before I felt my self inflam'd with all the desires of a disorderly passion. Notwithstanding which, I had the resolution to hide them from her, being perswaded as soon as ever she mistrusted any such thing she would arm her self with pride, and banish me her presence. I spent a whole
month

month in this constraint, and had nothing to please my self with but the contemplation of my mistress's virtue; but it was to no purpose that I said to my self, it was much for so modest a lady to suffer me to speak to her of my passion; I continued in the opinion, that since she had gone so far she might go farther; and I waited only for an opportunity to speak my mind more plainly to her. It was hard to meet with a proper time, and even then when I began to open my lips, the idea of her virtue kept me silent and I turn'd the intended discourse to something else.

How often was I angry with my self for want of delicacy, for I thought my desires proceeded only from the grossness of my love! I did not then know what I am now very well satisfy'd is true, that those desires are born with the passion of love, and are inseparable from it; that the nicest minds cease to be so as soon as they are in love; and that the virtuous love which some men boast of is a mere illusion.

While I was thus struggling with my self, my mistress told me one day that in confidence of my friendship and good advice, she would let me know that she was belov'd by such a man, whom she named to me; the alliance between him and me, or rather his misfortune, hinders my naming him in this place. He was the most liberal to his mistress of any man at court, and his employment enabled him to be as bountiful as he would. She inform'd me, I say, that this man was in love with her, and had offer'd her a hundred thousand crowns to induce her to comply with his passion.

I was not surpriz'd to hear that the man we are speaking of should carry his liberality so far, an hundred thousand crowns were nothing with him; but I was strangely amaz'd that a lady, of whose virtue I was so much afraid, had hearken'd to these offers so far as to be in suspense what reply to make to them. I suppos'd then she was not what I had taken her for; and to satisfy my self farther I resolv'd to hide my astonishment, and with a serious air told her, faith, madam, a hundred thousand crowns are not to be despis'd; were I in your place I would make no scruple to take them. I had hardly done speaking, but she looked at me with indignation.

How,

How, said she, you say that you love me, and can you give me such advice ? I reply'd immediately, I don't give it you but that I thought it was what you would be advis'd to, for had it been otherwise, would you not have determin'd of your self, and would you not have sent this man packing with his hundred thousand crowns without talking of it to any body ? That was my intention, said the lady, and I spoke of it to you only to hear what you would say ; but I find I am deceiv'd, and that you do not love me. Take my advice, added she, do not put any force on your inclinations. I see you are not capable of a delicate passion, and that what you have hitherto said to me has been only fine discourses. Throwing my self at her feet, I assur'd her I lov'd her passionately ; that I wish'd and hop'd for all things ; and would not have advis'd her to take my rival's hundred thousand crowns, were it not that I wanted to know if any thing could shake a virtue which had made me despair. Durst I have believ'd, madam, you would sacrifice it to money ? It should have been my self who should have given you the hundred thousand crowns, for happiness cannot be too dear a purchase. You, she reply'd, and where will you have them ? She spoke these words with an air of contempt, which gave me to understand she reproached me for not being rich ; and this confirm'd me, in the judgment I made of her at the beginning of our conversation, that she was not over delicate. It is true, said I coldly, I am not so rich as he that offer'd you that sum, but I have hitherto lov'd you well enough to procure it for you, if I had thought such a bargain would agree with your virtue, or my delicacy. Do not let us go about, replied she, to attempt things beyond our strength. I know not whether you could, in case I was self-interested, give me every thing that I should desire might be given me ; and neither do I know whether I should have the power to resist the man who could be so liberal. Therefore let us stay where we are, and leave me to do as I shall be able with respect to the offers that are made me. I would have answer'd her, but we were interrupted by people's coming in ; and an hour or two after, I left her without being able to say a word more in particular to her.

As

As soon as I was got home, and had leisure to reflect on this adventure, I imagin'd the lady had come to a resolution with her self, and that the hundred thousand crowns had conquer'd her. I lov'd her, I own, and esteem'd her so much, that I thought nothing less than such a sum could have tempted her. I excus'd her, considering her circumstances, for being indifferent to an offer that might make her fortune easy. What woman, said I to my self, would not have done the very same thing; and what has my rival done which I would not do, were I as rich as he? what was it that I hop'd from the passion I had for her, if not that she would one day grant to my love alone, what she is about to sacrifice to the money of another? and is it not safer for her, if she is to behave contrary to her character, that she secure to her self a fortune thereby? I had scarce made these reflections, before I condemn'd them, and all my thoughts of her served to increase my hatred and contempt. For two or three days I was in the most miserable condition in the world. Love at last got the better; and forgetting the good resolutions I had taken to have no more inclinations for women but such who were disinterested, I resolv'd to purchase this young lady, and try whether my money would not prevail upon her as well as my rival's. What revolutions are there in love! instead of delicate and honourable sentiments, to which I had confin'd my self, I was reduc'd so low as to desire only the preference in a bargain, when he that had most was to be the chapman; and I believe I had been so foolish as to have stripp'd my self of every thing, rather than to have given way to any man; so unwilling was I to be supplanted, and so little able to do what a man of honour ought to have done on the like occasion. I should have scorn'd the woman, and I doubt not but all the world will condemn me for hesitating about it: but what will not a man do that is in love?

Being then reduc'd by the blindness of my passion, to the scandalous condition of buying this mistress, I endeavour'd to have a sight of her, that by my generous offers, I might be too hard for my rival. She only laugh'd at me, putting me in mind of my small estate, till seeing I persisted in offering to give her a hundred thousand
crowns

crowns she changed her tone, and said, all that she had done was to try me; that the other man had never offer'd her any money, and that she rejoiced to see I lov'd her so well as to ruin my self for her sake. That she would never take money of me, or any man whatsoever, all her hopes centering in an honourable settlement; and if I could love her without requiring any thing of her, she should always see me with pleasure. Saying this, she left me equally uncertain whether I ought to think as well of her as she would have me, or whether I should take her at her word: but I perceiv'd soon after she avoided me, and being come a little to my reason, I was convinc'd she was unworthy of my affection, and I resolv'd to forget her.

The sequel shewed that I was right in my resolutions, for I learn'd soon after by the disgrace of him who had offer'd her the hundred thousand crowns, that she had accepted them. She was little the better for it, for instead of giving her the money, he only paid her the interest; she lost both principal and interest when her lover fell, and all that she got by her complacency was the loss of her reputation; for the whole town knew of the intrigue: it became so publick she durst not appear abroad, which oblig'd her to pass the rest of her life in a convent.

The ill success of this amour convinc'd me afresh, that it is impossible to find a woman that deserves to be lov'd with delicacy; and this consideration renew'd my former resolutions to engage with no woman, unless for an opportunity of spending those hours pleasantly with them, which marriage made me pass so ill at home.

I was always cautious of having any rupture with my wife, not only because I naturally hated noise, but also because I would not offend her relations, whom I look'd upon as my protectors: at last she carry'd things so far, that I could not be ignorant of an intrigue which she had with a courtier, who never stirr'd from her lodgings. This man had a very handsome wife, and I resolv'd to make him as uneasy as he had made me, and to act the same part with his wife that did with mine. I began to visit her in form, and found her so well dispos'd to be
reveng'd

reveng'd of her husband, that in a few days I saw my self upon the same footing with her as I wish'd. Yet what can we say of the whimsicalness of the heart of man? Her conduct towards me would not suffer me to retain the doubts I was inclin'd to have of my wife's conduct. I doubted not they both behav'd alike; and every time I was with his wife I could not help thinking he was playing the same part with mine. This made me melancholy and unquiet; and I reproach'd my self for being accessary to my own shame. On this account I broke off the intrigue a few days after it began, that I might have leisure to drive the man I suspected from my house. Whether or no he had the same sentiments as I, or whatever else were his reasons for it, as soon as he saw me address my self to his wife, he neglected mine, and scarce ever saw her after I intended to hinder his seeing her any more. This was not the only effect which my engagements with the lady produc'd; it help'd to make my wife more discreet, and either out of a desire to comfort her self for the loss of her lover, or out of jealousy that I lov'd his wife, when she perceiv'd that I left visiting her, she behav'd herself towards me in a manner quite different from her former carriage. She study'd to please me, and did it with such an engaging air, that I began again to think her lovely. By this means we did not only come to a good understanding, but lov'd one another, even with tenderness and warmth.

Let any man guess from whence this change arose; and how two husbands and two wives should turn to their duty by the very way that should divide them. For the lady I lov'd behav'd her self now towards her husband as my wife did to me; they lov'd one another also more than ever. There must be some reason for it, which wiser men than I must find out. All I can say is, thus it was, and I have ever since believ'd that the husband can satisfy himself for injuries received by those he committed.

My wife and I never talk'd about the matter which had reconcil'd us; and we liv'd together for some time as if we never had had any difference. I lov'd her so well

well, and thought her so fair, that I forgot the cause she had given me to suspect her virtue ; and we must own, when a man thinks his wife lovely, he will be guilty of some weakness which one would not otherwise believe he was capable of. For my part, from this time, I never wonder'd to see men in love again with their wives, seek after them, and bring them back, though they have been never so unfaithful. Which ought to convince every one of the misfortune of marrying young wives, who have always beauty enough to make themselves below'd by their husbands ; and how cautious such ought to be, to avoid having any difference with them in so publick a manner, as to render their reconciliation shameful to the world.

The love I had for my wife prevented me from having any intrigue for the remaining part of the year. We got the law-suit which we had with my second brother ; and he had scarce miscarry'd in this, before he had another, though of a different nature, with the *French* woman he brought out of *Sweden*. She said she was his wife, and my brother alledg'd he was never marry'd to her. He apply'd to my eldest brother and me to help to have justice, in this injury, done him. It was for both our interests that the marriage should not be held valid ; for the woman was poor, and we were not willing that our brother, who was not rich, should have such a charge upon him, which would make him the more chargeable to us : but when she declar'd how the affair was, and we saw the certificate of her marriage, we believ'd she had right of her side ; and as she said was marry'd to him with the usual ceremonies. We could not think it our duty to assist him when he was in the wrong ; and as injurious as the match with her was to our honour and interest, we did our utmost to bring him to reason ; but he was already so irritated against us for the loss of his cause, that he accused us as unnatural brothers, who sided with this woman on purpose to compleat his ruin. This oblig'd us to give over meddling in the affair, and to leave it to them two to dispute it between themselves, without our being further concern'd in it. The method he took to succeed, was to convey this woman away, by forcing her
from

from a convent where he had plac'd her, and where my eldest brother had been so kind as to pay for her board.

She was a very pretty woman, about four or five and twenty years of age, daughter of a *Frenchman* who settled in *Sweden*, and had relations of considerable quality in *Paris*. My brother had the less reason to abandon her, because he was in love with her six years before he marry'd her; and her father at last gave his consent to it, only because he produc'd letters, which he forg'd, from my mother and my eldest brother, testifying their approbation of the match; intimating also, that he had a large estate in *France*.

I cannot tell whether my brother grew weary of her after he return'd to *Paris*, or whether he was in hopes of marrying to more advantage; but as soon as he found in what condition his fortune was in *France*, and had lost his cause with us, he would have sent her home again, and disown'd her for his wife.

She was, as I have said, in the convent where my eldest brother plac'd her, and we had no manner of thought that any body would run away with her; but one evening returning from an estate my brother had near *Paris*, towards the city, we pass'd by the gate of the convent, before which we saw a great number of people assembled: we ask'd what was the matter; and were told, that certain persons had been there to carry off a young woman; that they had broken down the grate, and informations were come in against them. The lady abbess was my eldest brother's acquaintance, and he thought himself oblig'd to visit her on this occasion. We understood it was my second brother that had been guilty of this fine exploit. Never enterptize was so ill concerted: he came with soldiers of the guards, and having ask'd for the person he wanted, he held her by the arm through the grate while his followers broke it down. This was not done so suddenly, but people ran thither at the noise. My brother's wife made her escape from him, and re-enter'd the convent, where she inform'd every body of the violence that had been done her. It was an attempt punishable with nothing less than death; and we foresaw, that if an indictment was

brought

brought against him for breaking the grate, he would be prosecuted as for a capital crime.

We prevail'd with the lady abbess to suppress that circumstance, and to say only that my brother came to take out his wife ; which was all that that was put into the charge.

We immediately went to seek out my brother, to let him know the only way he had to save himself from the criminal process which was going to be made against him. We found him in the neighbourhood of the convent, so little was he apprehensive of the consequences of the action he had committed.

My eldest brother spoke to him, and told him he would lose his head if he did not presently put in a plea, setting forth that the woman he would have taken away was his wife ; and that he demanded her to be delivered up to him. We had much ado to convince him that he had no other way of clearing himself ; we were forc'd to threaten him, and tell him that attempts on religious houses were never pardon'd in *France*. All we could get from him was, that he would do as we desired him ; but that he would stab his wife as soon as ever she should be put into his possession.

My eldest brother lost no time, and made such good use of his credit at court, that the thing ended as we would have had it. Thus my second brother having confess'd in his plea that the woman he intended to have taken away was his wife, he was forced ever after to acknowledge her as such. What is most surprizing, instead of using her as he afore threatned, is, that he lov'd her better than ever ; and as soon as he saw that he could not be parted from her, he gave over all thoughts of a divorce, and never after said she was not his wife. He made a virtue of necessity ; on which occasion I may venture to affirm, that if men were allowed to disown their wives, there are none of them hardly but would be tempted to it ; and if the impossibility of breaking a marriage renders the state of wedlock burthensome on one hand, on the other it serves to determine married persons to live lovingly together. It is in vain to talk that marriage being indissoluble is a rigorous law, it would be worse were it not so.

My

My second brother and his wife were on much the same foot as I was with mine ; and one may judge by that, we were tractable tools for the female sex. It was without doubt very singular to find in the same family two husbands that pass'd so from one extremity to the other ; and who after having hated their wives, should become passionately fond of them again. But perhaps there are many husbands, who would have courage to do as much, and who are less concern'd at the infidelity of their wives, on account of the injury thereby done them, than on account of the disgrace to continue to love a faithless woman.

As for my self, I confess I was not very sensible of this shame ; all the proofs I had of my wife's ill conduct appear'd to me to be uncertain, and the world having never fix'd any remarkable scandal upon her, I did not think it would be right in me to make my self uneasy about it : and whoever should have blam'd me for it, or endeavour'd to set me against her, would not have been very welcome to me.

I do not pretend that my example should govern any one : the reader will see by the faithful relation I make of all my errors, that I do not set up for a model of virtue or discretion ; on the contrary, I am the first to condemn my self in all the ill adventures that I have been concern'd in. However, I may say, that I do not think my self worthy of blame in returning to the former good liking, and the value which I had for my wife : and I cannot approve that malignity which the world shews against marry'd folks : they would never have a man love his wife again, if ever he has been dissatisfy'd with her.

I found my self as happy as any man in the world, in the good conduct we observed, and should have been so all my life, if my wife and I had been so far pleas'd with the felicity we enjoy'd, as to have guarded against every thing that could have disturb'd it. But neither of us were so careful therein as we ought to have been, she soon gave her self her former airs, and I followed my usual courses ; I mean, as soon as she began to neglect me, I endeavour'd to make my self easy elsewhere.

Our

Our friendship lasted till the journey to *Spain*; my wife was nominated for one of the ladies that were to wait on the queen-mother; and this distinction which she supposed she ow'd only to the credit of her relations, made her so vain, that she did not condescend so much as to consult me on the expences of her journey. I went my self towards *St. Jean de Luz* in *May* to wait on cardinal *Mazarine*, who was to go thither to conclude the articles of peace, and those of the king's marriage with the *infanta*.

I arriv'd at the place of interview between his eminence and *don Lewis de Haro*, a month sooner than the cardinal, and having nothing to do, I resolv'd to go as far as *Madrid*; I was willing to see whether the *Spaniards* remember'd the *Algerine* slave, and if I could meet with any of the mistresses I had there eight or nine years before. I cannot even tell whether or no it might not be an effect of the climate; but as soon as I found my self on *Spanish* ground, I could think of nothing but love and gallantry. The marquess of *D ———*, and the chevalier *D ———* went with me: I was as bold and romantick as when I travelled thither before, and meditated occasions to signalize my self. The account I had given of the *Spanish* ladies made my companions as desirous as my self to enter on some intrigue. We were all three of us in the best humour in the world for knight errantry; and I can call the designs we propos'd to our selves by no other name.

When we came to *Madrid*, we went to pay our duty to the king, who knew me again, and could not help laughing when he saw me. He said he was extream glad to see me, and that it would be very pleasant to the *infanta* his daughter to have a sight of the person of whom she heard such strange adventures; and immediately leading us to her apartment, he presented me to her, saying, I have brought you the *Algerine*-slave, of whom you have heard so much talk. The *infanta* fell a laughing, and ask'd me where my slave's habit was, and whether I had not brought it with me. I told her I could not tell what was become of it, and that these were stories of my youth which should now be forgotten. No,
no,

no, said she, they are not forgotten, I will shew you some persons who very well remember them. Saying these words she call'd a lady to her who was in a corner of the chamber, and ask'd if she knew me. The lady was *Elionora*: she blush'd when she saw me; but recollecting her self, she answer'd the infant she should never forget a man to whom she owed her life; and that she was glad to meet again, to shew me that she would always acknowledge the service I did her.

I bowed with a great deal of respect, as soon as I knew her; and she seem'd to me to be so fair, that I felt all the passion which I once had for her, to rekindle in my breast.

I answer'd her with general compliments; after which we talked of the king and court of *France*: I was ask'd a hundred questions on that subject. The infant shewed me a picture of the king, and desir'd to know whether it resembled him. I took hold of that opportunity to tell her that the king had a thousand qualities, and as many graces which no painter could express. She then ask'd if the pictures that we had seen of her in *France* resembled her.

The chevalier *D* ——— pulled one out of his pocket, telling her it was copy'd from that which was given to the king. She look'd upon it, and said she was too much flatter'd; and that the king would find a great deal of difference between the picture and the original; but she hop'd at least that he would pardon her want of beauty, in favour of the respect and devotion that she had for him. Nothing could be more gallant on the one side and the other than this conversation: the infant charm'd us with her modesty, her gallantry, and her sweetness. As for me, I regarded only *Elionora*, yet I durst not look upon her too often, for fear of giving offence; and I fancy'd that she shunn'd meeting my eyes as much as she possibly could.

I was not the only person who at that time fix'd his eyes on her. The marquis *D* ——— could not see her, and know her to be the same whom I had mention'd in the relation of my adventures in the habit of a slave, without having a desire to love her in his turn: he doubted not, since she had had an inclination for me, she

she might have the same for him; and he gave way to his passion the more freely, because he did not think her a conquest above his hopes.

He ask'd me when we went, if I could see so fair a woman again, and one who had lov'd me, without being willing still to love her. He must own, he said, he never saw a more lovely creature in his life; and if I would consent he would begin his *Spanish* adventures by her, I reply'd, I was glad his opinion and mine agreed so well; that I must confess I lov'd her now as much as ever, but that should not give him any disturbance, since on such occasions, every man was for himself; that we ought each of us to endeavour to succeed without quarrelling; and if he was happier than I, I would not be offended with him; as I expected he should pardon me, if I succeeded better than himself.

He said the match was not equal, and that he perceiv'd by my knowledge of the *Spanish* customs my task would be easiest; and if I would act like a good friend and a man of honour, I should leave that lady to him, and seek another. We only rally'd one another, and therefore call'd the chevalier to decide the difference. The chevalier declar'd the marquess's demand to be just; he condemn'd me to abandon my conquest, and find out a new one; I seem'd to yield to this sentence, but in the main I did not venture much, for I was very well satisfy'd the marquess would not succeed: and when I saw *Elionora* again, she would be as kind as she was before.

The lady's fortune was chang'd, I did not know the particulars of all that had happen'd to her since my departure; I only understood she was a widow, and that the king of *Spain*, who still loved her, had given her the post of second lady of honour to the infanta.

It was not easy to see and to talk to her; I waited for her to give me notice how I might come to speak to her: for in *Spain* the women always make advances. They are watched so narrowly, they must condescend to it, or must never see their gallants.

Two or three days past before I heard any thing of her, and yet I saw her every day in the infanta's apartment. But I could not speak to her but with my eyes; and for a further declaration of my mind, I waited till
she

she should give me an assignation; on this I relied. The marquis, who had no cause to hope for such a favour, was very brisk in shewing her his passion; and as he pass'd by her one day, he whisper'd her in the ear he was desperately in love with her.

Notwithstanding my expectations, I received no message from her: I was the more surprized, because I saw by her looks, that she wanted to speak with me. I wait'd still to no purpose? therefore I made it my business to find out an opportunity to whisper my wishes to her when I saw her with the infant. It was above a week before I had this convenience of speaking, and it seem'd as if she avoided me; at last I met with the opportunity I desired, and no body taking notice of us, I said to her, that I expected her commands, and should die if she did not send them to me in a little time. She reply'd, with a cold air, oh! sir, what would you have one to do with you? you are marry'd.

These words, and the coldness with which she spoke them, made me suppose she had been in hopes I would have marry'd her; and I remember'd all that she had formerly said to me on that subject, particularly the desire she had to live in *France*. I doubted not she had the same desire, and at last I understood by the care I took to inform my self exactly concerning her, that since the treaty of the infant's marriage was propos'd, she longed passionately to accompany her, and would be willing to marry a *Frenchman*, that she might not be obliged to part from that princess: as soon as she saw me she was in hopes I would marry her, but hearing I had a wife already, these hopes vanish'd. This was the reason of her coldness towards me, and made her incline more towards the marquis when she knew he lov'd her, and that he was not marry'd.

She listen'd to him gave him an opportunity of seeing her; and the marquis, who resolv'd on any terms to gain her, promis'd her marriage. This promise was only an artifice to deceive her; for though the marquis was not marr'd, yet he was very improper for the design which had engag'd her to give attention to him, for he knew well that his family, who were equally powerful and noble in *France*, would not consent that he should

marry a foreigner. All that he said therefore was only to amuse her, and to try to engage her in an intrigue.

The chevalier told me every thing, and the marquis never fail'd to let him know how he proceeded in his amour: and I confess, my vexation, to see him more happy than my self, increas'd the zeal which I ought to have had in order to prevent a woman whom I had lov'd, and still did love, being so basely deceiv'd.

I told the marquis my thoughts, but he took it all for the effects of my jealousy. I would have inform'd *Elionora*, but the marquis had prepossess'd her against me; and she imagin'd I spoke it out of vexation and spite.

I understood by the chevalier that they saw one another three times a week, and that the marquis bragged he was very great with her. This sensibly touched me, and I resolv'd by some means or other to let *Elionora* understand that the marquis would never marry her. I wrote to her what I knew of the affair; I shew'd her the impossibility of such a marriage, were the marquis in earnest. My letter lash'd him a little too severely, jealousy having made me say all that I knew ill of him.

Elionora shew'd the letter to the marquis, who thereupon became outrageous, and resolv'd to challenge me. The chevalier did all he could to reconcile us, without any success. We fought, the marquis was wounded; and monsieur *de Grammont* arriving much about the same time, inform'd the cardinal, who was then at St. *Jean de Luz*, of our combat.

His eminence sent for me, as he did likewise for the marquis, but his wound would not permit him to travel. I had no excuse to hinder my obeying the cardinal's orders: away I went, heartily grieved, that on one hand I left the marquis in possession of a woman I lov'd; on the other, that I was going singly to expose my self to the wrath, and, perhaps, the disgrace of this minister. It was happy for me that the whole court arriv'd there before me, and my wife had credit enough to appease his eminence; and to obtain that I should not be sent prisoner to *Pierre-Encise*, as it was intended I should. The cardinal treated me very ill; he told me I would always be a fool, and had it not been out of respect to
O my

my wife, he would for ever prevent my shewing the folly of *Frenchmen* to strangers.

This affair made my wife assume more power over me, and use me more contemptibly than before. It was my misfortune, that all the world said she had reason for it; and that I could not blame her my self; for I was not so blind as not to see the extravagance, and the ill effect of my last adventure.

The infantina came to St. *Jean de Luz*, conducted thither by the king her father. *Eliónora* did not come with them; and I was inform'd, that the rumour of her intrigue with the marquis, and of our duel, was the cause of it. The marquis arriv'd there also: monsieur de *Grammont*, his kinsman, made the marquis's peace, and oblig'd us to embrace each other. The chevalier told me he was not very sorry for the loss of *Eliónora*, who, in the end, perceived that he would deceive her; but she could not be revenged of him: for at the same time that she discover'd it, she was turned off by the infantina; and the marquis departed from *Madrid*. I could not put her quite out of my mind, and wish'd her still so well, that I was concerned at her destiny.

The king of *England*, *Charles II.* came to the conference, to solicit the affair of his restoration; but he had no great cause of content, tho' *Cromwel* had been dead above six months: the cardinal, and *Don Lewis de Haro* had business enough on their hands of their own, without troubling themselves with his. Among the rest of the king of *England*'s followers, *Eliz. Darcil* was one, disguis'd like a young gentleman; and it seem'd as if fate had decreed, that I should meet at this place all my acquaintance, with whom I had been concerned in any adventure. I met the hermit of *Fontarabia* here, in the quality of *Portugal* ambassador; he told me, that two or three months after I left him, he return'd to *Portugal*, where he lay concealed till the death of king *John*; that he was afterwards restor'd to his estate by the queen-regent, and was in great credit with her. He had not interest enough at the conference to hinder *France* from abandoning *Portugal*, so he retir'd very much discontented. Here I also met the duke of *Lorrain*, to whom I related my adventure at *Brussels*, when I pass'd for one of his domesticks.

domesticks. This prince highly careſs'd me, and ever ſince I have had a particular friendſhip with him. His humour was much like my own with reſpect to women, he always ſacrific'd his fortune and his reputation to his amours : excepting this fault, he was, perhaps, the greateſt man of his age. He had an extraordinary genius for war ; but nothing was ſo valuable to him as his pleaſure. He equally deſpis'd good and bad fortune ; and never was ſo gay as when he was moſt unfortunate. He would take up with a citizen, if he could get no better miſtreſs ; and would divert himſelf with a captain of a company of foot, as well as with the greateſt prince. Though he had ſomething in him too popular, and, if I may ſo ſay, too mean for a ſovereign prince ; yet it was impoſſible for all thoſe that knew him, not to love him ; no man's converſation being more eaſy and pleaſant. He told me, that during his confinement in *Spain*, he had heard much talk of *Elionora* : I related to him all my adventures with her, particularly the laſt. He ſaid, ſince ſhe had a mind to ſee *France*, ſhe ought to be gratify'd therein, and that I ſhould wait upon her to conduct her hither ; and if he knew where to find her, he would go and offer her his ſervice. Neither he nor I thought, when he ſaid ſo, that we ſhould ſo ſoon have an opportunity to do what he propos'd, as we had two or three days afterwards.

A *Spaniard* gave me a letter, and went off as ſoon as he had deliver'd it, without telling me where I ſhould hear of him, to return an answer. The letter came from *Elionora*, and contain'd a requeſt, that I would not let the marqueſs's treachery go unpuniſh'd : ſhe alſo acquainted me, that ſhe was in a convent at *Toledo*, where ſhe aſſur'd me ſhe ſhould never forget me. She cloſ'd all, with repeating her deſire, that I would revenge the injuries done to her by the marqueſs ; and ſhe depended ſo much on my courage, that ſhe did not offer to preſcribe the method.

I ſhew'd this letter to the duke of *Lorrain*, who having read it ; ſaid I ought not to trouble my ſelf much about what ſhe wrote me concerning the marqueſs : that it was fooliſh in her to ſeek revenge, and I ſhould oblige her much more if I could take her out of the convent. He

added, if I would, we should go both of us, and deliver her from her confinement. I could not think the duke was in earnest ; but he repeated so often, that he would do it with a good will, that I at the last believed him.

My despight at the marquis's being better us'd than I, helped to increase my desire to join herein with the duke. As for him, his business was to get a mistress ; and he was not his own master when once that fancy took him in the head.

In a word, as much as it was against reason or probability, he and I resolved to undertake a journey to *Toledo*. How, said I, will your highness go this journey ? we will ride post, said the duke ; and I will be disguised like an express. We will get back to *Paris* time enough to be there before the court, and no body shall know what is become of us. It is known I never say beforehand when I will be gone ; my men shall be sent to stay for us at *Bordeaux*, give yours the same orders, and follow me if you dare. I had no thoughts to examine into any difficulties, seeing the prince regarded them not. I was even so amaz'd to see a sovereign about to run after such adventures, that had it been only for the rarity of the thing, I should have been willing to accompany him. We departed from *St. Jean de Luz*, and instead of taking the road to *France*, we turn'd our backs upon it, making our way to *Spain*. We took but two men with us ; and I could not but be amaz'd to see the duke of *Lorraine* in this equipage, exposing himself to such a fatigue for the sake of a woman whom he did not know. But as soon as we came to *Viterria*, I perceiv'd he left the road to *Toledo*, and pass'd on to *Madrid*, saying, charity began at home, and it was just that he should think of his own mistress before he thought of mine ; that she was a young lady who had as great an inclination for *France* as *Elionora* ; that he would propose their leaving *Spain* together, and he did not question but she would do it when he offered her a companion.

This discourse surpriz'd me ; for I would not have thought of bringing off *Elionora*, had I not suppos'd the duke would have taken the charge of her ; and I now saw she would fall to my lot, the duke having another mistress. I did not dissemble my perplexity on this account :

count: he answered me that I should take no care about *Elionora*, that he was great enough, and gallant enough to keep two mistresses.

We arriv'd at *Madrid*, and I was heartily vex'd that I had undertaken this journey. The duke saw his mistress, a young lady about eighteen years of age: I cannot tell how he came acquainted with her, but he was very amorous, and promis'd to marry her if she would follow him into *Lorrain*. He assur'd her *Elionora* would go with her; and had not much ado to perswade her to it. The glory of being a sovereign princess flatter'd a *Spanish* woman too much for her to refuse him. The duke would have me see her to confirm what he had said, relating to our design of carrying off *Elionora*. He brought me to the place where he us'd to see her, which I knew to be the house of *Manrique*; the young lady being the daughter of that perfidious mistress I had, of whom I have spoken so much under the name of *Isabella*.

Whether or no the duke of *Lorarin*'s visits were discover'd, or whatever was the matter, the night he carry'd me to this house, we were surpriz'd by an ambuscade: we had scarce got into the chamber where the duke us'd to meet the young lady, when *Manrique* her father, enter'd, follow'd by several servants, who seiz'd the duke and me, notwithstanding the resistance we made.

The duke was not at all confounded: he told *Manrique* he would marry his daughter, and that he was the duke of *Lorrain*. *Manrique* made no return to this proposal, but laugh'd at him; not imagining that he really was the duke of *Lorrain*. He perceived me, and knowing me again, did not doubt but I was the person who had the intrigue with his daughter; and taking the duke for one of my domesticks, he fell a laughing again, thinking it was an artifice of mine to amuse him. At last the duke, who had seen him in *Flanders*, made himself known to him, and *Manrique* began to behave with more respect.

As for me, I was so surprized to find my self in a house, where formerly I had met with so many sad disasters, and to see *Manrique*, a man whose resentment I had reason to fear; that as soon as I saw he began to know the duke of *Lorrain*, I escaped out of the hand

of the fellows that held me, and went out of the chamber in order to save my self, and who should I meet but his wife, who was every whit as much surprized to see me. I had not seen her at court while I was last at *Madrid*. Upon inquiry of her, I learn'd that she and her husband liv'd very retiredly, and were for the most part in the country. *Isabella* made no question but that I came thither to carry on an intrigue with her daughter. I misinform'd her, by telling her it was the duke of *Lorraine* who had the intrigue, and that he would marry her.

Isabella, whose character was still the same, said, let us leave them together; then she conducted me to her apartment, where when we came, I perceived she was resolv'd to lose no opportunity of renewing our former acquaintance.

A moment after we were there, her husband came into the room, follow'd by the duke and his daughter. The duke was ask'd, if he would really marry the young lady. His highness replying, that was his design; they answer'd, both the father and mother, that she should not be marry'd to any other person, till he was arriv'd in his territories; and then they would bring her to him, in case he approv'd thereof. The duke seem'd to consent to this proposition, and *Manrique* was very civil to me, in consideration of the marriage which the duke had given him hopes of.

As soon as we were got out his house, the duke told me positively he would carry off the young lady; that all he had said to her father, was only to get clear of him: that his mistress resolv'd to go with him, and he only waited for an opportunity. That she did not seem desirous of a companion, and therefore we might leave *Elionora* where she was. Faith, my lord, said I, it will not be ill done of us, if we leave both of them; and your highness ought to make a conscience of carrying away a young woman whom you cannot marry. If you hearken to me, we will go and find out mistresses in *France*. The duke said, he believ'd I was in the right. I admir'd to find him so tractable, and that a journey, so extraordinary as ours, had no other effect than to bring us to reason: but thus we every day grow out

out of love with the things we most wish'd for ; and the most surprizing designs come to nothing ; this observation is most common in matters of gallantry.

I was pleas'd to see the duke stop here, and consent that we should return to *France*. *Manrique's* countenance had given me a disgust to *Spain*. His wife was as foolish, but not so handsome as she was ten years before. I found in my breast no sentiments for *Elionora*, but what were as full of indifference and contempt as she deserv'd. In short, I could see no good would come by my staying in *Spain* ; I was weary of our knight-errantry, and pity'd the duke of *Lorrain* that he was not wiser. His character was like a mirror, wherein I beheld the extravagance and ridiculousness of my own ; and I had never more desire to avoid the sex, than when I saw the weakness they made so great a man guilty of. This taught me, that a man may sometimes amend himself, by seeing in another his own defects ; and when we behold how ridiculous they are in him, we may better conceive how they appear in our selves.

We went back in the same manner as we came, but were robbed in the neighbourhood of *Bayonne*. The roads were full of rogues, following the court in hopes to pick up the stragglers and plunder them. They took our horses and all our money : the duke only laugh'd at it, and was very pleasant on the circumstances we were in on this occasion. We travell'd six leagues on foot, and the duke to divert himself said to every body he met, that we were pilgrims that came from *St. Jacques*. I could not forbear laughing, tho' in the main I could not approve that a prince of his rank should be so much a knight-errant. I did not think he was an example to be followed ; and that if it is a fault in princes to be too conceited of their quality, it is much more so in them intirely to forget it.

The duke was still the same, and he was scarce arriv'd at *Paris* before he was about such another match as that at *Madrid*. It is true, he address'd himself to a young gentlewoman, who made up in merit what she wanted in quality ; and would not marry him after she understood the king was averse to it.

What happen'd to me in *Spain* about *Elionora* gave, my wife a new right to carry her self towards me as she pleased. I found her plung'd in all the diversions of the court, especially gaming; she had every day an hundred people at her house, who play'd from four a clock in the afternoon to seven the next morning: I could hardly sometimes crowd into my own house, where I was as little known as if I had been a stranger. I still dissembled, but I suffer'd not the less for it: and I believe those husbands, whose wives game, are not more insensible than I was, whatever face they may put on. Happy for them if they had no fault to hide in their wives but their love of play.

My wife in a little time was oblig'd to lead another sort of life, occasion'd by the disgrace of those by whose relation and protection she supported her vanity and her gaming. Cardinal *Mazarine* dy'd, and left behind him dreadful memoirs against them: we sunk with our protectors. My eldest brother, who already was not very well contented for his having been kept in *Catalonia* for several years, where there was nothing to be done; and had lately receiv'd new cause of disgust, by his being omitted in the promotion of knights of the holy ghost, made in 1662, resolv'd to go and serve the *Venetians*. My second brother return'd to *Sweden*, and I stay'd at *Paris*, till the conclusion of monsieur *Fouquet's* trial.

My wife went into *Bretagne*, her own country, where she soon died of grief. I liv'd for near three years after in *Paris*, having something else to mind than gallantry: I was oblig'd to work night and day to assist monsieur *Fouquet* to defend himself. We kept four presses at work to print our cases; we chang'd our lodgings almost every day; and I must in justice acknowledge, that all was managed by the indefatigable industry of monsieur *Fouquet's* youngest brother, who was first esquire of the little equerry: he spar'd no watching, labour, or industry to serve his brother.

The change of my fortune had the effect which all such disgraces produce: I met with none but cold and useles friends, and had the mortification to hear it said, that I was the least to be pity'd of all; and no body talk'd

talk'd more to this purpose than the women I had loved. Each of them denied that she had ever known me, and I was disown'd by all my friends.

We may truly say, that a man cannot know the world, without undergoing the like reverse of fortune. He must be unhappy to see the deceitfulness of men's hearts, and especially those of the fair sex.

The life I had led, while monsieur *Fouquet's* cause depended, only made me more lively and impatient to lead one more agreeable to my humour. It was to no purpose that I was convinc'd of the vanity of the world, and the falshood of friends; I wanted those principles which alone can render such conviction useful, I mean the principles of religion. I endeavour'd to drown my cares in those pleasures for which I had most inclination; and in this view for almost twenty years to come, I lived much after the same rate as I had done formerly; and lost the fruit I might have gathered from my experience and my disgrace.

My fortune was entirely ruin'd by the fall of monsieur *Fouquet*: I was oblig'd to sell my commission, and my pension was taken from me. My wife dying childless, I was forc'd to return the little I had with her. Thus was this marriage, on which my eldest brother and I founded all our hopes of advancement, the cause of all our misfortunes.

I had spent high, and spared nothing, as these memoirs sufficiently set forth, in the course of my pleasures. I trusted so much to my protectors, that seeing they rowled in money, I thought I could never want it. Though I was of no faction, nor a man of business, yet my alliances and friendship with those that were, made me almost as negligent of my self, and my expences, as my wife's kindred were of themselves in their prosperity. I was guilty of all the follies which they every day committed, after having enriched themselves by bargains which exhausted the publick treasures to fill their own: they forgot what they had been, and dared to vie with princes in their pomp and luxury.

I was by this means reduc'd to the fifth part of my income, which was not sufficient for my subsistence. In-

deed, while monsieur *Fouquet's* cause depended, I wanted not money ; but as soon as that was over, I found my circumstances in a very uneasy posture, so little had I left for my maintenance. My sister-in-law, wife to my eldest brother, stay'd in *France* ; she retir'd into the country with her children, and had all her estate untouched, and that was very considerable ; but she was oblig'd to make such frequent and large remittances to her husband, that I could not expect much from her. Besides, she look'd upon me as the cause of the disgrace of all our family, by my marrying into monsieur *Fouquet's*. I found therefore that to avoid making an ill figure at home, I must do as my brothers had done, travel into foreign countries, and put my self into the service of some other prince.

It is not hard to guess what country I would chuse for the place of my refuge. I had children in *Poland* that were rich enough to maintain me ; I resolv'd to go to them, and was about selling my estate to equip me for my journey, when a friend whom I confided in, dissuaded me from it, saying, such a man as I could never want money in *France*, and I might find plenty of rich ladies who would furnish me therewith, if I would engage my self with them. I hearken'd to what he said, and giving credit to an hundred stories he told me of several courtiers who subsisted entirely by the money they got that way, I believed I might meet with the same fortune, and that I had nothing to do but to find out some rich lady who was mistress of her person and her estate.

Thus I began to do with respect to women, what they had done with me at the time when I paid my mistresses ; but I found that either all I had heard of these mistresses was false, or that they did not think me worth their money. A thousand persons offered to find me such a woman as I wanted, but they every one of them deceiv'd me ; and I perceived at length that they flattered me with these hopes only to rob me of what I had left.

I imagin'd, that without my pretended friends assistance I had met with the woman I sought after, in making

making acquaintance with the widow of a judge : she lived private enough, yet she loved her self very much ; she affected to be thought handsome and to have gallants. This lady was very rich ; and knowing that she had no aversion to an intrigue, I address'd my self to her. She lov'd me, or behav'd as though she did ; but when she saw that I wanted money, she valued her self on the small presents she had made me, tho' they were trifles, yet she pretended I was sufficiently oblig'd to her for them, not to require that she should not let others share in her good graces. She daily engag'd new lovers, and when I complain'd to her, she reproach'd me with her bounty. I suffered all, in hopes to make her more delicate in time ; but this serv'd only to make me more sensible of the misfortune of not being rich. Men without wit or merit were every day welcome to her ; she overwhelmed them with caresses and civilities because they were richer than I : and in the end she used me little better than one of her domesticks to whom she paid wages. Let who will be paid by their mistresses on such terms, as for me I could not bear it ; and leaving this unworthy woman to her sots and coxcombs, I departed for *Poland*, very well satisfy'd, that in gallantry, as well as other things, a man can hope for little respect or success when he is in low circumstances.

I would have pass'd through *Venice*, had not my brother inform'd me that the death of the noble *Venetian*, I formerly mention'd in these memoirs, was not yet quite forgot, tho' it was near twenty years since I killed him : for this reason I took the road thro' *Germany*, having scarce wherewithal to pay the charges of my journey, being constrain'd, at forty years of age, to seek my bread of strangers : having nothing left from twenty years service in the wars, nor all that I had got besides, but the sad repentance of having mispent my time.

To add to my misfortunes, I was robbed on the frontiers of *Poland* by a party of *Tartars*, which oblig'd me to travel to the end of my journey without money ; being encumber'd with a servant whom I brought out of *France* with me, and his seeing me in this condition was

a mortification to me : the fellow was weary of such a master, and wanted only an opportunity to return to *France*.

Sorrow and fatigue made me fall sick ; I stay'd in a village a day's journey from *Warsaw*, where I was taken ill of a violent fever ; I sent my servant to the city to inform the queen of my condition, and where I was ; but the rascal never came back, and I never heard of him afterwards : I believe he was either kill'd on the road, or that instead of going to *Warsaw*, he return'd to *France*. My life, which had seem'd romantick on several occasions, appear'd much more so in this ; and indeed no adventure in a romance could be more singular.

I had been ill in this village for four days, when the countess of *Venoski* passed that way. She was informed that a stranger of good fashion lay sick, and her charity led her to see me. I remember'd her, for I had often seen her with my wife, to whom she was nearly related ; but when I found she knew not me, I thought fit to conceal my name. I told her I was a *German*, that I had been robbed ; and that if she had the charity to send me to *Warsaw*, the queen would acknowledge it, I having the honour to be known to her majesty. The countess had the goodness to take compassion of me ; and ordering me to be put into a litter, carried me to *Warsaw*, where I was lodged in her house, till my health should allow me to wait on the queen.

My fever increased, after my journey was over, and I was confined to my bed for fifteen days. When the countess first saw me, she had a young lady with her about eighteen years of age, who was much taller and better shap'd than the *Polish* women generally are. She was very fair, her skin exceeding fine, and her air and shape inexpressibly beautiful. I was not so sick as to overlook this young beauty ; and I felt in my heart such emotions, at the first view, as made me fear that all my misfortunes had not armed me sufficiently against the charms of the fair sex. The amiable creature seem'd afflicted at my sickness ; and she appear'd to have so much concern and care for me, as rais'd in me a great
inelination.

inclination and tenderness for her. She came every day into my chamber to enquire after my health : I asked who she was, and I was answered, that she was niece to the countess of *Venoski*.

I verily believe that the constant sight of this charming maid, and the pleasure I received from her careful attendance, contributed more to my recovery than all the medicines the physicians gave me. In short, my fever left me, and I had the satisfaction to see the lovely creature overjoy'd at my recovery. She came to see me oftner as I grew better ; and I already felt a stronger and more tender affection for her, than I ever bore to any woman in my life ; when I begun to perceive that her constant care of me was only a blind to give her an opportunity of seeing a young *Pole* whom I took to be her lover. He seemed to be much about her age, and of a brown complexion, very tall, but finely shaped. Every time she came to see me, the young man came to find her out ; and they usually retired to a corner of the chamber, where they seemed to converse with great earnestness. The aspect of the the youth pleased me wonderfully ; and if I had not suspected that he was my rival, I should have taken delight in his person.

They both of them often asked me if I was in reality a *German* ; which when I continued to affirm, they seemed very much troubled. One day I took notice that the young lady and gentleman, having retired to a window, were very intent upon a picture ; and that every now and then they cast their eyes upon me, as if they had found some resemblance betwixt that and my features. I could not forbear to ask the meaning of it, upon which the young lady answer'd, that if I had been a *Frenchman*, she should have imagin'd that I was the person for whom the picture was drawn, because it so exactly resembled me. I desired to see it. But how great was my surprize ! when I found it to be the very painting which I had sent to the queen of *Poland* five years before, and which she commanded me to get drawn, to be given to my children. After I had view'd the piece, I cast my eyes upon the young lady, and then upon

upon the gentleman I had thought to be her lover. My heart beat, and I felt a secret emotion, which filled me with wonder. I thought I traced in the two young persons some of my own features, and at that moment I said to my self, are not these my children? the tears came into my eyes, and I was about to run and embrace them; but constraining my self with pain, I asked whose picture it was; the maid perceiving that I could not speak without tears, fell a weeping; her tears absolutely confirmed me in my opinion, and falling upon her neck, ah! my dear child, said I, yes, I am your father. I could say no more. The youth seized my hands at the same time, and kissing, bathed them with his tears. Throughout my life I never felt a joy equal to this; and it must be owned, that nature inspires more lively motions, and pleasing tenderness, than the passions can ever possibly excite.

They really were my children, and what I had looked upon as a passion for the young *Polish* lady, was only a secret voice of nature, who began to unfold her self the very moment I saw this lovely person.

The youth I had taken for her lover, was her brother; and they lived in so perfect an union, that their greatest pleasure was in each other's company. This occasion'd my attributing to love, what proceeded only from their friendship. It must be remembered they were twins, and every thing in them answered their birth. Never were two children more equally pair'd.

The countess *Venoski*, their kinswoman, bred them up, and spared nothing for their education. As they both knew I was on the road to *Poland*, they suspected when they saw how much the picture was like me, that I was their father. They told the countess, who had been of the same opinion, if I had not assur'd her I was a *German*.

In short, whether she might not know me again, or whether she was unwilling to deprive me of any part of the pleasure which an incident so moving as that of a father coming to the knowledge of his children, must occasion, she sent them to me every day; and the discovery was made as I have related.

It

It was immediately nois'd about, and the queen presently sent for me to court: I gave her an account of my circumstances; my children had fortune enough to mend mine, and in a little while, by their means, I found my self in a condition answerable to my quality.

However, I confess that the assistance and the pension I received in *Poland*, gave me less pleasure than the sight of two such lovely children; for I may say without flattering them, it was not easy to meet more accomplish'd ones.

P A R T IX.

I Was not long out of employ in *Poland*; and I had reason to acknowledge the esteem which foreigners have of *French* officers who have any experience and reputation, for they valued me much above my deserts. I was nam'd to command in chief, with general *Czarneski*, the army appointed to serve in the *Ukraine* against the *Muscovites*, and the *Cossacks* who had join'd with them. We took the city of *Stravicza*; and this first success got me so much credit, that while king *Casimir* was on the throne, there was no negotiation, nor no campaign made without me; neither had I any cause, during that time, to be sorry for my leaving *France*; but I had no more discretion now than heretofore in reference to women, but I still followed my inclinations when I had opportunity to engage in any intrigue with them.

It is true, I was more cautious to preserve appearances than I had formerly been; as I was the father of a family, I observed measures, and did not believe that I could handsomly appear so gallant as formerly, having a son and a daughter to marry. I should not have been pleased with their following my example; and found, that let a father be never so irregular himself, if he is a man of honour, he would not have his children therein imitate him.

I did not exercise towards mine the ridiculous severity, which I have frequently seen used by fathers, who have been men of gallantry; but much oftener by coquet-
tish

tish mothers, who forgetting that example is the best lesson for children, confine them the more, the more liberty they take themselves; and think they ought to forgive them nothing, while at the same time they expect in themselves every thing should be pardon'd

I left my daughter under the government of the countess who had brought her up; I took my son home, and caused him to make his first campaign with me. I affected to appear before them very reserved as to the sex, and gave them instructions which I wanted my self more than they.

The first woman I engaged with was my *Heidleberg* mistress, whom I have before said went by the name of the lady *Errant*; she was marry'd, and pass'd for the most gallant lady of the court. Her husband was always in the army, and seem'd not to trouble himself about her conduct, The king had a long time loved her, and had still a respect for her, when I renew'd my acquaintance with her: we were as glad to see one another as people generally are who have been intimate, and meet after a long absence: and though there never had been any real intrigue between us, yet we carry'd it to one another, as if we lov'd one another intirely; and as if our love had only been interrupted by being separated: for thus do the slightest ties revive with greater force, when one finds a person he formerly knew, and hath nothing better to do than make love.

The measures I was willing to observe for the sake of my children, made me rejoyce I had happen'd on an intrigue which I might manage as I pleas'd; for I did not doubt this woman would be as circumspect as I would have her. In effect, she seem'd to have so great a desire of being belov'd by me, that I thought I should oblige her so far by answering her passion, as to expect she should comply with whatever I should judge proper: but I had scarce given her reason to believe I lov'd, before she published it to the whole world: she made choice of my daughter to make the confident of our intrigue, and inform'd her of every thing that pass'd between us. My daughter told the countess *Venoski*, and she gave the queen an account of our correspondence, by which means it became publick, and I could not make one step without hearing of it again.

I had

I have not sufficient love for this woman, neither indeed had I such an esteem for her as to be willing the world should think I was in love with her. I left her as soon as I perceived people began to talk of us, and I affected such a strangeness towards her, that in a little while it was taken notice of, and reported about, that I despised her. This made her my enemy, and remembering that among the reasons I had given her for breaking off our commerce, I assured her I would never forgive her having said so much to my daughter as she had done; she resolved to be revenged on me in corrupting my daughter, and engaging her in an intrigue which might spoil her reputation.

Thú king was amorous still, and had not the countess of *Venoski* been on her guard to keep my daughter from him, he had certainly made love to her. But this lady perceiving the king's inclination, and knowing how dangerous it would be to let him see so young a creature, had so ordered the matter, that he never had an opportunity to talk to her: and my daughter knew not that he had a passion for her.

This lady was the countess's friend, and this gave her an opportunity to see my daughter as often as she pleased: she told her one day that the king had been in love with her a good while, but that the countess, jealous lest the inclination of his majesty should engage him to any other than her self, had hinder'd his declaring himself to her: she added, whatever she could think of to raise my daughter's ambition to be belov'd by so great a king, and she unhappily succeeded in her design. My daughter was flatter'd by her into a desire of having a king for a lover, especially when she told her that the queen, who had been ill for some time, could not live long; and if she should die, the king might marry her.

My daughter was charm'd with these hopes; she thank'd this woman, and reply'd, she would do what she should advise in order to see the king; they agreed together that my daughter should write her a letter which she should shew the king, by which that prince might judge that it would not be difficult to make himself belov'd by her. The lady *Errant* dictated the letter to her, and my daughter wrote it. As soon as she had it,
she

she carry'd it to the king, who seeing the conquest was likely to be easy, and every way conformable to his wishes, answer'd it with all the haste of a man that was passionately in love.

They concerted measures, that the king might have a meeting with my daughter. He disguis'd himself, and coming one evening to the lady *Errant's* house, when my daughter was there with the countess, some occasion being then found to get the countess out of the way, the king saw and spoke to my daughter; but he found she was so well educated, and so convinc'd of her duty, that he despair'd of conquering her. He promis'd to marry her if the queen dy'd, and this young person, dazled by seeing a king make her such a promise, fancy'd she was already on the throne. She assur'd him she would never refuse any opportunity of seeing him; and accordingly they often met, sometimes in one place, sometimes in another, which however was not done so secretly as to be conceal'd. I heard of it, and then I was sensible of my being a father, by the extream concern this occasion'd.

I went immediately to my daughter, and found her alone; it happen'd to be at a time that she had appointed to see the king. I told her all I had heard, and represented to her the ill consequences of these amours: she told me she had nothing to reproach her self with, since she had not countenanc'd the king's love, but out of hopes of being his wife.

While he were talking, the lady *Errant* came in; she was very much surpriz'd to see me, knowing the king would be there soon after, and she had not time to prevent him. I could not help shewing my resentment at the sight of her; I treated her as she deserv'd; but in the midst of my threats, the king enter'd: as much as that prince was surpriz'd, he did not shew it. The lady *Errant* told him how I had threatned her; he blam'd me much for suspecting him of any ill intentions, swearing to me that never any thing had pass'd between him and my daughter which ought to make me uneasy; that his intention was to marry her in case the queen dy'd. I return'd the king my humble thanks for his goodwill;

will ; yet at the same time I represented to him that I was not blind enough to think any otherwise than that he talk'd so out of the excess of his passion ; I conjured him to remember the justice and equity which a king ought to have regard to, and not to deceive a young girl who might be dazled with his promises ; and I pray'd him to give me leave to desire that he would see her no more, and to be content that I deprived him of all such opportunities. The king reply'd, I might do as I would ; but that I should one time or other be satisfy'd of the sincerity of his promises.

He went out having said these words, and I stay'd behind with the lady *Errant* and my daughter. I still complain'd of the former, and forbid the latter to see her. After which I sought out the countess of *Venoski*, to whom I related all that had happen'd, praying her to forbid that lady her house, and have a stricter eye than ever on my daughter's actions.

I was never in my life so concern'd for any thing as for this ; I was as sorry as if my conduct had been the most unblameable in the world : I forgot that after, having set my family such bad examples, I ought not to wonder that my daughter had been thus surpriz'd. I had yet reason to think my self happy that my daughter had not been more imprudent in her conduct, and I did not deserve to have a child so discreet as she had been. But what parents are not prejudiced in their own favour ? I was as outrageous as if she had really dishonoured me ; and as indiscreet as I had been my self, I could not help grieving that my daughter had given any one such advantages over her by her simplicity and vanity.

This makes me affirm, that those fathers are very culpable who lead such lives as seem to authorize their childrens ill courses. My daughter had virtue and wit enough to resist this woman's wicked counsels, if she had had a father from whose example she might have better learn'd her duty.

The lady *Errant* was very industrious to have it known that the king lov'd my daughter ; she endeavour'd thereby only to revenge her self on me for leaving her ; and was so malicious as to report that I had manag'd the intrigue my self. The queen gave some credit to the report,

she carry'd it to the king, who seeing the conquest was likely to be easy, and every way conformable to his wishes, answer'd it with all the haste of a man that was passionately in love.

They concerted measures, that the king might have a meeting with my daughter. He disguis'd himself, and coming one evening to the lady *Errant's* house, when my daughter was there with the countess, some occasion being then found to get the countess out of the way, the king saw and spoke to my daughter; but he found she was so well educated, and so convinc'd of her duty, that he despair'd of conquering her. He promis'd to marry her if the queen dy'd, and this young person, dazzled by seeing a king make her such a promise, fancy'd she was already on the throne. She assur'd him she would never refuse any opportunity of seeing him; and accordingly they often met, sometimes in one place, sometimes in another, which however was not done so secretly as to be conceal'd. I heard of it, and then I was sensible of my being a father, by the extream concern this occasion'd.

I went immediately to my daughter, and found her alone; it happen'd to be at a time that she had appointed to see the king. I told her all I had heard, and represented to her the ill consequences of these amours: she told me she had nothing to reproach her self with, since she had not countenanc'd the king's love, but out of hopes of being his wife.

While he were talking, the lady *Errant* came in; she was very much surpriz'd to see me, knowing the king would be there soon after, and she had not time to prevent him. I could not help shewing my resentment at the sight of her; I treated her as she deserv'd; but in the midst of my threats, the king enter'd: as much as that prince was surpriz'd, he did not shew it. The lady *Errant* told him how I had threatned her; he blam'd me much for suspecting him of any ill intentions, swearing to me that never any thing had pass'd between him and my daughter which ought to make me uneasy; that his intention was to marry her in case the queen dy'd. I return'd the king my humble thanks for his goodwill;

will ; yet at the same time I represented to him that I was not blind enough to think any otherwise than that he talk'd so out of the excess of his passion ; I conjured him to remember the justice and equity which a king ought to have regard to, and not to deceive a young girl who might be dazled with his promises ; and I pray'd him to give me leave to desire that he would see her no more, and to be content that I deprived him of all such opportunities. The king reply'd, I might do as I would ; but that I should one time or other be satisfy'd of the sincerity of his promises.

He went out having said these words, and I stay'd behind with the lady *Errant* and my daughter. I still complain'd of the former, and forbid the latter to see her. After which I sought out the countess of *Venoski*, to whom I related all that had happen'd, praying her to forbid that lady her house, and have a stricter eye than ever on my daughter's actions.

I was never in my life so concern'd for any thing as for this ; I was as sorry as if my conduct had been the most unblameable in the world : I forgot that after, having set my family such bad examples, I ought not to wonder that my daughter had been thus surpriz'd. I had yet reason to think my self happy that my daughter had not been more imprudent in her conduct, and I did not deserve to have a child so discreet as she had been. But what parents are not prejudiced in their own favour ? I was as outrageous as if she had really dishonoured me ; and as indiscreet as I had been my self, I could not help grieving that my daughter had given any one such advantages over her by her simplicity and vanity.

This makes me affirm, that those fathers are very culpable who lead such lives as seem to authorize their childrens ill courses. My daughter had virtue and wit enough to resist this woman's wicked counsels, if she had had a father from whose example she might have better learn'd her duty.

The lady *Errant* was very industrious to have it known that the king lov'd my daughter ; she endeavour'd thereby only to revenge her self on me for leaving her ; and was so malicious as to report that I had manag'd the intrigue my self. The queen gave some credit to the report,

Port, and I in vain protested I was so far from encouraging it that I broke it off. She would not trust to my oaths, being so far exasperated, that she caus'd my daughter to be shut up in a convent of *Benedictine* nuns, whom she had lately sent for from *France*.

As soon as it was known in *Poland* that the king lov'd my daughter, it was thought I owed my post in the army to her, together with all the favour I found at court: for it is thus that the world judge of princes. They believe that favour only distributes all sorts of benefits, and that it is not possible to support one's self, or advance there, without the countenance of a mistress or a favourite.

This opinion gave credit to the report, that I was privy to my daughter's intrigue with the king. Few people imagined it was a crime in me, and many wished they had an opportunity to do the same; for it must be confess'd the most shameful crimes are very little regarded among courtiers, when they can thereby make their fortune. My son who tenderly loved his sister, could not bear that the queen should treat her in such a manner; and whether he found his account in having her to be the king's mistress, or whether he was moved to it solely by his affection for his sister, he attempted to take her out of the nunnery. The king, who was glad enough to have her taken from thence, provided he was not seen in the business, made my son's way as easy as he could wish. In short, my daughter was carry'd off, and her brother conceal'd her at the lady *Errant's*, whither the king went to see her every day.

It is still said in *Poland*, that it was I who got her out of the convent, and the queen swore I should repent it; but she dy'd in a little while, and some reported that her grief to see the king love my daughter so well, contributed not a little to hasten her death.

The queen being dead, the king was now in a condition to perform the promises he had made touching the marriage of my daughter; but he had scarce discovered an inclination to marry again, before the emperor's sister was offered him; and he perceived if he thought of any other wife, he should meet with more obstacles than he had imagin'd

imagin'd. He never had an absolute power in his kingdom ; and the greatest part of what he had, was owing to the queen. Not but that he was esteem'd ; but the easiness of his temper, and his love of women, made him pass for a prince that hated business. And general *Lubomirski*, who put himself at the head of the *Cossacks*, talked of no less than dethroning him.

Upon the queen's death, the insolence of the rebels increased ; and it was feared if he was fully bent to marry my daughter, this match would give fresh pretences to the malecontents to justify their rebellion. Every one therefore perswaded him against this marriage. As for myself, however advantageous it might have been to me, I found I was obliged to talk like the rest, and to prefer the glory and quiet of this prince, to the honour of being allied to him.

I think I may truly say, that the difficulties he met with in going forward with a match to which his inclination determin'd him, was one of the greatest motives to his design of abdicating the throne. He had had it a long time since in his thoughts, out of mere laziness and inquietude, which made him fear fatigue.

The queen encourag'd him to maintain the royalty as long as she liv'd ; but after her death his authority not being great enough to vindicate his marrying to his own liking, his former disgust of it return'd : add to all this his devotion, which, notwithstanding he gave himself strange liberties, was very singular, and fixed him at length in his resolutions to quit the crown.

When he had resigned the sovereign power, he told me, he intended to go to *France* and marry my daughter there ; but I had not time to see whether he was sincere in his designs.

My daughter was so concern'd at the obstacles that lay in the way to her marrying the king, and his weakness in resigning his crown, that she fell sick, and whatever medicines were made use of in order to her cure, she dy'd a month after his resignation. What was wonderful in the story of her fate, and her brother's, is, that he was much about the same time taken ill of a distemper very like to his sister's, and survived her two days only ;
whether

whether it was his tenderness for her that had such a surprising effect, or whether that being twins there was so great sympathy of temper between them, that one could not live without the other : thus it happen'd, and indeed it had been observed, that even to their last sickness, when one of them was ill the other would be so almost at the same time.

Their death troubled me on several accounts ; I lost the support I had from them in *Poland*, and the advantages I made of their estate, which was considerable, and fell to their mother's relations : but this was not my greatest grief. My friendship and tenderness for them made their loss the more sensible to me ; and I could not, without inexpressible sorrow, see two children of such great hopes, die so immediately one after another. I should have been griev'd had I not been their father ; for every body lamented their untimely fate.

The king was inconsolable, and I had reason to believe he never mean'd to deceive us ; but would have marry'd my daughter if it had depended solely on his own choice. He begged me not to leave him, but to live with him in the retired life he was about to lead. He believed I should be the more willing to agree to this, because he saw I had no great reason to be fond of the world ; and besides, he had chosen *France*, for the place of his retirement. But my time of retiring from the world was not yet come, and I was born to experience still other inconstancies of fortune. I was not even yet quite wean'd from women, and heaven permitted me to fall into new misfortunes on their account.

I saw no great security for me in following the fortune of king *Casimir* ; and whatever inclination I had to retire, I thought I should never like it in the company of a prince who was always uncertain in his resolution about it. I foresaw what would happen ; I mean, that as soon as he should be settled in *France*, the desire of reigning would come upon him again ; and doubting whether he would ever be able to remount the throne, after having made a formal renuntiation, I could see nothing sure in engaging with him, but a life of the greatest trouble and incertitude, from which I could not promise my self the repose I sought after.

The

The reputation I had in *Poland*, where I commanded a considerable body of troops till the death of *Lubomirski*, who did not long survive the queen, inclined me to hearken to the propositions of the new king *Michael*, who offer'd to continue me in the same command if I would serve him. I readily accepted of his proposals, and stay'd in *Poland*, where I had good cause to be satisfy'd with the treatment I met with in the new king's court.

He was no sooner on the throne, than he had thoughts of demanding the empress's sister, the princess *Leonora Maria*, in marriage; and before he sent an ambassador to *Vienna*, he would have me go thither *incognito*, not only to prepare things for the success of the marriage, but also to negotiate the restitution of some lands which belong'd to his family, and which the emperor had seiz'd: I again ow'd the choice which was made of me for this marriage, to the reputation I had a long time of being us'd to negotiate matters in foreign courts.

That of *Vienna* having thought of marrying the princess *Leonora Maria* to king *Casimir*, before his abdication, I found no difficulty on the emperor's part in that affair. But I had work enough to dispose the princess to consent to it. She loved prince *Charles* of *Lorrain*, and was belov'd by him, and she could not look favourably on those that were employ'd to promote her marrying another.

Hitherto I have shewn how my inclination towards the sex has frequently prejudic'd my fortune when I was in love: what more remain'd for me to experience was, whether without being in love with them, the desire only of being useful and agreeable to them might not be attended with dangerous consequences. Of this I was at that time convinc'd; for, as if it had been decreed that women should occasion all my misfortunes, this unhappy journey to *Vienna*, and the knowledge I had of this princess's affection for prince *Charles*, engaged me in a business that occasioned my leaving *Poland* once more, when my fortune was in a flourishing condition.

I was four days at *Vienna* before I could see the princess; she pretended to be sick, that she might not give me audience, and hear talk of the marriage I came to propose; it was in vain for me to demand it of her, I

was

was always answered, that she saw no body. One evening as I was going late out of the court, I happened to walk out of my way on a terrass-walk which led to several apartments; not knowing which path was the right, I step'd into one which I thought would put me in my way. I found I was still in the wrong, and seeing no body where I was, I was about returning the same way that I came, but as I pass'd by a closet, I heard some persons talking; I listen'd, and distinguished a woman's voice, who spoke these words, which seem'd to be accompanied with tears: no, you cannot love, since you can resolve to part with me. Rather let me die than hear such fatal advice from you: I am resolv'd; and death is more agreeable than the marriage to which you have the cruelty to advise me to consent.

Being unacquainted with the voice, I could not imagine who it was that spoke; but I was soon satisfy'd when I heard him to whom she address'd the discourse: I knew prince *Charles's* voice, and that increas'd my curiosity. I perceiv'd he was with the princess, and by their discourse I discovered her repugnancy to her marrying with the king of *Poland*: I could not doubt but they lov'd one another, and I was sorry that I was employ'd to cross their loves by the marriage I came to negotiate.

This occasion'd me to have a real concern for the princess; I retir'd, resolving to be my self assisting to have the proposals with which I was charged refus'd: and I had such a veneration for the fair sex, that I had rather pass for an ill agent, than prevent the consummation of love so far advanc'd.

I told prince *Charles* my resolutions, but I found him wiser than I was: he said there was no probability of breaking off the match; the emperor being obstinately bent upon it, and the princess must obey him.

He was not wanting to testify his acknowledgments of my zeal for his service; and assured me he would let the princess know how much I was her friend and his, that for the future she might make no difficulty to give me audience.

The prince recommended me to her, as one of his old friends whom he had known in *France*. He related to her how I had overheard them, and my design to obstruct her match with the king of *Poland*, in favour of them; which made her as willing to admit me to her presence as she before had been averse.

I had audience of her the next day. She discoursed with me a good while about prince *Charles*, and then turned our conversation on the king of *Poland*: I had such a desire to please her, that I told her, as if I had been a prophet, that the king could not live long; that he was very sickly, and doubted not if she became queen of *Poland* by marrying him, she would soon be a widow, and in a condition to give that crown to whom she should think most deserving.

She listen'd to me, as if I had indeed a spirit of prophesy: so ready are lovers to entertain any opinion that flatters their wishes. This sweetned the necessity she was in, to consent to the marriage I came to propose; and ever after she had a particular kindness and value for me.

The *Polish* ambassador arrived; and the marriage articles were soon after signed. The princess departed from *Vienna*; and the king, her husband, met her at *Czestokowa*, where their marriage was consummated. My prophesy proved true, king *Michael* dy'd within three years after his marriage. I had declared my self too much to be of the queen's party, not to make all my interest for prince *Charles*, when he stood candidate for the crown of *Poland* at the next election; and spared for nothing to hinder the election of the great marshal. My endeavours to hinder him from succeeding to the crown were too well known; for which the great marshal look'd upon me as his enemy; and being chosen king of *Poland*, I saw it would be my best way to retire from thence. I left *Poland* with the queen dowager, who offered me a handsome retreat at *Vienna*, where she soon after was married to prince *Charles*.

It is true, if I had not espoused this princess's interest, I might have been as much in king *Sobieski's* favour, as I had been in his two predecessors. And all my female intrigues had never made me guilty of a greater fault than

this, viz. my unfortunate zeal for the princess *Leonora Maria's* service. I verily believe, if a man would rise in the world, he must never have any thing to do with women, since the most pure friendship makes one sometimes take such ill measures.

I had been settled in *Poland* about eight years, when I found my self obliged to leave the kingdom. I had several posts that help'd me to recover my self from that mean condition I was in when I came last into *Poland*; and I was rich enough to be above want, let my inclination lead me to seat my self in any place whatever. This was all the advantage I got by living there so long; but I confess had I loved riches and honour, I should never have forgiven my self; the necessity I being under, through my own weakness, to leave a court wherein there was no employ to which I might not pretend.

The reader will easily imagine, that while I was in *Poland*, I had other intrigues besides those I have mentioned; because I have said I was still the same man. But they were so much like some others, that I have before related, it would be tiresome to him to read them. My *Heidelberg* mistress died a year before I came away; nobody knowing to the last minute of her life who she was: she went out of the world as she lived in it, believing she was the daughter of some great prince. It is sometimes an advantage to persons not to know what they are. They have a right by it to make themselves what they please; and after all, it is no strange thing that a woman who did not know the true quality of her parents, should pretend to have such illustrious ones; since others, who cannot be ignorant of the meanness of their descent, pass for persons of quality, even before such as have true knowledge of their birth.

I staid at *Vienna* scarce three months; it was less the love of my country, than that of women, which made me return to *France*. The remembrance of the adventures of my youth, gave me hopes that I should find out more agreeable intrigues there than elsewhere: I forgot I was fifty, and to say truth, it is very rare for a man who would always be young, to remember how old he is.

How-

However, every thing might have put me in mind of my age; I found the women I lov'd formerly so altered in ten years time, that I could scarce believe I had ever thought them agreeable. All my old friends in the army were dead, or so old, that they were unservicable; persons that I left at the colledge were settled in the world, some of them marry'd, others advanc'd, and these were the only men the ladies talk'd of: they hardly remembered those that were of my age. In short, whatever I saw shewed me my youth was gone; yet I could not bring my self to believe it: for true it is, that by the mere force of desiring to pass for a young person, I perswaded my self continually that I was so; and I stood in need of much reflection to convince my self of that which I better knew than any thing else, I mean, the number of my years.

Nothing was so pleasant to me as to hear it said, I was not at all changed, and that I look'd as well as I did at the age of five and twenty. This put me upon doing what I had done at that age; and I should have been sorry if any diversions had been propos'd, and I had not a share of them. It was not only by imitating the manners of young men that I endeavoured to prevail with the world to think me young; I spared no pains or art to mend my complexion, and give my self a youthful air: I am ashamed to report what I did to succeed in putting this cheat on the world.

In a word, therein consisted my folly, and I should have look'd upon those that dared to say I was fifty to be my greatest enemies. I would not be thought to be above thirty five or forty; it was only to my best friends that I cut off but five or six years of my age, and seem'd to tell it them as a secret; for to those that I did not know, I pretended to be thirty-eight or thirty nine years old, and sometimes even less than that.

How many gentlemen might I name here who were as great fools as my self on this account. It is folly indeed, and deserves no other name, when persons are fond of passing for younger than they really are.

I did it that I might not blush at my weakness for the sex; and I believe had there been no women in the world, I should have pass'd for a person of fifty years of

age in all companies. On any other account I was reasonable enough, and did not push my extravagance so far as some men I knew, who will never agree to their age, because they cannot think of dying; and hope to put off death by dint of saying and believing that they are young.

As soon as I arrived at *Paris* I went to court; and I endeavoured to renew my acquaintance with some of my old friends, to engage them to help me to some employment: it was the same year that monsieur *de Turenne* died; and I had more reason than any man to be sorry for the loss of him; for I am satisfy'd, had he liv'd, he would not long have suffered me to be out of business. I had now no friend to assist me, and I saw it was in vain for me to expect any post in the army. What mortification was it to me at the same time that I was not permitted to serve as a volunteer, to see the honour of marshal of *France* conferred on officers who enter'd into the service when I did. I then deplored more than ever my unhappy fate, and all the time I had lost in my amours; without which I verily believe I had made my way to preferment as well as any of them.

It was now too late, and all my troubles did me no good; I endeavoured to comfort my self by my pleasures for the obstacles I met with in making my fortune. The more I saw that all the ways that led to my advancement were shut up, the more I conceived it was to no purpose to make reflections on what might be the cause of it. There was no remedy for the cure of my disease; and if I had had the courage to correct and amend my self, I should not have had a better reception at court. These misfortunes of mine ought to be a warning to all men how far they suffer themselves to be misled by their passions; for in time it will be in vain for them to know their errors: they will be past any desire of reforming, when they find a reformation would be of no advantage to them.

I left off therefore frequenting the court, and confined my self to the amusements and pleasures of the town; and renouncing for ever ambition and interest, I fell to gallantry and gaming. I form'd to my self certain false
 † principles

principles suitable to the laziness of my life, and my inclination to women. I was a perfect philosopher in all things else, and look'd down with pity on all those who sacrificed their ease and pleasure to their glory.

But this philosophy was not strong enough to defend me against the disquiets that are inseparable from the passions to which I gave way; and whatever principles I had formed in my mind to condemn all things, I found they yet affected me. I became persuaded that neither reason nor philosophy can render a man happy: and those that follow their pleasures lead a life of as much agitation, as those who renounce them to seek after glory.

I was dazzled at first with the pompous appearance of the assemblies for play. The society, or rather the familiarity I enter'd into with persons of the highest quality; the passion with which the ladies loved gaming, sending to me every day to make one amongst them; the fine entertainments that were given in those houses where gaming flourished; the hope of gain, and the sight of so much money that I always beheld in heaps, made me lead a life, for some time, in which I had not leisure to reflect on any thing else, besides what flatter'd my present disposition. But when I found I lost my money, that the familiarity of the great, and the love of the ladies, was founded only in the desire of stripping me, I abandon'd that wretched conversation, left gaming, and returned again to gallantry and love.

The young people, at my return to *France*, were quite alter'd from what they were in my time; there were no longer such things to be found among them as politeness or civility; wine and debauchery were the predominant passions: if they made love, it was so brutishly, that those women who had the least notion of delicacy, had much ado to bear with them; which made me believe that my age would not do me so much prejudice with those I address'd to, as I before had reason to fear. Besides, that I was very careful to hide it, I was very civil and polite as possible I could be; and had so good an opinion of the ladies, to believe they would prefer a man of my age, polite and civil, to young lovers rude and brutal.

This opinion gave me the confidence to court those women who had most youth, merit and beauty, and after several intrigues which are not worth relating, I happened to meet with a young lady in whom I thought I found all those qualities. This being the last adventure of my life, and that which served most to make me weary of the world, and to determine to a retirement, I shall be more particular in the story.

I had bought an estate that had always belonged to our family, and was sold by a decree: I had built upon it, and made it so pleasant and convenient that I delighted to spend best part of the year there. I laid out most of my ready money in the purchase, and useful repairs on the mansion-house: but having no ambition, and being willing to live like a philosopher, I thought my self rich enough in the income of my new estate.

My œconomy, and the care I had to spend nothing but what was necessary for my credit, got me the reputation of a rich man: it was said I must have heaped up a prodigious quantity of wealth in *Poland*, or else I could not have been able to make such a purchase, lay out so much ready money, and live so handsomely as I did: for these reasons I was thought a very good match.

I have already made mention in these memoirs that I had been twice marry'd, and therefore had no mind to enter into a marriage state a third time, which made me reject all the proposals that were made on that head.

In the neighbourhood of my late purchas'd estate there liv'd a lady of quality, who had been a widow some years, and whose husband had left her one daughter whom she bred up at home; they were not very rich, their mannor, as well as mine, being their all.

This lady, whom I shall call the countess of *Spinebal*, no sooner saw me settled in her neighbourhood than she began to endeavour to please me; and a little while after, she caused proposals of marriage to be made to me.

If I had not been unwilling to marry, I should have rejected that proposal from another motive; in truth I
had

had no inclination towards her ; not that she was old or wanted beauty, but I had seen her daughter, and believed I had never in my life seen any person so handsome.

She was a young lady, scarce eighteen years of age, of a fine shape, and the best air in the world ; her beauty was regular, her eyes and her hair were as black as jet, her complexion as white as snow. I told those that propos'd the mother to me, I might perhaps have listened to them had they named the daughter. They answer'd, I should have a care how I gave that for a reason of my refusal, it would make her mother my utter enemy for ever ; that the daughter had nothing, the estate being the countess's, and she might give it to whom she pleas'd ; that she was resolv'd to be marry'd again, hated her daughter, and was going to put her into a nunnery.

Upon hearing this I changed my tone, and loved this charming person so well, that I would not, by depriving her mother of all manner of hope, make her my enemy, and deprive my self of any opportunities of seeing her daughter. I told them therefore, since I perceived they were in earnest, they might tell the countess of *Spinebal*, that I had received the proposition with a great deal of acknowledgment : that I had not come to a resolution about marrying, but I had no repugnancy to it, and I hoped the thing might be brought about with time. They carry'd this answer to the countess, who was more zealous than ever to render herself agreeable to me, that she might shorten the time I demanded to think upon it.

We saw one another almost every day, but I seldom came at a sight of the daughter, so careful was the mother to hide her from me. I ask'd to see her : I could get no other answer, than that she was indispos'd. I durst not shew the earnest desire I had of the daughter's company, for fear of giving the mother cause of suspicion ; I therefore went from thence every day full of sorrow, contriving all the means I could invent to oblige the mother not to conceal her, but I could think of none ; and all my endeavours were thrown away upon it.

Her mother told me one day, that she had foreseen her daughter, who had no fortune, might be an obstacle to her marrying again, which had made her resolve to put her into a nunnery ; that her daughter did not at all dislike it ; that she was just now about to send her thither, she being to depart on the morrow morning. I was struck almost dead with the news, yet I dissembled my grief, and answered, that I was glad she had taken such precaution ; but I begged her at least to let me see her daughter before she took the veil, and take my leave of her.

I said these words with a countenance so resolute and gay, that her mother never mistrusted on what account I desired this of her : she sent for her daughter and presented her to me ; she was in a garb suitable for those that enter into a convent, and such as she was to wear there till she became a nun. Yet how lovely did she look ! in this innocent dress sorrow was painted on her cheeks in the most beautiful colours, and I found she was sensible of the sacrifice her mother was about to make of her. I perceived I was far gone in love, and never hated her mother so heartily as I did now.

Well, madam, said I, will you leave us ? I looked on her so languishingly when I spoke, that had she taken notice of it she might have discover'd my love. She made no answer ; but cast such mournful looks upon me, that from that minute I resolved to attempt any thing to hinder her obeying her mother.

The mother seeing her daughter did not say a word, and that she appear'd sorrowful, ordered her to withdraw, saying, she would not force her against her will. I took hold of this opportunity to convince her, that if she would not put a constraint upon her daughter, she must not make a nun of her ; and that I was sure by the manner of her behaviour, she would never go into a convent unless she was constrain'd to do it. I said every thing I could on this subject, which I thought was likely to persuade the mother that she would be unjust and cruel to deal so by her daughter. I gave her instances of the judgments which had fallen on fathers and mothers for treating their children so cruelly. In short, I
omitted

omitted nothing that might reach her conscience, should she have no remains of tenderness left for so amiable and lovely a child.

She reply'd, she was oblig'd to this, the posture of her affairs being such, that she had reason to fear no body would marry her while she was incumber'd with this daughter. Alas! madam, said I, do you think if you do me the honour to have thoughts of me, that I will make use of this as an argument against giving my consent? quite contrary, the first covenant I make with you about our marriage shall be, that your daughter may live with us. Why then, said the countess, glad of this opportunity to make me come to the point, do not you return your answer to the proposals that have been made to you? for I must freely own, those who propos'd my marrying of you had my orders for it. She blush'd at making this declaration, and I seem'd in confusion. I had no inclination for her, nor indeed to marry again; but my love for her daughter oblig'd me to dissemble. I invented some false excuses for not answering the propositions before; and in the end, believing I could not otherwise prevent her sending away her daughter to a convent, I gave her hopes of marrying her.

I had no sooner given her these hopes, than she began again the discourse about her daughter, representing to me, that I ought not to oppose her design of making a nun of her. She said, we were not both of us rich enough to encumber our selves with her out of a compliment, and deprive the children, we might have of half her estate. I reply'd, I oppos'd it only because I saw the young lady was averse to it; that I would not consent to it till I had examin'd her vocation, and if I found she had a sufficient call, I would join in the execution of her designs.

The countess of *Spinthal* answered, it was imprudent to examine her daughter, since of an hundred persons that were put into nunneries, there was not one who was so sufficiently called, as to stand such an examination in the opinion of a sensible man; that in such cases one ought a little to go beyond the text, since those girls who have the least call to religion, when once they

Her mother told me one day, that she had foreseen her daughter, who had no fortune, might be an obstacle to her marrying again, which had made her resolve to put her into a nunnery ; that her daughter did not at all dislike it ; that she was just now about to send her thither, she being to depart on the morrow morning. I was struck almost dead with the news, yet I dissembled my grief, and answered, that I was glad she had taken such precaution ; but I begged her at least to let me see her daughter before she took the veil, and take my leave of her.

I said these words with a countenance so resolute and gay, that her mother never mistrusted on what account I desired this of her : she sent for her daughter and presented her to me ; she was in a garb suitable for those that enter into a convent, and such as she was to wear there till she became a nun. Yet how lovely did she look ! in this innocent dress sorrow was painted on her cheeks in the most beautiful colours, and I found she was sensible of the sacrifice her mother was about to make of her. I perceived I was far gone in love, and never hated her mother so heartily as I did now.

Well, madam, said I, will you leave us ? I looked on her so languishingly when I spoke, that had she taken notice of it she might have discover'd my love. She made no answer ; but cast such mournful looks upon me, that from that minute I resolved to attempt any thing to hinder her obeying her mother.

The mother seeing her daughter did not say a word, and that she appear'd sorrowful, ordered her to withdraw, saying, she would not force her against her will. I took hold of this opportunity to convince her, that if she would not put a constraint upon her daughter, she must not make a nun of her ; and that I was sure by the manner of her behaviour, she would never go into a convent unless she was constrain'd to do it. I said every thing I could on this subject, which I thought was likely to persuade the mother that she would be unjust and cruel to deal so by her daughter. I gave her instances of the judgments which had fallen on fathers and mothers for treating their children so cruelly. In short, I
omitted

omitted nothing that might reach her conscience, should she have no remains of tenderness left for so amiable and lovely a child.

She reply'd, she was oblig'd to this, the posture of her affairs being such, that she had reason to fear no body would marry her while she was incumber'd with this daughter. Alas! madam, said I, do you think if you do me the honour to have thoughts of me, that I will make use of this as an argument against giving my consent? quite contrary, the first covenant I make with you about our marriage shall be, that your daughter may live with us. Why then, said the countess, glad of this opportunity to make me come to the point, do not you return your answer to the proposals that have been made to you? for I must freely own, those who propos'd my marrying of you had my orders for it. She blush'd at making this declaration, and I seem'd in confusion. I had no inclination for her, nor indeed to marry again; but my love for her daughter oblig'd me to dissemble. I invented some false excuses for not answering the propositions before; and in the end, believing I could not otherwise prevent her sending away her daughter to a convent, I gave her hopes of marrying her.

I had no sooner given her these hopes, than she began again the discourse about her daughter, representing to me, that I ought not to oppose her design of making a nun of her. She said, we were not both of us rich enough to encumber our selves with her out of a compliment, and deprive the children, we might have of half her estate. I reply'd, I oppos'd it only because I saw the young lady was averse to it; that I would not consent to it till I had examin'd her vocation, and if I found she had a sufficient call, I would join in the execution of her designs.

The countess of *Spincha* answered, it was imprudent to examine her daughter, since of an hundred persons that were put into nunneries, there was not one who was so sufficiently call'd, as to stand such an examination in the opinion of a sensible man; that in such cases one ought a little to go beyond the text, since those girls who have the least call to religion, when once they

are shut up in a convent, do their business there as well others ; and thus are most of our nuns made.

I argued against her, not only because I could not approve her maxims, but because I was willing to have some particular conversation with the daughter. Her mother was very willing I should have some discourse with her, provided she was present all the while. I represented to her, that her daughter could not speak her mind freely in her presence, and to satisfy my self in the matter, I must have no body by when I talk'd with her, that she might have liberty to open herself without restraint, I had much ado to bring the countess of *Spinthal* to consent to this private conference with her daughter ; not that she had any suspicion of my love for her, but out of a desire to have her shut up in a religious house, and for fear that I should frustrate her intentions. At length she agreed to it, and promised to defer the departure of her daughter till I had talk'd with her about it.

I was so impatient to open my mind to this lovely creature, and was so fearful that her mother, notwithstanding her promise, would send her away the next day, that I would not put off my discourse a moment. It was yet early enough in the day to walk, and I proposed to the countess that her daughter and I might take two or three turns in the garden together before I went home. The countess ordered her to be called ; we went into the garden, I had the good fortune to be alone with her ; for the mother was happily diverted by some business which fell out at that instant, and hinder'd her from going abroad.

When young madam *Spinthal* and I were alone together, I look'd on her with a languishing air, and squeezing her by the hand, I told her that her heart was certainly insensible, since she could resolve to renounce the world for ever, where she might be sure that a crowd of adorers would pay their devotion to her. Alas ! sir, said she, who will be troubled with me ? and are not you your self the cause of my being sent to a convent ? for my mother never positively resolved upon it till she had thoughts of marrying you. She look'd upon me with

with so much concern and tenderness when she spoke this, that I thought I could never have a better opportunity to discover my passion. Madam, said I to her, my time is precious, I fear every minute your mother will come and interrupt us, for it was with great difficulty I got leave of her to talk with you; hear me therefore with the utmost attention you are capable, and be so kind as to believe, that I will to my death maintain the truths I am going to relate to you. I adore you, and all my happiness depends on being belov'd by you, and in possessing you. I had not made an acquaintance with your mother, if I had not fallen in love with you the very minute I first saw you; she has made me proposals of marriage on her own account, which I have refus'd, only because I can never be any body's but yours. This day I made her a promise to marry her, but it was because I could not otherwise prevail with her to put off your departure any longer than till to-morrow: the terms I require of her, if I marry her, are, that she shall keep you at home, and never suffer you to be shut up in a nunnery. Young madam *de Spinebal* hearing me talk thus, look'd on me with more earnestness than before; and believing by my looks that I was sincere in what I said, she reply'd, ah! sir, if what you say is true, I may with more reason than ever affirm, that you will be the cause of my being sent to a convent; for if my mother should ever have the least suspicion that you love me, she would immediately force me to forsake the world; and if she should never find it out, is it not enough to make me put on the veil, to know that you love me, and are about to marry my mother?

Whatever idea I had of young madam *de Spinebal's* wit and merit, I did not expect to find in her so much as there was in this answer; I was charm'd, yet far from being astonish'd, that a young person should know so much already; I attributed only to the goodness of her nature, and the inclination I fancy'd she had for me, all that appeared delicate to me in her answer. Is it possible, said I, that your wit, and the sentiments of your mind, can be more engaging even than your beauty. Think well on what you have said to me.
 Shall

Shall I believe, that if I pretend to marry your mother you will be sorry for it ? if I may, I am the happiest of men : I am still my own master, and will never marry any one but you.

Just as I had made an end of speaking these words, I perceived the countess coming towards us ; she was so near I could not say any more on that subject ; I only told her daughter, I begged she would consider on what I had said, and then swore I would never be any body's but hers : but changing the discourse, I said aloud to her mother, she came upon us too soon, but however I knew enough of her daughter's mind, to be satisfy'd she was averse to a convent life. Her mother hearing this frown'd upon her ; the daughter held down her head, and making a low courtesy, said, she was ready to go when she pleased, and then withdrew.

The countess thereupon addressing her self to me, said cheerfully, well, sir, you have heard from her own mouth that she is ready to go. Is not that a sign of a sufficient call : I reply'd, no, madam, she has certainly no mind to be a nun ; and what she said was only out of respect to you. How, sir, did she tell you so, reply'd the countess ? I answered, no madam, but I am sure of it.

She then fell into a violent passion against her daughter, and behav'd herself in such a manner, that it gave me fresh indignation against so wicked a woman. I endeavour'd to appease her by arguments drawn from reason and conscience ; yet all that I could get from her was, that she saw her daughter's interests were dearer to me than her own ; and since I used her so, she could not believe I had any respect for her, without which we should be both miserable in our marriage. I answer'd, that the matter in dispute was not of the nature of those things in which complacency is allowable ; that her honour and her conscience equally obliged her not to sacrifice her daughter ; and it was I who had most reason to complain of her want of complacency, if she persisted in denying me the satisfaction I demanded.

When she found I continued to desire that she would keep her daughter at home a little while longer, she promis'd.

mis'd she would do so; and further, that nothing should be done in relation to her without my consent. I left her after she had given me this promise, and did not consider, that perhaps she might deceive me, so hasty was I to be alone that I might meditate at my ease on my conversation with young madam *de Spinebal*.

The more I reflected thereon, the more I flatter'd my self that she certainly had an inclination for me; and I could see nothing to the contrary in all her discourse. The terms her mother and I were upon, gave me no manner of disquiet; and I did not much hesitate about breaking my word with her: all the difficulty was how to get her daughter out of her hands, and to bring her to marry me without her mother's consent; for I had no repugnancy to marriage, as soon as I imagined that so lovely a person, with whom I was passionately in love, desired I would marry her.

I spent the night in contemplating on the pleasure of loving and being beloved; I was impatient to have day return, that I might go to the countess's hoping to meet with another opportunity to see her daughter, to assure her again than my heart was entirely her's, and concert measures for our marriage; but I was scarce up before I received this letter from her mother.

M*Y Daughter would go, and I was not so much her mistress as to be able to binder her. I never saw any body in my life more zealous. You see now that she told you she was not willing to enter a convent only to amuse you. It was in vain for me to desire her to put off her departure, she would not hearken either to my reasons or my tears; for I own, I could not help weeping to see her so obstinately bent on such a resolution: I hope you will come and comfort me.*

The first lines of this letter made such an impression on me, I could scarce read it through: I immediately got on horse-back, not to ride to the countess of *Spinebal's*, but to post after her daughter. I had heard what convent she was intended for, and hoped to meet her on the road, or to arrive there as soon as she.

I rode

I rode as fast as I could, and not meeting her on the way, I went to the nunnery, which was about nine leagues from my house. I was told she was not yet come; I supposed she had taken another road, and I stay'd for her coming. I asked for the abbess, and finding her to be a very discreet woman, I thought I might do well in prepossessing her with the countess of *Spinehal's* reasons for sending her daughter thither: I assured her I knew, from a very good hand, that the young lady had no manner of inclination for such a retired life; and that she obeyed her mother with great reluctance. The abbess thank'd me for my information, promising not to receive her if it was as I said.

In the mean while no young madam *de Spinehal* came; I waited for her all day to no purpose. Night coming on, and seeing there was no likelihood of her arrival, I began to suspect her mother had given me a false alarm; that her daughter was not departed, and that all she had done was to see how I would behave on this occasion. I mounted my horse again, forbidding my servants to say a word of my journey to the convent; and gave out, when I return'd home, that I had business elsewhere. I arrived at my house about break of day, I rested an hour or two, and then went to wait on the countess. I told her I could not come sooner, having been engaged all the day before at a neighbour's about an urgent affair: and with an air of indifference I added, well, madam, your daughter is gone then. I was very well satisfy'd in my self she was not, or else I should not have been so much my own master.

The countess answered, yes, sir, she went the minute I sent you word of it. I believed she still had a mind to try me, I affected to seem very little concerned; however the thing was but too true, and there was no daughter to be seen any more at her house. I ask'd whether she had sent her to the convent for which she always design'd her? she reply'd, she had not; her daughter having chosen another, and when she went away, earnestly intreated her never to tell me to what nunnery she was gone, because she was not willing to hear what I had to say to dissuade her from it. I imagin'd the countess put
these

these words into her daughter's mouth, and that it was she who was not willing that I should know what was become of her. I kept the sorrow and surprize I was in still to my self, and said to the countess, since things were gone so far, there was no need of making any more words about her. However I spared no pains in the endeavour to get out of her where her daughter was gone; but it was impossible for me to learn any thing by my inquiries. I put my servants on examining her's, and they were as unsuccessful with them; none of her domesticks knew any thing of the matter.

I return'd to my house very melancholy, and the next day sent to all the monastries in the kingdom, to learn news of young madam *de Spinebal*, but I could make no discovery. I went no more to her mother's; she was surpris'd, and often sent to desire to see me. I excused my self at first on several pretences; but at last I gave her to understand that I would be no more troubled with her visits and letters: I could never bring my self to marry, or even to visit her, after she had dealt so unhandsoinely by me, and so unnaturally by her daughter; that I was still satisfy'd she had sacrificed her; and the little notice she had taken of my advice on that occasion, was a warning to me not to venture on a woman who set up for governing before marriage. Besides I had no great inclination to have a third wife, and not much money to tempt her. The countess came to see me two or three days after I sent her that letter, and addressing her self seriously to me, she said, she was willing to deliver with her own hand a letter her daughter had sent me, by which I should be convinc'd of the injustice of my reproaches. I took the letter very hastily, and read as follows.

DO not give your self any trouble, sir, to inquire where I am. You shall not know it till I have taken the veil. I saw by my conversation with you, that you were an obstacle to what heaven required of me; and if I shew'd any aversion to the life I am about to embrace, it was only to get rid of you the more easily. My mother had no share in my resolutions, and as such you ought to continue

tinue your esteem for her ; I even conjure you, from the bottom of my heart, not to defer the accomplishment of your former purposes, and I shall every day pray heaven to give them a blessing.

I had never seen young madam *de Spinebal's* hand, yet I believed, when I read the letter, that it was fictitious ; or if she wrote it, that she was forc'd to it. I discover'd my thoughts to the countess ; she was in a violent passion with me thereupon, and we parted very much dissatisfy'd with each other. Three or four days afterwards I let her know my affairs would not permit me to marry again.

This woman, who had a love for me, threaten'd to make me repent the breaking my promise with her : and I understood she had discovered some papers, which she intended to make use of to deprive me of my estate, in setting some sharpening lawyers upon me ; who pretended part of my estate belonged to them, for some old mortgage with which it was incumber'd, and which had been made over to them.

I should have been ruin'd if they had depriv'd me of this part of my estate they pretended to have a right to : and being very little acquainted with such intricate affairs, I was afraid of falling into the hands of such villainous fellows. I lost no time in asking counsel whether their pretensions were well founded, and went immediately to *Paris* to consult about this law-suit.

The only thing I wanted to make me quite weary of the world was a suit of law. I went to council, and tho' they assured me my adversaries pretensions were unjust, yet they told me I had great reason to be apprehensive of some trick. It startled me to hear what a prodigious number of declarations and pleas, bills and answers I must go through with, to get the better of my adversaries, and how much money it would cost me ; and the countess having underhand acquainted me, that if I would marry her, she would put me in a way to clear my self of them all. I thought it convenient to hearken again to her propositions ; for as odious and vexatious as a marry'd life is, a tedious and litigious suit of law appear'd to me still more intollerable.

I had

I had not all this while forgot young madam *de Spinebal*, whom I loved as much as ever. I had read the letter her mother gave me from her above a hundred times over, and was always fully perswaded that either she did not write it, or did it by constraint.

As great a desire as I had to possess her, I was always so delicate in my passion, that to deliver her from a condition of life to which I knew she had an aversion, I could resolve even to marry her mother. This obliged me, when we talked again of our marriage, to require the countess *de Spinebal* to send for her daughter home. She engag'd to satisfy me therein, and promis'd, that as soon as we were marry'd, I should have a sight of her, and she should not be a nun. I insisted on seeing her first, and promised on my honour to consummate our marriage as soon as I saw her daughter.

This must be owned to be an heroick action, to give the mother an assurance of marriage, only to have the satisfaction to free her daughter from such miserable bondage. I loved her well enough to prefer her interests to my own, and believing the marriage would clear my hands of a troublesome law-suit, I found a double convenience in it, *viz.* to oblige my mistress, and settle my own affairs. But the issue of this affair will prove, that the last consideration weigh'd little in comparison with the first.

While I stay'd at *Paris*, and was disputing with the countess *de Spinebal*'s agents about the conditions without which I was resolv'd not to conclude our marriage, I received a letter from that lady, wherein she inform'd me that she was in despair, the death of her daughter having put it out of her power to give me the satisfaction I desired; that the poor girl dy'd four days before, and her death was attributed to her too fervent zeal for the austerities of her religion.

Is she dead? cry'd I, when I read the letter; it is not the austerities of a religious life that caus'd it, it is her mother's cruelty, and can I marry her after this? no, let me be ruin'd first, she shall never be my wife.

I return'd no answer to the countess *de Spinebal*'s letter, I was too much taken up by the extream grief that seiz'd
me

me on this sad news. I was afflicted to death, and could never put the mournful image of this amiable person out of my mind, fancying I saw her dying of grief and despair, in a condition quite contrary to her inclinations.

I told the countess *de Spinehal's* friends that I should think no more of the marriage; that my cause was good, and that I would spend the last penny I had in the world in defending it. The countess *de Spinehal* by this time had found out that I was in love with her daughter; she had also heard that I had sought after her in a convent, whither I thought she would be sent; the abbess, to whom I related her daughter's case, having given her information of my visit and discourse.

I heard no more talk of her afterwards; *September* came on, and my cause was put off till *Martinmas*, by which means I had leisure to return home. I was so melancholy, that I took pleasure in endeavouring to find out any the least occasion to divert my thoughts. An old kinsman of mine was governor of a city in the province of *Anjou*, I resolv'd to pay him a visit in my way home; I stay'd with him some time, and one day going out of the church of a nunnery in that city, at which we had been at mass together, a servant belonging to the convent whisper'd me in the ear, that there was a person belonging to that convent who had seen me at church, and desired she might speak with me. I ask'd where she was? and leaving my kinsman, I was conducted by the servant into a parlour, where I found a nun, who ask'd me, without throwing up her veil, whether I knew the countess *de Spinehal's* daughter? I demanded, with some concern, if she herself knew her. Alas! sir, said she, I had reason to know her, since she dy'd in my arms. She talk'd so much of you, that knowing you were here, made me have the curiosity to see you. Ah! madam, said I, to whom do you speak? know you, madam, how dearly I lov'd young madam *de Spinehal*? I could not forbear weeping, and immediately upon saying these words, I fell backwards into a chair that was near me. The nun reply'd, however, sir, the poor young lady complain'd of you for not letting her hear from you; and nothing troubled

troubled her so much as that you should forget her. She likewise told me the discourse that pass'd between ye the day before she came hither ; and she expected that you would at least have inform'd your self what was become of her. I then told the nun all that I had done to find out the place she was gone to ; and that when I heard the news of her death I was even about to marry her mother, purely to hinder her being shut up in a convent. That was not the way, said the nun, to please the countess *de Spinebal's* daughter ; it is well she is dead, for she certainly would never have forgiven your marrying her mother. I perceive, said I, to the nun, that young madam *de Spinebal* conceal'd nothing from you ; and what you say agrees so well with what she told me her self, that you must be acquainted with all her thoughts. She made answer, yes, sir, I knew all the secrets of her soul, and will tell you, if it will be any pleasure to you, that it was only the little hopes she had of being your's, that determin'd her to put on the veil. She thought of you at her last gasp, and when she dy'd, she left me a small present which she begged of me to give to you if ever I should happen to see you ; I will go and look for it, and am very well assured you will have as great a love for that as you could have for her. The nun went out, desiring me to stay a moment. I meditated with pleasure on her last words : what can this present be, said I to my self, which I shall love as well as her ? is it not that young madam *de Spinebal* is not dead, and it is she her self whom she is gone to fetch ? I never was so agitated in my life ; and the more I flatter'd my hopes, the more I fear'd to be disappointed.

The nun came back, and asked me, smiling, what I would give her for the present she was going to make me ; and then turning her self about to the parlour door said, enter madam ; come out of your grave.

It is impossible to express the motions of my soul at that instant. I saw young madam *de Spinebal* enter. My tears, my sighs, my joy, and my transport, depriv'd me of the use of my speech ; the use of my eyes only was left, and I was yet afraid lest they deceived me. Though young madam *de Spinebal* was almost in the same condition

dition as I was, yet her seeing me thus help'd to recover her; and having sooner than I the liberty of her tongue, she told me, she rejoiced to see me so sensible of any that had respect to her; and that the news of her death had afflicted me so much, as to give me joy at finding her alive.

I will not enter into the detail of our conversation. She said she had heard what her mother had wrote to impose upon me, and that she was about to send to *Paris* to undeceive me; but was glad fortune had help'd her to a more agreeable means of informing me of the truth. She was amaz'd to hear I had received any such letter from her as her mother gave; and we perceiv'd it was an artifice which she made use of to deceive me that I might forget her daughter. She related to me in what manner her mother sent her away; that she her self knew not to what convent she was going; that she could never bring her self to think of taking the veil; that her mother was in despair about it, and would never let her hear from her; that she had been told she was shortly to be marry'd to me, and then she would be sent for home. I gave her to understand what reasons I had for giving her mother these hopes: she reply'd she wonder'd how I could resolve on such an extremity, and ask'd if I was not my own master, and might not marry whom I pleas'd: I talked to her of the law-suit which had been stirred up against me, and I perceived by the little notice she took of it, that the young lady had more resolution than I; for she said plainly, that if I loved her, I should think only of her, and not value what her mother and my adversaries could do to me.

Now it was that I became convinc'd that my youthful days were over; for tho' I heartily loved young madam *de Spinehal*, yet I did not care to bring my self into trouble by marrying her; and my experience of the ill consequence of those engagements in which we only consult our passions, ballanc'd a little the precipitation of my desires.

I assured young madam *de Spinehal* I would marry no body but her; that I would endeavour to succeed in such a manner that neither her reputation nor mine might suffer

fer by it : however, in case I should not be able to bring matters about as I desir'd, yet I promis'd to marry her at all hazards. We then concerted measures, how to write to one another, and agreed that no body should know I had seen her.

I could not however refrain speaking of her to my kinsman ; I believed young madam *de Spinebal*, living in a town of which he was governor, he might be serviceable to her. I recommended her to his protection in my absence, and inform'd him of the terms we were upon, telling him that I regarded her as a person who was to be my wife. He promis'd to visit her, and that she should command every thing in his power. I saw the young lady once more, and having taken my leave of her went home.

The countess *de Spinebal* presently had information that I had seen her daughter ; and fearing I might take her from the convent, she sent persons to fetch her home, though in truth her orders were to carry her to another convent. Young madam *de Spinebal* receiving this order from her mother refused to obey it, and made use of the authority of the governor to prevent it's being put in execution. He had seen her several times after my departure, but instead of talking to her on my behalf he spoke for himself. He grew in love with her, and propos'd to marry her. He was so old I could never have mistrusted he would play me such a trick.

He told those whom the countess *de Spinebal* had sent for her daughter, that he could not permit them to take her away from him, for he was going to marry her ; and wrote at the same time to the countess her mother to ask her consent ; adding, if she refused it he would however marry her ; for the thing was now gone too far to be broke off.

The countess *de Spinebal* had in this a fair occasion to be revenged on me, if she would improve it : she need only give her consent to the governor's marrying her daughter, or let him do it without telling me any thing of the matter ; but she was less afraid of my seeing my mistress than of her daughter's marrying. She sent me the old governor's letter, and with it one of her own, signifying, that she would do nothing in the affair without consulting me.

She

She knew very well, that since I was so much in love with her daughter, I should readily join with her in the endeavour to hinder this marriage, and that was all she wanted.

I cannot express the passion I was in at hearing how the governor had betray'd me; and my astonishment that I had no news upon this occasion from young madam *Spinebal*: I return'd no answer to the countess's letter, but went immediately to hinder my old kinsman's marrying my mistress; I arriv'd at his seat where he liv'd, and appear'd as if I was come again to visit him in return from *Paris*: I said nothing to him, nor he to me, of his intended marriage; he thought I had not known any thing of it, and entertained me very kindly. I ask'd him what news of young madam *de Spinebal*; he told me, he knew not any, for he could never come to the sight of her, the superior of the convent having lately received orders from her mother to let no body see her. I mistrusted what reason he had to talk thus, and went to satisfy my self further from her own mouth. When I came to the convent I ask'd for her, and was told she was not to be spoke with. I desired to speak with the nun with whom I had seen her; she came and inform'd me that young madam *de Spinebal* was to be marry'd to the governor in two days time; that the articles were signed and sealed, and she would see no person till then. I likewise inquir'd whether she had no repugnancy to this marriage, and if she had forgot me; the nun answered, I ought to know the inconstancy of women; that she believ'd young madam *de Spinebal* continu'd to have a respect and kindness for me; but that having told her my self that there were many difficulties lying in the way to my marrying her, she did not think fit to prefer an uncertain settlement to this which has now offer'd; which, besides will be much more to her advantage than any thing she could propose to her self by marrying me.

I complain'd, I fell into a passion, I earnestly intreated the nun to endeavour that I might have a sight of young madam *de Spinebal* to hear my doom from her own lips; assuring her, if she was so resolv'd I would not oppose her marriage. The nun went, or made as if she
went

went to ask whether she would see me. A moment after she came back to tell me, she could not prevail with her to come, but that she had desired her to engage me, if I had yet any respect left for her, not to disturb a marriage, which in the present posture of affairs, was so necessary to secure her from the persecutions of her mother.

I believ'd the nun had been brib'd; and could never persuade my self that young madam *de Spinehal* was thus chang'd. I resolv'd if it was possible I would speak to her. I inquir'd first of the servant who brought me to the nunnery on which side her apartment was; and when I had the necessary informations of the place, I endeavour'd to find out a way to get into the convent without being perceiv'd by any one. I knew a gardener who used to work there every day: I found him out, and offer'd him money to carry me into the convent with him, disguis'd like his man, my money prevail'd, and putting on a frock, like his servant, I enter'd the nunnery with him, no body discovering who I was.

I was not so blind but I could see the folly for a man of my age to be guilty of such a weak inconsiderate action, which would hardly have been forgiven in a young man: I apprehended the danger I expos'd my self to if I had been discovered: and what an injury this disguise would have been to young madam *de Spinehal's* reputation; but as I had resolv'd to marry her, I was so far from seeing the ill consequences of my design, that I should not have been sorry even if I had been discover'd; because I believed after such a discovery young madam *de Spinehal* would, for more reasons than one, have been obliged to abandon all thoughts, of any other marriage.

I was scarce got into the garden before I espy'd her near me in a shady walk, with the nun who was her confidant; I made as if I was cutting the branches of the trees in a corner of that walk; I stay'd behind a bush, and seem'd to busy my self sometimes in clipping the hedges, sometimes in digging the earth, hoping from the place where I was to hear part of their conversation. They saw me, but taking me for the gardener's man they continu'd their walk and their discourse. I hear'd
enough

enough to understand young madam *de Spinebal* was not so much altered as they would have perswaded me ; for she seem'd much offended at the nun who was with her, because she would not let her see me. She told her, that it was to no purpose for her to say, that the marriage with the governor would be very advantageous to her ; that she should marry him much against her inclination, and believed she could be much more happy with me.

I was glad to hear her sentiments ; my love thereupon became more violent, and I fancy'd it was not impossible to find out an opportunity to hide my self in her chamber, for that was the only place where I believ'd I could talk to her without witnesses. I retired from the walk where they were discoursing, and staying some time longer in the garden, I inspected that part of the convent where I had been informed her apartment was ; I perceiv'd the door of a staircase that led me to it was open. I went in at this door, and up stairs without meeting any body ; and my good fortune would, that the first chamber these stairs led me to should be the chamber of young madam *de Spinebal*.

The door was latch'd. I open'd it and knew that it was her chamber by some cloaths which I had seen her wear ; but I was more fully convinc'd thereof, when going farther into the room I found a scrutoir open, where she had begun a letter, which I perceiv'd could be written to no body but my self. It contain'd these words.

T *Hough I am advised to forget you, I cannot bring my self to it ; and I must at least let you know, that if I give way to the reasons alledged to induce me to marry monsieur ———, it hath not been but after great struggles ; that I consent to this marriage only because you have not given me sufficient hopes of your's ; and finally that my heart will always be the same.*

There were after these several lines scratch'd out, the meaning of which I did not attempt to discover, because I had read enough to put in execution a thought which at that instant came into my head. I took up a pen and wrote the following on the same paper below her writing.

Is

I*f you only consent to the marriage propos'd to you, because I have not given you sufficient hopes that I will marry you, I am sure you will think of marrying no other person: for I swear, by all that is sacred, that I am ready to marry you.*

Having written these lines, I put the paper where I found it, and returned into the garden where she was still walking. I was not willing to stay longer in the chamber, not so much out of fear of being discover'd, as out of a desire to see what effect my writing would produce: I suppos'd if she lov'd me she would rejoice to find in such an extraordinary manner, that it would be owing to herself if she did not marry me; and that after this assurance she would have the courage and the constancy to defer at least the marriage with the governor, till she was satisfy'd of the sincerity of my protestation.

I went out of the convent with the gardener, who was so well pleas'd to find that no ill came of what he had done for me, that he promised to do as much whenever I would have him. I went home to my old rival, who ask'd from whence I came. I told him, from making a visit to one of his neighbours, who had informed me of a piece of news, which I should have been willing to have had from his own mouth; that I was glad to hear he was going to marry young madam *de Spinebal*; that he was in the wrong to hide it from me, for he might imagine in the present posture of my affairs, I could not, with any hopes of being happy, think of marrying her; and he could not please me more than in doing for her what I should have been glad to have done myself had it been in my power.

The good man believ'd I talk'd sincerely; and to pay my civility with another, he told me he had not entertain'd any thoughts of marrying young madam *de Spinebal*, without I should consent thereto; and since I approved of it, he invited me to the wedding, promising to carry me to her the next day. He was as good as his word: the next day we went to the convent, and inquired for her; nothing could have happen'd more lucky to my wishes. I long'd to see how she would behave

Q

her

her self towards me, and what effect the few lines I wrote at the bottom of her letter had upon her.

She came, and seem'd to me to appear with an air of content : the old governor told her he had acquainted me with their marriage ; that I expressed a great deal of satisfaction thereupon, and that he kept me to be at their wedding. She mistrusted that I dissembled with him, and answered, she suppos'd whenever she marry'd I should be at the wedding. She look'd upon me when she said these words, and I understood by it she had read my letter ; and by saying I should be at her wedding whenever she marry'd, she meant to let me know she expected I would marry her. We thus for some time kept up a conversation, of which she and I only knew the true meaning ; for tho' we seem'd to talk of the governor's marriage, we two meant our own. This was not enough to satisfy her curiosity, she was impatient to know how I came to write those lines underneath her own ; but the governor did not give us an opportunity to explain our selves ; all that she could do was, when we went out to ask me how long I had been a conjurer. I answered, if she would be on the morrow in her chamber, while the nuns were at chappel, I would make her acquainted with my witchcraft.

The next day I went to find out my gardener again. Having disguis'd my self as before, I enter'd the convent with him, and about the time I appointed young madam *de Spinebal* to see her, I went up to her chamber ; she was alone, and was as much amazed to see me as if I had been a spirit. I related how I before got into her chamber, and had over heard her discourse while she was walking with her friend in the garden. She then told me how she was surpriz'd to see my letter there ; that she mistrusted I had been in her chamber, but she would let no body know it, because the nuns earnestly press'd her to marry the governor, hoping that if she was his wife, it might be the better for them ; that they had no other reason for being against me. She assured me she should always have a value for me ; and tho' she had marry'd the governor, she should notwithstanding have still lov'd me. She asked me after this, what measures I intended to take in order to marry her. I told her

I knew

I knew of no other but to carry her off. This proposal did not please her, and she was disputing with her self, whether she should consent to it, when we were interrupted.

It was an old nun who came to see her. I could not hide my self, and the good woman was very much surpriz'd to find the gardener's man was in young madam *de Spinehal's* chamber; she said I had brought her some flowers; the old nun grumbled, and turn'd me out, threatening to complain of me, and to have me forbidden the house. Thus was I forc'd to withdraw, without being able to come to any conclusion with my mistress. However I doubted not she would find out excuses to break off her marriage with the governor.

The next day the gardener that introduced me into the convent, brought me a letter from young madam *de Spinehal*. He inform'd me the good mother who found me in my mistress's chamber had made a great noise at this adventure, and that he was order'd never to let me come into the convent more, and that himself was forbidden the house about it. The letter I receiv'd from young madam *de Spinehal* is as follows.

YOU are willing, out of friendship to me, to marry my mother, may not I hope, that out of the same consideration, you will let me marry monsieur de ———; think on it. The way you propos'd to me is very dangerous; and if you should succeed in carrying me off, you would not be the better for it: my mother will spare no pains to annul the marriage, because of its being so irregular; she would continue to prosecute you about your estate. In short, I cannot flatter my self that such a design would ever end happily, and I should be sorry to be the cause of all the troubles to which you may be exposed. I swear, that tho' I marry monsieur de ———, I will never cease loving you. He is so old he cannot live long, and if he dies I shall be in a condition to marry you without controul. I tell you freely my thoughts, and assure you, it is not without a great deal of difficulty that I resolve on this marriage: but in my opinion it is the best thing I can do for you and for my self. If I have not the pleasure of being your wife, I shall have the satisfaction of seeing you every day; and if you

take never so little care to deceive the good man, you may be as much his friend as his wife's. For heaven's sake let us not put all things to hazard to come together: we may love one another without that. Think how much this settlement is for my interest, and commiserate the misfortunes this will free me from, if it has your consent; for I will do therein only what you approve of, being desirous my fate should depend upon you.

If this had happen'd in the time of my youthful adventures, I should have believ'd the letter had been a sign of my mistress's changing her mind, and should have ventur'd every thing to hinder her purpose: but I was older, and I could not hide from my self that there was a great deal of reason in what she said: I was even pleas'd with it, and hop'd, if I was so courageous as to yield her up to another, she would find out a way to make me amends. In short, partly out of delicacy, partly out of reason, and partly from other more sensual motives, I resolv'd to consent to her proposals. It was the most advantageous match for her; and I thought it was not to love with delicacy enough to hinder her good fortune. This reason weigh'd most with me; the rest were of little consideration in comparison with her interests.

I wrote her all that was necessary to convince her of the delicacy and disinterestedness of my passion. She was charm'd with my manner of treating her, and in return was more kind and obliging than ever.

When I forbore crossing her marriage, it soon took effect, and she had the satisfaction also to marry with her mother's consent; for the countess *de Spinebal* hearing I was at my old kinsman's house, was so sure of my hindering the match, that she wrote word she would join in it. But she was strangely surpriz'd to hear her daughter marry'd him two days after she received her approbation; that I also was at the wedding, and endeavour'd to bring it about.

She was in despair at the news, and since it was too late to hinder her daughter's marrying, she resolv'd at least to deprive her of the quiet and comforts of a marry'd life; she found means to let the old governor know,
that

that in marrying her daughter he had marry'd a mistress whom I had given to him, only that I might see her and love her the more commodiously. This advice was but too liable to give him a jealousy of his wife, though it had come single; but every thing help'd to make him suspect me, and he at the same time heard of my getting into the convent, and that I was caught in young madam *de Spinebal's* chamber.

After this he could bear no longer his having been deceiv'd. I had notice he intended to have me murder'd. He was a passionate man, and I did not think it proper to expose my self to his violence, I left his house and return'd home, where I understood in what manner his jealousy made him use his wife. He lock'd her up, and scarce allow'd her necessaries. There was no kind of ill treatment that she did not experience.

Her sufferings mov'd me, and I resolv'd to deliver her from them. I saw no likelihood of coming at her, so as to carry her off from her husband's house; the enterprize was too dangerous for me, it would be certain ruin to my self, without serving the woman I would relieve. I thought it more prudent to proceed by law, and to procure a person to put in a petition to obtain separate maintenance for young madam *de Spinebal*, on account of the ill usage she met with from her husband. No body seem'd so proper as her mother to undertake it, and I believ'd she would do it if I once more propos'd to marry her. I was so mov'd by her daughter's sufferings, and lov'd her so heartily, that I believe I should certainly have marry'd her mother if I could not otherwise have assisted her; but the countess *de Spinebal* dy'd before I had any opportunity to propose the business to her; and the death of another person soon after made me suppose that the merit of my generosity would at last have its reward.

The death I mean was that of the old governor, who did not long survive the countess *de Spinebal*: he lived but about eighteen months after his marriage, and his wife at once came into possession of her mother's estate, and of the old governor's, which had been settled upon her in marriage: she was now so rich a widow, as to be look'd upon to be a very good match.

I was not one of the last that she heard from upon occasion of her husband's death. She wrote me word, that she had not forgot my services, and the promises she had made me : but the intrigue we had together had made so much noise, and all the world was so fully convinc'd of my being the cause of her troubles, and even the death of her husband, that it was not convenient I should so soon appear at her house: in the mean while she would give me a meeting at *Paris*, where she intended suddenly to be.

Her letter to me was accompany'd with a sufficient power to act in her name, in all the affairs that belong'd to her by the death of her mother, in the province where I liv'd. I put all things in order with so much the more care, as I believed what I did was for my self ; I look'd upon the mannor of *Spinebal* as an estate that would in a little while be my own ; not doubting but we should be marry'd as soon as we met at *Paris*. I did not arrive there till a month after her, the business she employ'd me about having kept me in the country till then. I had not heard from her lately ; but tho' I knew not the cause of her silence, I had no suspicion of her inconstancy.

My eldest brother dy'd about eleven or twelve months before, of the wounds he receiv'd at the siege of *St. Maur*, in the *Archipelago*, where he commanded the *Venetian* army. His death had been such a grief to me as to put me quite out of conceit with the world ; and I should have gone into a retirement then, had I not been detain'd by the affection I bore young madam *de Spinebal*. My brother left behind him a son, who was about four or five and twenty years of age ; and there were few men of his years who had more merit. He was very handsome, and had been in the *Venetian* service ever since he was fifteen: he was with his father at the siege of *St. Maur* in the *Archipelago*, and himself brought me the sad and melancholy news of my brother's death.

I was then at the old governor, my kinsman's house, where my nephew came to see me two or three days after the marriage of young madam *de Spinebal* : he saw her then, but I did not perceive he took any extraordinary liking to her, or she to him : however they fell in love with one another the minute they saw each other first ; and I was now the only obstacle in the way of their
loves,

loves, and the design they had taken to marry as soon as young madam *de Spinehal* was a widow.

They saw one another every day after she came to *Paris*, and their passion was at such a height, that they had nothing to do but to rid their hands of me. I had no mistrust that they were upon those terms together: on the contrary, I was fully perswaded that young madam *de Spinehal* waited only for my arrival to marry me; the esteem I had for her not suffering me to have the least suspicion of any change in her.

As soon as I came to *Paris*, my nephew visited me; I ask'd him what news of young madam *de Spinehal*. He told me he had seen her sometimes, but truly she seem'd lately very little disposed to be my wife; that since she came to town, she had been offer'd very considerable matches, and he believ'd she had in her more vanity and ambition than love. I gave credit to his story, there being great appearance that it was true, when I reflected upon my not having heard from her a long time: I pray'd him to represent to her plainly the wrong she would do her self and me in breaking her word, after the obligations she had to me, and the terms we were upon together. I bid him take no notice that he had said any thing to me, because I would have the satisfaction to hear it from her own mouth, if she was so much alter'd.

I went to visit her, she seem'd very glad to see me; yet I observ'd that my company was a burthen to her. I gave her an account of her business in the country, and told her, nothing now hinder'd the happiness I had flatter'd my self with the hopes of. She reply'd she was still the same; but she could not think it decent to marry again till her year was out. I answered, after having kept silence a little while, I was sorry she endeavour'd to hide any thing from me; and that I knew she had other reasons besides decency, which obliged her to put off our marriage. Believing my nephew had made me a discovery of their intrigue, she was mute for some time, keeping her eyes upon the ground; at last she said to me, with an air of indifference, since I knew her mind so well, she had no answer to make me.

I was

I was then in the same condition that I had often been in my life, finding the inconstancy of the sex. I perceiv'd my mistress was chang'd, and I repented that I had busy'd my self about this amour, and had not better given way to my disgust of the world, which my brother's death had lately renew'd; but I stood in need of new mortifications to determine me to it: I left young madam *de Spinebal*, telling her, she was not worth my anger, and that since she was capable of being dazzled by the hopes of a better settlement than she could expect from me, she was unworthy my love; that I would put no constraint upon her, but leave her to follow her inconstant humour, and thereby give her occasion to repent her self. She made no answer, nor offer'd to stop me when I went out.

I immediately sought after my nephew, and let him know the advice he gave was but too well grounded; I told him also how I had carry'd my self towards young madam *de Spinebal* ever since I first loved her; and seem'd to be so much afflicted, that my nephew was griev'd to think he should be the cause of my mistress's inconstancy: and whether he was a man of so much honour, that he would not take my mistress from me whom I so well deserv'd; or whether he fear'd she might not one time or other prove as inconstant to him, he sent her word that he could not resolve to give me such a sensible mortification; that he was too much obliged to me to use me so unhandsomely; and that positively he would never marry her unless she found means to procure my consent.

Young madam *de Spinebal*'s answer to this letter fell into my hands; I suppose she design'd it so, for the person who was to have given it to my nephew, gave it to me, not finding him at my lodgings, where he pretended he came to look for him: as I had too much interest in young madam *de Spinebal*'s sentiments not to open the letter, and see what she wrote to him, so I unsealed it and read to this purpose:

IS it possible that when we are arrived to such an age we cannot be just to our selves, and that monsieur your uncle will always forget he is threescore? I have had a
great

great respect for him, it is true, and I have allowed him to hope whatever he pleas'd, it not having been in my power to behave otherwise as my affairs then stood; but I have always had so good an opinion of him, as to hope he would be ashamed of being always a fool, and desirous to be thought young. Does he imagine he can deceive us by the care he takes to conceal his age? or can he take it ill, that I should have those sentiments for such a man as you, which would be ridiculous in me to have for an old man? if he had the least degree of discretion, would he expose himself to the destiny of the husband I have lost, and with whom I had no other reason to live so ill than because he was too old to deserve the care and complacency of a young woman. Besides, what cause has he of complaint, since my inclination doth not lead me out of his family; and if he is so much your friend, as you say he is, would he deprive you of your mistress? is it not reasonable that old folks should be more masters of their passions than young? trust me, he will know himself better after we are marry'd; if he does not, we shall not suffer much, he is too old to plague us very long. I do not take you at your word; I know how to put a better construction on your letter; I have too great esteem for you to have such a consideration for an uncle to whom you say you are obliged. But should it be true, that the respect you say you shall have for him will make you break with me, I shall not cease loving you, and never will be another's, if I cannot be yours.

To apprehend what a terrible mortification this letter was to me, the reader must remember what I said before, that my folly was a desire of being thought young; I was therefore not so much concern'd at finding proofs of this woman's inconstancy, as at her insulting my age. The terms *old men* and *old folks*, and in short every thing which reminded me of my age, was so sensible and mortifying an injury, that I fell into a sort of confusion, which for some time deprived me of all other thoughts.

I lock'd my self up, and ordered that no body should be admitted to come near me. I read the letter twenty times

times over, and was as often going to insult this woman as much as she had insulted me : I went to bed late, and slept little. When I was in bed all my old adventures came into my mind, particularly that which ever took up most of my thoughts, the story of my dear *Carmelite* ; I fancy'd I saw her still, and heard her repeat the words I read in the letter. *Is it possible that you will always forget you are threescore ?*

The next day I found my self in a more sedate temper, and I then read over the letter several times : and why after all, said I to my self, should I pretend to complain of her, for telling me I am threescore ? is it not true ? is it not time for me to leave off fooling ? when shall I grow wise, if now I do not ? oh ! my dear *Carmelite*, thou hadst reason on thy side, when frequently thou toldest me there was nothing solid in the world. Ah ! had I followed thy advice, and thy example, how long ago had I been wise ? however, it is not yet too late ; and since I am old, and those whom I endeavour to please by hiding my age, are the first that reproach me with it, it is fit I no more expose my self to such affronts. Vain world I know thee now, and thou shalt no more deceive me.

I spent all the day without seeing any one ; and at last came to a resolution to turn this last disgrace to my advantage, and to break off all the cords by which I was still ty'd to the world : who would have thought that so frivolous an affront as calling me *old man*, should have more force with me, in disengaging me from the world, than all the ill I have hitherto suffer'd ? but God conducts men to the end he designs, by the most surprizing ways ; and I believe there are no means more effectual, than to confound our vanity in the very thing wherein we are so weak as to make it consist.

The circumstances of this affront made it the more grievous. To be treated after this manner by a person who I thought loved me, and whom I made it my study to please, was a new sort of mortification ; and I found, that if at all times of life a man has reason to mistrust women, it is an extraordinary blindness to pretend to please them, when he is of an age proper only to furnish matter for their malice and raillery.

But

But at length I reflected on the little agreement there is between the amusements of the passions, and the defects of old age, and the resentment of young madam *de Spinebal's* proceedings sensibly diminished. She seem'd to me wiser than my self, and I began no longer to impute to her as a crime, a matter which appear'd to me a proof of her reason and good sense. Resolving therefore to be no more the same, every thing appear'd to me with a new face ; and the first proof I had, that I was going effectually to change, was the indifference which succeeded the troubles and emotions I had felt.

Having thereupon made my choice, I was willing to deprive my self of all hopes of possessing young madam *de Spinebal*. I look'd upon her as a good match for my nephew, and was willing to make him some return for his generosity, in offering to break of his marriage out of respect to me.

I sent for him, and without telling him my design, I took him with me in my coach to young madam *de Spinebal's*. She had no body with her, and when we were seated, I talk'd thus to her : You cannot doubt, madam, but that I have loved you ; and I believe what I have done for you convinces you of the sincerity of my affections. I have for a long time thought my happiness depended on marrying you ; but heaven has at last opened my eyes, and I am sensible that my years cannot suit you. I will not complain of the letter you wrote my nephew, since it is that which has enlighten'd me ; and I forgive the manner of your treating me, since it is by that I have learn'd how I ought to treat my self. I beseech you therefore that there be no more said of it ; there it is, I give it you back. I give you back with it all the promises you have made me, and you are free, madam, to chuse whom you please for a husband : but if you have any remembrance of my services, and any gratitude for my friendship, I demand of you to shew it by concluding the marriage you have given my nephew hopes of. He is worthy of you, you cannot chuse better ; he has a fortune, and besides what he may expect after his mother's death : I will give him what estate I have, reserving only to my self such an annuity,

annuity as may be necessary for me to live remote from the world, in a place which may separate me for ever from it.

Young madam *de Spinehal* would have several times interrupted me, supposing I might come to chide her ; but when she saw the contrary, she suffer'd me to go on. When I had done speaking, she answer'd, that she begged me as a further mark of my generosity, not to permit her to justify her self, as to an action which she said she could not call to mind without confusion ; that she would ever esteem and respect me above any man ; but if I would have her think with pleasure of her marriage with my nephew, I must not talk either of giving him my estate, or of leaving the world.

My nephew said never a word, the tears, which he had not been able to retain while I was speaking, deprived him of the use of his speech. To shorten this conversation, I thought it convenient to talk only of God, and the resolution he had inspired me with to regard nothing but my salvation. I made a discourse thereupon which moved them, and they perceived I was determined in my resolution, and that it would be in vain to endeavour to dissuade me. I pray'd them to keep my design of retiring secret, and we then parted to make preparations for the wedding.

My sister-in-law, mother to my nephew, joyfully consented to it. I gave him my mannon, which I could the more easily dispose of, having no other heirs, my second brother being dead in *Sweden*, and left no children behind him.

They were marry'd, and God gave me the courage to look on without the least sign of inconstancy or weakness ; I can truly say, I felt none at all, and was amazed to find my self, towards the things of this world, so different from what I had till that time been. I lived with them three weeks, and remembering what my dear *Carmelite* had formerly told me, that a man ought not to engage in a solitary life, without having a long time try'd himself whether he is able to go through with it ; I therefore went to a religious house, and lived there three months, under the direction of a very understanding

derstanding and a very wise man, who put me in a way as to the place and the kind of retirement.

I was at first willing to enter into the order of *Chartreux*. I then thought of the abbey of *La Trappe*; but my director set me against both the one and the other design, not only because of my age, but because he was apprehensive of my engaging in a society which I could never quit. He knew that men, under such like engagements, frequently met with inquietudes, proceeding from their different humours, which diverted their thoughts from the great business of their salvation. What also I related to him of the magistrate, who seem'd to me to bear with difficulty, a retirement where he was frequently visited by his friends, made him apprehensive I should suffer as much; he therefore thought it most adviseable to conclude on one, in which I might have no farther tye than the care of my future welfare; and where moreover I might never see any thing that would call the things of this world to my mind again.

For this reason he approved of my proposition to retire into a province, where I had neither acquaintance nor correspondence, because, being known to no body, I should not be expos'd to any visits; which are equally to be avoided, let them be either agreeable or impertinent.

In this place I now am, and I believe shall not be weary of concealing my self; for since I came here, I have had no other than happy and pleasant days: and all that I have been obliged to report in writing these memoirs, concerning the amusements of my life, has only help'd to increase my contempt of the world, and to make me sincerely repent that I began so late to busy my self about the only thing, in which I have found true and solid happiness.

THE author of these memoirs dy'd about six months after they were finish'd: he set about writing them in the beginning of his retirement, but having more serious employment afterwards, he repented that he had amused himself with such a work. He would have burn'd them, had they been in his possession; but the papers were taken from him as soon as it was known he intended to suppress them.

R

But

“ But now, to supply what is wanting in the history of his life, it is necessary to add a few words concerning his retirement, and the manner he therein liv’d to his death.

‘ He chang’d his name, and being in a province where no body knew either him or his family, it was not difficult for him to pass for quite another person than really he was: he disguised himself so well, that those with whom he liv’d never guess’d that he had been a soldier. Having a great deal of wit and learning, they imagin’d he had been a gentleman of the long-robe, or had been in the service of some ambassador; his knowledge of the tongues, and of foreign countries, confirm’d this opinion, and he took no pains at all to undeceive them.

‘ The place of his retirement was a corner of a monastery, where he allowed a small pension for his maintenance, and laid out the rest of the little income he had reserv’d for himself in charity: he spent his time in prayer and contemplation, and in taking care of the religious; or to cultivate with his own hands a garden which join’d to his apartment.

‘ No body, not even his nephew, knew at first of the place whither he retir’d, except he that help’d him in the choice he made; by whose advice he always govern’d himself, and who received and remitted him his money.

‘ He had been in this retirement about two years when his nephew was informed of it; he would have visit’d him, and brought his wife with him, the same whom he had lov’d so much under the name of young madam *de Spinebal* but this wife recluse prevail’d with his nephew to come alone; and of all his family he was the only person he ever saw. He also oblig’d him to beware how he discover’d himself to be his nephew, fearing that would make him known, and procure him respect in the province where he was desirous to be unknown.

‘ His nephew and his wife were the only persons for whom, to the last, he had any concern; but God remov’d from him both the one and the other. His nephew

“ phew was kill’d in the army : his wife surviv’d him
 “ scarce six months, and then dy’d childless.

“ He acknowledg’d in this the hand of providence,
 “ who, that he might be the more disengag’d and more
 “ private, had been pleas’d that there should not be one
 “ person remaining in the world, who could discover
 “ him. He saw the wealth of his family fall into the
 “ hands of those who did not know whether he was in
 “ the land of the living ; and he was so negligent to re-
 “ cover what belonged to him by the death of his ne-
 “ phew, that before he dy’d he wanted necessaries.

“ He had nothing to subsist upon but the charity of
 “ the fryars with whom he liv’d : and finding them dis-
 “ engag’d from the world, he did not think fit to substi-
 “ tute them in his place, to contend for the estate which
 “ might belong to him. He believ’d he should ill re-
 “ ward the care those fathers took of him by engaging
 “ them in a law-suit, and bequeathing riches to those
 “ who lov’d to be poor. He reduc’d himself to the qua-
 “ lity of their servitor, and in this quality dy’d unknown
 “ to every body ; so happy in his design of concealing
 “ himself, that the only man who could have discover’d
 “ him, I mean him who digested these memoirs, has
 “ thought himself obliged to take all manner of precau-
 “ tion to prevent his being known.

F I N I S.

BOOKS Printed for, and Sold by *James Dalton*, at the Corner of *Bride's-Alley* in *Patrick's-Street*.

THE *Compleat Mendicant*, Or, *unhappy Beggar*, being the Life of an Unfortunate Gentleman: In which is a Comprehensive Account of several of the most Remarkable Adventures, that befel him in three and twenty Years Pilgrimage, &c. Price a *British Six-pence*.

The Power of Love, in seven Novels, By *Mrs. Manley* Price. 2 s.

The Noble Slaves, or the Lives and Adventures of two Lords and two Ladies, being a History full of Remarkable Events, by *Mrs. Aubin*. Price Sixpence.

The Fortunate Fool. Bound, 1 s. 8 d.

Testaments of different sorts.

I salters, Primers, and all sorts of school-books.

ZAYDE, a *Spanish History*: compos'd by the inimitable Pen of the Ingenious *Mr. de Segrais*. Price 1 s. 8 d.

Memoirs of the Family of *Cavendish*, Dukes of *Devonshire*. Continued down to his Grace, the Present Duke of *Devonshire*, now Lord-Lieutenant of *Ireland*. By *White Kennet*. D. D. To which are added, some particulars relating to the present Duke, taken from the best Authorities.

The Fruitless Enquiry, being a Collection of several Entertaining Histories and Occurences, which fell under the Observations of a Lady, in her search after Happiness. By *Mrs. E. Haywood*, Author of *Love in Excess*. Price Bound. 1 s. 8 d.

Hill's Arithmetick. Price 5 s.

Ovid's Epist. Delph. Price 3 s. 3 d.

Ovid's Trist. Delp. Price 2 s. 8 d.

Dryden's Juvenal English, Price 3 s. 3 d.

Whiston's Euclid, Price 4 s. 6 d.

Bradley's Farming, Price a *British Shilling*.

Cocker's Arithmetick, Price 10 d.

Jane Shore, and *Fair Rosamond*, Price

Argalus and Parthenia, Price 8 d.

Life of Moll Flanders, Price 8 d.

History of America, Price 10 d.

Book of Knowledge, Price 10 d.

N. B. At the same Place Country Chapmen and others may be furnish'd by Wholesale or retail, (and all manner of Stationary-Ware) at the most reasonable Rates,



